

Martial God Asura #Chapter 3001 – 3100

Obtaining Justice - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 3001 - Obtaining Justice

Chapter 3001 - Obtaining Justice

The member of the younger generation emitting the aura of an Exalted and standing before Chu Feng was merely a shell, a disguise.

That man's true identity was a Chu Heavenly Clan's Utmost Exalted Elder, Chu Haoyan's grandfather, Chu Puze.

Although Chu Feng had only met Chu Haoyan's grandfather once, Chu Feng remembered his voice very well.

"Haha... so what if you know who I am? After all, you'll be dying today."

"As such, this old man might as well let you know about certain things."

"Back then, this old man contributed greatly to your father's expulsion from the Chu Heavenly Clan and imprisonment in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm."

"If it wasn't for this old man privately giving those people benefits, they would not have been insulting you in such a manner on the day of your talent exam. If those people didn't insult you, your father would not have unleashed a massacre."

"And if your father hadn't unleashed a massacre, he would naturally not have provoked the people of the Starfield Master Realm. If he didn't provoke the people of the Starfall Master Realm, the Clan Chief would not have severely punished you and your father."

"In short, if it wasn't for the tricks this old man employed back then, even though you did not possess the ability to cultivate back then, you would still have been able to stay in the Chu Heavenly Clan as a young master due to your father's status," Chu Haoyan's grandfather said to Chu Feng.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng immediately narrowed his eyebrows. The anger in his heart was surging like a soon-to-erupt volcano.

It turned out that the reason why Chu Feng and his father were driven out of the Chu Heavenly Clan was all due to him.

Filled with overwhelming rage, Chu Feng flipped his palm and a crimson sword appeared in his hand.

It was... the Evil God Sword!!!

The Evil God Sword was Chu Feng's final trump card, his strongest trump card.

Unless forced into a corner, Chu Feng would never use it. However the situation at hand was worse than being forced into a corner.

Firstly, Chu Feng had no choice but to use his Evil God Sword, since Chu Haoyan's grandfather was an Utmost Exalted Elder of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Furthermore, even if Chu Feng was capable of avoiding a battle, Chu Feng would not spare Chu Haoyan's grandfather after hearing what he had done.

At that moment, Chu Feng only wanted to kill him.

He wanted to obtain justice for both his father and himself.

Chu Haoyan's grandfather looked to the Evil God Sword in Chu Feng's hand and asked with a beaming smile on his face, "What's this? Are you angry? Do you wish to kill me?"

"That's your Demon Armament, right?"

Hearing those words, Chu Feng was startled. It was no longer the first time he had taken out the Evil God Sword in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. However, no one had known how powerful the Evil God Sword was. The great majority of people would look to the Evil God Sword with contempt and puzzlement when they saw it.

However, it was different for Chu Haoyan's grandfather. This meant that Chu Haoyan's grandfather knew Chu Feng very well. At the very least, he should know about Chu Feng's accomplishments in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, and the Demon Armament that he possessed.

It appeared that Chu Haoyan's grandfather had come prepared.

“Since you know, then you should prepare yourself for death,” Chu Feng said, gnashing his teeth angrily. He had expressed his hatred for Chu Haoyan’s grandfather without the slightest reservation.

“Haha. Chu Feng, oh Chu Feng, even if you possess that Demon Armament of yours, you shouldn’t be that confident.”

“Did you really think that this old man was the same sort of trash as that Chu Bore?”

“You want to take care of this old man with merely that lousy sword of yours?”

Even though Chu Haoyan’s grandfather knew that the Evil God Sword in Chu Feng’s hand was a remarkable weapon, he still did not consider Chu Feng a threat. It could be seen that he was very confident in his own strength.

“I know that there is an enormous disparity in strength between you and Chu Bore. However, even if that’s the case, I, Chu Feng, will still kill you,” as Chu Feng spoke, he tightly grasped the Evil God Sword in his hand and began to instill his power into it. He was planning to utilize the power of the Evil God Sword to have a life and death confrontation against Chu Haoyan’s grandfather.

“Wait,” however, right at that moment, a voice was suddenly heard.

When that voice was heard, a figure also appeared before Chu Feng. It was a very haggard and disheveled-looking old man holding a walking stick in his hand. However, the aura he emitted was extremely powerful. It was actually on par with Chu Haoyan’s grandfather’s.

Chu Feng knew who that person was. He was the person in charge of guarding the Nine Moons Sacred Domain, Lord Youyuan.

However, Chu Feng noticed that Lord Youyuan was a bit different at that moment. Even though he was emitting the aura of a rank two Exalted and still appeared to be very aged and haggard, he gave off the feeling of a person of the younger generation.

The reason for that was because he was wearing special clothes. His clothes were filled with flickering runes and symbols that seemed to fuse together with him. It was his clothes that had changed his aura.

“Chu Feng, put down the sword in your hand,” Lord Youyuan said to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was already overflowing with killing intent, and had activated the power of his Evil God Sword. However, for some unknown reason, Chu Feng felt as if he had found his backer after Lord Youyuan appeared. He truly felt as if there was no need for him to act personally.

However, even though that was the case, Chu Feng still did not immediately stop the flow of his power into the Evil God Sword. The reason for that was because Chu Feng had no idea if that Lord Youyuan was an enemy or a friend.

“Being in the Chu Heavenly Clan, you ought to be protected by someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan. Rest assured, with this old man here, no one will be able to harm you,” Lord Youyuan added.

Once Lord Youyuan said those words, Chu Feng’s heart was moved. He actually felt a familiar gaze from Lord Youyuan. It was the same sort of gaze that Chu Xuanzhengfa had toward him.

“I will trouble senior then. I hope that senior will help me obtain justice,” Chu Feng said.

“Rest assured, this old man will definitely obtain justice for you,” Lord Youyuan said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng finally stopped the flow of his power into the Evil God Sword. Furthermore, as he had not put a lot of power into the Evil God Sword, he did not receive any backlash from it.

That said, Chu Feng was still holding the Evil God Sword in his hand. After all, the current situation was extremely dangerous. He had to be extra careful.

Chapter 3002 - Battle of Exalted’s

“Insolent bastard, this Queen will kill you!” right at that moment, a furious shout was heard. It was Her Lady Queen.

When Lord Youyuan appeared, the oppressive might emitted by Chu Haoyan’s grandfather was restrained. As such, Her Lady Queen, who was previously restricted, finally regained her freedom.

When Her Lady Queen regained her freedom, she immediately controlled a boundless amount of dark black gaseous flames to attack Chu Haoyan's grandfather.

"Humph, overestimating one's capabilities, you are truly courting death," Chu Haoyan's grandfather snorted coldly. Then, overwhelming oppressive might started to rush toward Her Lady Queen.

Before a rank two Exalted, Her Lady Queen's dark black gaseous flames were simply unable to withstand a single blow, and instantly shattered. Furthermore, that overwhelming oppressive might was threatening Her Lady Queen's life this time around.

"Buzz~~~"

Right at the moment when the oppressive might unleashed by Chu Haoyan's grandfather was about to reach Her Lady Queen, it suddenly stopped. It was Lord Youyuan. Lord Youyuan had unleashed his own oppressive might to block Chu Haoyan's grandfather's oppressive might.

Furthermore, he released a gentle power that forcibly pushed Her Lady Queen to Chu Feng's side.

"Woosh~~~"

The next moment, Lord Youyuan raised his arm, and a powerful burst of martial power gathered and formed a defensive barrier that surrounded both Chu Feng and Her Lady Queen.

Chu Feng felt that defensive barrier to be very powerful. Likely, not even the oppressive might of Chu Haoyan's grandfather would be able to breach the defensive barrier to injure them. *nove(lb(In*

If he wanted to cause them harm, he would have to utilize even more powerful techniques.

"Young lady, return to Chu Feng's body. This old man will handle things here on your behalf."

"This old man will obtain justice for the grievance you've suffered," Lord Youyuan said.

However, even though Lord Youyuan said those words, Her Lady Queen still had an angry expression on her face. She was still looking at Chu Haoyan's grandfather with killing intent-filled eyes.

It could be seen that Eggy was intensely displeased to be suddenly restricted by Chu Haoyan's grandfather when she was about to kill Chu Zhiyuan.

"Eggy, if you feel discontent, I will kill him for you," Chu Feng said whilst holding the Evil God Sword.

"Are you stupid? Someone is standing up for us, why are you still trying to jeopardize yourself by using that sword?" Hearing what Chu Feng said, Her Lady Queen immediately urged him against it.

She added, "Just stand here properly and enjoy the show. As long as that old man is capable of taking care of it, you absolutely must not use the Evil God Sword, understand?"

"Eh... okay then. I will listen to my Eggy," Chu Feng said.

"Enough talking, this Queen is tired. I will return to rest first," Her Lady Queen cast a glance at Chu Feng, and then entered the World Spirit Gate and returned to Chu Feng's world spirit space.

Her Lady Queen's anger was not quelled. However, she still obediently returned to Chu Feng's world spirit space.

The reason for that was because Her Lady Queen did not wish for Chu Feng to take risks.

Chu Feng knew all this. Thus, he felt extremely moved.

At the same time, his murderous desire toward Chu Haoyan's grandfather also grew stronger.

Chu Feng made a firm resolution that he would definitely personally kill Chu Haoyan's grandfather in the future.

It would not be only to obtain justice for himself and his father, it would also be to obtain justice for Her Lady Queen.

No matter what, such a grievance was something that he must settle personally.

“Chu Puze, you are truly worse than beasts. For the sake of entering this place to take care of Chu Feng, you’ve sacrificed a life of our clan’s younger generation. A person like you is unqualified to be our Chu Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elder,” Lord Youyuan’s body was trembling when he said those words to Chu Haoyan’s grandfather. It could be seen that he was extremely furious.

After Lord Youyuan said those words, Chu Feng finally realized why Chu Haoyan’s grandfather was able to enter the cave.

It turned out that he had killed a member of the younger generation and seized his body for his own use.

That sort of method was truly crooked. As for those people with their bodies seized, they would generally meet very miserable deaths. To use such a ruthless method on one’s own clan’s younger generation, Chu Haoyan’s grandfather was truly vicious and merciless. It was no wonder Lord Youyuan would become so furious.

“Youyuan, oh Youyuan, you know very well the hatred I have for Hanxian, his son and his grandson. Not to mention killing a single person of the younger generation, as long as I can eliminate that Chu Feng, I would be willing to kill all of our clan’s younger generations.”

“That said, I truly never expected that you were actually capable of directly entering the training ground for the younger generations. It would appear that you have not guarded the Nine Moons Sacred Domain in vain.”

“Alas, it’s actually your fault. If you possessed such ability, why didn’t you inform the clan of it? If I also possessed that ability, I would not have had to use this brat’s body, and he wouldn’t have had to die.”

Chu Haoyan’s grandfather showed absolutely no sign of repentance when he said those words. Instead, he was acting as if he were unblamable and righteous. Furthermore, he said those words with a joking tone.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng was able to tell that Lord Youyuan was growing even more furious. It was no longer just anger; he was also emitting intense killing intent.

Lord Youyuan had unleashed his killing intent at Chu Haoyan’s grandfather.

“Clank~~~”

Right at that moment, Lord Youyuan suddenly tightened his grasp on his walking stick. The next moment, that walking stick that resembled an ordinary wooden stick started to shine brightly, and emitted an extremely powerful aura.

Immortal Armament, that was actually an Immortal Armament. Furthermore, it was also a very high quality item. It could be said to be a masterpiece-level Immortal Armament.

“You... shall be put to death! However, this old man will not kill you! This old man will bring you to our Chu Heavenly Clan’s Law Enforcement Stage and put you on trial before all our clansmen!” Lord Youyuan said with rage fuming between gritted teeth.

“Haha. Youyuan, oh Youyuan, you shouldn’t have involved yourself in this matter. However, since you have, I will have no choice but to eliminate you too,” as Chu Haoyan’s grandfather said those words, he streaked his palm across his Cosmos Sack.

The next moment, a ten-meter-long blade appeared in his hand. It was also an Immortal Armament.

Chapter 3003 - The Stubborn Chu Lingxi

“Prepare to die!” A furious shout was suddenly heard. Lord Youyuan had unleashed his attack.

At practically the same moment when Lord Youyuan unleashed his attack, Chu Haoyan’s grandfather also soared into the sky and unleashed his own attack.

Powerful energy ripples started to spread. The two rank two Exalted experts had collided in battle.

To Chu Feng, Exalted-level experts were existences so powerful that he was simply powerless by comparison. It would not be excessive to even call them gods.

Although the two Exalted-level experts were currently fighting before Chu Feng’s eyes, Chu Feng was unable to see their movements, and had no idea

what sort of abilities they were using. The only thing he was capable of seeing was the powerful energy ripples that were scattering in all directions and battering everything in their surroundings nonstop.

Even space itself shattered around them. As the energy ripples continued, Chu Feng felt as if he had been placed in hell.

If it wasn't for the defensive barrier that Lord Youyuan placed around him to protect him, Chu Feng would likely have already met a violent death.

"Fortunately, that old man by the name of Youyuan came. Otherwise, not even your Evil God Sword would likely be able to handle that fellow, no?" Her Lady Queen said.

Chu Feng nodded sternly at Her Lady Queen's words.

Earlier, Chu Feng had thought that he would be able to kill Chu Haoyan's grandfather with the Evil God Sword.

However, after actually witnessing their powers, Chu Feng was no longer confident.

Exalted-level experts that possessed Exalted-level martial power, existences above Martial Immortals, were simply too powerful.

How was Chu Feng going to contend against existences like that?

The current Chu Feng was not even a match for Heavenly Immortals, much less Martial Immortals.

As for Exalted, they were existences that even peak Martial Immortals looked up to.

Furthermore, Chu Haoyan's grandfather was not a rank one Exalted. Instead, he was a rank two Exalted.

Chu Feng felt that even if he possessed the Evil God Sword, he would likely not be a match for an existence like that.

.....

Meanwhile, as the intense battle continued in the cave, the people waiting outside were already in an upheaval.

Chu Lingxi, Chu Huanyu and Chu Haoyan, those three geniuses, were actually working together.

They were jointly attacking the cave wall before them.

The wall that they were attacking was the entrance to the path that Chu Feng and the others had entered through.

For some unknown reason, the entrance had just been sealed off.

They had no idea what was happening inside.

Chu Lingxi was worried for Chu Feng.

As for Chu Huanyu and Chu Haoyan, they were worried that the treasures would be embezzled by Chu Feng and Chu Ruoshi.

That was the reason why the three of them were jointly attacking the cave wall, jointly attempting to breach the power that was sealing the entrance to the path so that they could enter it and investigate what had happened.

Unfortunately, no matter what sort of method they attempted, they were still incapable of breaching the power sealing the entrance.

After attempting to breach the power sealing the entrance for some time, Chu Haoyan stopped. He declared, "Forget about it. That is simply not something that we can destroy. It would appear that... it is not something Chu Feng and the others did. Likely, they must've triggered some sort of trap to awaken that sealing power."

Following him, Chu Huanyu also stopped. They both felt that it would be impossible for them to breach the seal. As such, they decided to give up on attempting to continue attacking it.

However, Chu Lingxi did not stop her attacks. Instead, her attacks grew more and more intense. However, she was still unable to cause any damage to the power sealing the entrance.

"Lingxi, just forget about it. It's useless. With our strength, it is impossible for us to shatter that power. Not to mention us, likely not even Heavenly Immortals would be able to," Chu Huanyu urged.

“Shut up. You can stop if you want, no one would urge you to continue. By the same accord, you do not possess the rights to urge me to stop,” Chu Lingxi turned around and took a fierce glance at Chu Huanyu and Chu Haoyan. Then, she continued to attack that sealing power.

“Humph, you are truly unable to recognize the good intentions of others,” faced with such a stubborn Chu Lingxi, Chu Huanyu snorted coldly and stood to one side.

He was feeling very displeased. From his understanding of Chu Lingxi, he knew very well that she would not be putting forth so much effort for treasures.

However, if it wasn't because of the treasures, then why would Chu Lingxi act like that?

There could only be one possible explanation -- Chu Feng.

Chu Lingxi was worried about Chu Feng's safety. That was the reason why she was trying so hard.

Upon thinking of how cold Chu Lingxi was toward him and how concerned she was about Chu Feng, Chu Huanyu started to feel extremely displeased.

“Oh Huanyu, you are truly miserable. You like that Chu Lingxi so much, yet she only cares about that Chu Feng with all her heart and soul. I am truly feeling pity for you,” Chu Haoyan walked over to Chu Huanyu's side and sighed and spoke with a mocking tone.

“Feel pity for me? You're actually feeling pity for yourself, no? Both you and I know each other very well. There's no need to play dumb,” Chu Huanyu said.

“Haha...” Chu Haoyan was actually not angered by Chu Huanyu's words. Instead, he laughed. It was such a relaxed laughter.

“I have already given up on Chu Lingxi. A girl like her is not someone we can obtain.”

“However, I am truly unable to understand. Exactly what did that Chu Feng do to her to make her so tempted by him?” Chu Haoyan asked.

“How am I supposed to know?” Chu Huanyu cast a side-eye glance at Chu Haoyan. Displeasure filled his eyes.

What Chu Haoyan was puzzled by was actually also what he was puzzled by.

“Boom~~~”

Right at that moment, the cave suddenly started to tremble.

“What’s happening?” The sudden trembling caused the crowd’s expressions to all change.

“Chu Feng and the others must’ve triggered something. Everyone, quickly, get out of this place. This place might collapse at any moment,” Chu Haoyan said.

Hearing Chu Haoyan’s words, the crowd grew even more panicky, and actually began to move back.

The reason for that was because the rock walls of the cave were no small matter. At the very least, they would not be able to shatter the rocks with their strength. If the cave were to collapse, they would be trapped inside, and all that would await them then would be death.

Chapter 3004 - The Correct Decision

“Boom~~~”

Right at that moment, following a loud explosion, the cave started to tremble again. Furthermore, the trembling this time around was even stronger than before.

“It really is going to collapse! Everyone, quickly, get out of here!”

“If we continue to stay here, we will truly be buried alive!”

This time around, the crowd started to panic completely. They turned around and began to flee in the direction they had come from.

Everyone was fleeing. However, Chu Lingxi was still standing there. She was still attacking the sealed entrance.

“Lingxi, why are you still standing there? Do you wish to die here?” Chu Huanyu asked.

However, Chu Lingxi did not even bother to pay attention to his words. It was as if she could not hear him.

“Gone mad, you’ve truly gone mad!”

“Since that’s the case, you might as well die here together with that Chu Feng!” Unable to contain his anger, Chu Huanyu cursed loudly. Then, together with the rest of the crowd, he left the cave.

The cave that was previously filled with people now only had Chu Lingxi..

As the trembling around her continued to become more and more intense, she held her Incomplete Immortal Armament in her hand and continued to unleash powerful Immortal Techniques.

She appeared to be quite lonely. However, her stubbornness and her determination in the face of death was something worthy of being revered.

Unfortunately, those Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations were not going to revere her.

To them, Chu Lingxi’s actions were foolish and mad.

Only Chu Lingxi knew that she could not abandon Chu Feng and escape by herself. After all... ever since they had fused their Yin Yang Fate Pearls, their fates would be bound to one another as long as they were there.

At present she did not feel anything peculiar. This meant that Chu Feng was still alive.

However, with what was happening, it was very possible that Chu Feng had encountered some sort of problem.

Thus, she could not give up. As long as Chu Feng was still alive, she could not give up on him.

.....

“Boom~~~”

Suddenly, another loud explosion was heard. The explosion this time was much more ear-piercing than all the previous explosions. It was as if the explosion had gone off somewhere very close. The frequency of the quaking was frighteningly abnormal.

However, after the loud explosion was heard, everything seemed to have returned to normal.

“Damn it, exactly what happened in there?”

“Chu Feng, no matter what, you must stay alive in there. Otherwise, this young lady will end up suffering a calamity too,” Chu Lingxi was startled by the explosion. However, she soon started to continue using her Incomplete Immortal Armament to attack the power sealing the entrance.

Even though the explosions and shaking had stopped, Chu Lingxi felt even more uneasy. She was truly afraid that something might’ve happened to Chu Feng.

It was not that she was afraid of being implicated. Rather, she truly did not wish for anything to happen to Chu Feng.

Meanwhile, inside the deepest region of the cave, Chu Feng was still standing there. Since he was protected by the defensive barrier, he was completely unscathed.

Not only that, but a cheerful look had also appeared in his eyes.

Even though the energy ripples were still surging about the cave, Chu Feng was able to see through his Heaven’s Eyes that Chu Haoyan’s grandfather was lying in a corner. His body was completely covered in blood.

However, when he looked to Lord Youyuan, he was completely unscathed.
n.(Ovel&1n

Although they were both rank two Exalted, Chu Haoyan’s grandfather was no match for Lord Youyuan.

“Youyuan, I’ve underestimated you. Never would I have expected that you... a foreign dog, would possess this sort of power.”

“However, today, you are still going to lose,” right at that moment, Chu Haoyan’s grandfather suddenly turned around. He was flying toward the other member of the younger generation present.

Due to the fact that Chu Haoyan’s grandfather was very close to that man, it was already too late by the time Lord Youyuan noticed his intention.

Chu Haoyan's grandfather grabbed the neck of that member of the younger generation and lifted him up before him.

"Release him," Lord Youyuan said.

"Release him? Sure, I can do that. Let go of the Immortal Armament in your hand," Chu Haoyan's grandfather said.

"You want me to let go of my Immortal Armament? You are truly delusional," Lord Youyuan said.

"Chu Youyuan, I will say it again. Let go of the Immortal Armament in your hand. Otherwise, I will kill him," Chu Haoyan's grandfather threatened with a malevolent expression.

Faced with Chu Haoyan's grandfather's threat this time around, Lord Youyuan did not even bother to utter a word. However, his determined expression had given Chu Haoyan's grandfather his answer.

"Chu Youyuan, it turns out you're also someone who doesn't care about the lives of your fellow clansmen."

"Chu Youyuan, do you not feel ashamed?!!!" Seeing that his plan had failed, Chu Haoyan's grandfather started to shout angrily.

Even though he was faced with mocking words from Chu Haoyan's grandfather, Lord Youyuan remained extremely calm.

"The one that wants to kill him is you and not me, why should I feel ashamed?" Lord Youyuan said.

"You, since you have no regard for the lives of others why must you pretend to be righteous?" Chu Haoyan's grandfather asked.

"This old man has never feigned righteousness, nor have I disregarded the lives of others. Merely, I know how to make appropriate decisions at appropriate times."

"If I am to let go of my Immortal Armament, I would not be a match for you. At that time, it would not only be me who will be killed, Chu Feng and that person you've captured will also be killed."

“However, if I persist, the only one that will die will be that person you’ve captured. Although I will not be able to save him, at least Chu Feng would still be alive. To this old man, that would be a worthy decision,” Lord Youyuan said.

“Enough of this rubbish! I knew that you felt Chu Feng’s life to be more important than the lives of other younger generations!” Chu Haoyan’s grandfather shouted.

“If you insist on saying it like that, this old man will not argue with you,” Lord Youyuan said.

“You!!!”

Hearing those words, Chu Haoyan’s grandfather turned completely red with anger. However, he was also speechless.

Faced with such a Chu Youyuan, he truly had no words to say.

However, Chu Feng was surprised.

He truly did not expect for his life to be viewed with such importance by Chu Youyuan.

Suddenly, Chu Haoyan’s grandfather shouted, “Chu Youyuan, drop dead!” Then, he tossed the member of the younger generation in his hand toward Lord Youyuan. After that, he turned around and began to fly toward the cave’s exit.

The strength with which he tossed that member of the younger generation was no small matter. If someone could catch him, then he might be fine. However, if someone didn’t catch him, he would definitely meet a horrible death when he smashed into the ground.

Although Lord Youyuan felt that man’s life to not be as important as Chu Feng’s life, that did not mean that he didn’t consider his life to be important.

At the very least, when faced with the choice of saving that member of the younger generation or chasing after Chu Haoyan’s grandfather, Lord Youyuan chose to save that member of the younger generation without the slightest hesitation. He leapt up and caught him.

Chapter 3005 - The Astonishing Truth

“Lord Youyuan, thank you,” That member of the younger generation was extremely grateful to be saved by Lord Youyuan.

“It’s good that you’re fine,” Lord Youyuan said with a faint smile.

“Wuu~~~”

However, right at that moment, the smile on Lord Youyuan’s face instantly turned stiff. Then, his expression changed enormously, and he violently tossed that member of the younger generation away.

Lord Youyuan’s throw held enormous strength. It would be sufficient to crush that young man to death on impact.

However, that young man merely flipped his body in midair, and was then standing on the ground.

At that moment, that young man’s aura was actually also that of a rank two Exalted.

As for Lord Youyuan, he was moving back repeatedly. Then, with a ‘puu,’ a mouthful of blood sprayed out.

“Lord Youyuan!”

Chu Feng was immediately worried upon seeing this scene.

He discovered that Lord Youyuan’s chest had been pierced through. It was that wound that had caused Lord Youyuan to become so weak.

As for the person that caused that wound, it was that member of the younger generation Chu Haoyan’s grandfather had captured to threaten Lord Youyuan earlier.

It turned out that apart from Chu Feng, Chu Ruoshi and Chu Zhiyuan, the two other people of the younger generation there were also not their original selves.

Their bodies were both seized by others. They were two rank two Exalted.

“Don’t worry, I’m fine,” After being injured, Lord Youyuan arrived before Chu Feng and smiled at him.

Seeing Lord Youyuan like that, Chu Feng felt distressed.

He was able to tell that Lord Youyuan’s current injury was not a small matter; he was seriously injured.

However, even though he was already injured, Lord Youyuan still deliberately came over to appease him, fearing that he would worry.

After appeasing Chu Feng, Lord Youyuan turned his gaze to that person of the younger generation he had saved earlier.

“Who are you?” Lord Youyuan asked.

“Chu Youyuan, oh Chu Youyuan, I bet you must’ve never thought that we had this trick up our sleeve, no?” That person said with a smile on his face.

“It’s you?!!!” Hearing that man’s voice, Lord Youyuan felt very astonished. However, it was clear that he had already discovered who that person of the younger generation really was.

“Lord Youyuan, exactly who is he?” Chu Feng asked. The reason why Chu Feng wanted to know who that person was was because he knew that since that person had also seized the life of a member from the younger generation like Chu Haoyan’s grandfather and entered that place with him, they must possess the same purpose.

Both of them wanted to eliminate him.

Thus, Chu Feng actually wanted to know exactly who it was that wanted to eliminate him.

“Perhaps you might not know him well, but you must’ve heard about his grandfather,” Lord Youyuan looked to Chu Zhiyuan, who stood nearby.

“Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather? That man is Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather?” Chu Feng felt very astonished.

The reason why Chu Feng was so shocked was because he had clearly heard that Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather was not only their Chu Heavenly Clan’s

Utmost Exalted Elder, but he was also a very good-natured Utmost Exalted Elder.

He was even deemed to be one of the most good-natured Utmost Exalted Elders of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Furthermore, Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather was said to be someone who would only handle major matters within the clan. Not only would he be very impartial and fair, but he would also never use his identity and status to suppress others.

In fact, he would not even care when his grandson Chu Zhiyuan was bullied and ridiculed by others. That was the only reason why the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations dared to ridicule Chu Zhiyuan with no fear.

However, that Utmost Exalted Elder who was rumored to possess an enormously good moral character was now not only acting with Chu Haoyan's grandfather, but he had also injured Lord Youyuan and taken the life of a person from the younger generation to enter that place.

As for his purpose, it was to eliminate Chu Feng.

As such, how could Chu Feng not be surprised?

"Chu Feng, you should now know why I declared earlier that you would definitely die here, right?"

Chu Zhiyuan walked behind his grandfather. He had an extremely complacent expression on his face.

It would appear that he knew about all of this beforehand. It was no wonder he would be so confident from the very start.

Two of the Chu Heavenly Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders were backing him up; how could he not be confident?

"Chu Youyuan, you must've never thought that the two of us would join hands, right?" Right at that moment, the voice of Chu Haoyan's grandfather was heard. He had walked back in from the direction of the entrance and stood next to Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather.

"I'd nearly forgotten that he was also someone who was humiliated by Chu Haoxian."

"I originally thought that he had forgotten about the humiliation he had received back then. It would appear that I was careless," Lord Youyuan smiled bitterly and shook his head. There was a trace of regret on his face.

"No, no, no, this old man is not someone that holds a grudge. Chu Hanxian indeed humiliated me before. However, that's in the past," Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather shook his head.

"If that's the case, then why have you joined hands with him to kill Chu Feng?" Lord Youyuan asked. It would appear that he wanted to know the answer very much.

"That's because I possess the same purpose as him. Both of us are determined to kill Chu Feng," Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather said.

"Since you've declared you're not holding a grudge, then why are you trying to kill him?" Lord Youyuan asked.

"Indeed, I hold no grudge against him. However... I want my grandson to excel among his peers. That Chu Feng has simply succeeded his grandfather Chu Hanxian and his father Chu Xuanyuan's talents perfectly."

"Back then, we were suppressed to a state of being unable to raise our heads by Chu Hanxian. I do not wish for my grandson to suffer the same fate as myself, and be suppressed to the point where he is unable to raise his head by Chu Feng."

"Thus, I have no choice other than to eliminate Chu Feng," Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather said.

"You all... you are all blood clansmen. Regardless of who is stronger or weaker, you are all our clan's glories. Why do you insist on seeking selfish profit with no regards for others like this?" Lord Youyuan spoke in a very resentful manner.

"There has never been a saying of enjoying glories and disgrace together in the Chu Heavenly Clan. Only the strongest will be able to enjoy honor and glory," Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather said.

“Chu Puze, even if you kill Chu Feng, Chu Zhiyuan will suppress your grandson, Chu Haoyan. Are you certain that you want to join hands with him?” Lord Youyuan said to Chu Haoyan’s grandfather.

“Youyuan, oh Youyuan, if you’re trying to sow dissension, then you should forget about it. We have already reached a common understanding before coming here.”

“I admit that I also wish for my grandson to become the strongest in the Chu Heavenly Clan. However, compared to that, my desire to kill Chu Hanxian’s grandson, Chu Xuanyuan’s son, is even greater,” Chu Haoyan’s grandfather said.

“You all!!!”

Hearing those words, Lord Youyuan’s complexion turned incomparably pale. Then, he opened his mouth and sprayed out another mouthful of blood.

It was from anger. He had been angered to a state of vomiting blood.

He had truly never imagined that those two, for the sake of their own selfish motives, would do such things. n.(Ovel&1n

One should know that the two of them were their Chu Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders.

“Chu Youyuan, you shouldn’t have come here today. However, since you’ve come, do not blame us for not taking our old friendship into consideration. You will die here together with Chu Feng.”

“Clank~~~”

After saying those words, a golden spear appeared in Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather’s hand. It was an Immortal Armament.

Chu Haoyan’s grandfather also started to fiddle with the Immortal Armament blade in his hand. He started to look to Lord Youyuan with a pitying gaze.

Two rank two Exalted joining hands against a seriously injured Chu Youyuan.

They felt that they would definitely be able to win.

Chapter 3006 - Complacent Laughter

“Lord Youyuan, please rest yourself. Allow this Chu Feng to behead these scum of the Chu Heavenly Clan,” As Chu Feng spoke, he once again gripped his Evil God Sword tightly.

“Hahaha. Chu Youyuan, did you see that? That Chu Feng is simply a carbon copy of his father and grandfather. He is simply egotistical and arrogant beyond reason.”

“He really thinks that he will be able to take care of two Chu Heavenly Clan’s Utmost Exalted Elders with that lousy sword,” Chu Haoyan’s grandfather started to laugh mockingly.

As for Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather, he shook his head helplessly.

Although the way they expressed themselves was different, they both found Chu Feng ridiculous.

“The two of you can give it a try,” Chu Feng gripped his Evil God Sword even tighter. He once again began to instill power into the Evil God Sword, activating it.

Although Chu Feng was no longer certain of whether his Evil God Sword would be able to contend against Exalted-level experts after witnessing the battle between Lord Youyuan and Chu Haoyan’s grandfather, the Evil God Sword was still his final hope.

As such, he must risk his life on it.

At the very least, he would still have a final chance to live should he use the Evil God Sword. If he didn’t use the Evil God Sword, he would definitely end up dying.

“Chu Feng, put down the Demon Armament in your hand,” Right at that moment, Lord Youyuan suddenly spoke to Chu Feng.

He looked to Chu Feng and said, “Chu Feng, you must believe in me. With me here, they will not be able to kill you.”

After saying those words, Lord Youyuan stretched forth his arm and personally cut open the defensive barrier he had setup. Then, he shielded Chu Feng within his bosom.

“Stop him! We cannot allow him to escape!” Seeing this, Chu Haoyan’s grandfather immediately narrowed his eyebrows. An extremely serious expression appeared in his eyes.

At that moment, Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather released his boundless oppressive might and started to fix his eyes on Lord Youyuan’s each and every movement.

Indeed, being seriously injured, Lord Youyuan would not be able to escape should the two of them decide to strictly cling to him.

“Woosh~~~”

However, even with that being the case, Lord Youyuan still took an abrupt step and left the ground.

However, he did not fly toward the entrance of the cave. Instead, he was flying toward the depths of the cave.

It was the direction of that fiery lake.

When Chu Feng and Lord Youyuan arrived on top of the lake, they started to abruptly fly downward. With a ‘putt,’ a splash soared into the sky. Lord Youyuan had actually entered the lake with Chu Feng. n(/o-.ʌ-(e-)l--b-.1--n

“This?”

Witnessing this, Chu Haoyan’s grandfather and Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather’s expressions both changed.

Then, the two of them both flew above the lake.

After the two of them carefully inspected the lake, they looked to one another. Then... the two of them actually started to laugh in a relieved manner.

They felt that the lake water was extremely powerful and, not to mention Chu Feng, even Chu Youyuan would undoubtedly die after entering it.

“That Chu Youyuan wasn’t boasting. Indeed, we weren’t able to kill Chu Feng. As for the reason, it’s because he’s the one that ended up killing Chu Feng.”

“Hahaha...” Chu Haoyan’s grandfather started to laugh in an incomparably carefree manner after saying those words.

His laughter was so full of joy that it was as if he had managed to obtain some great revenge.

As for Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather, his expression was somewhat serious. He looked cautiously to Chu Haoyan's grandfather, "I hope that you will honor your promise. Otherwise... this old man will have you die in this lake too."

"Rest assured, this old man will not break our promise," After he finished saying those words, Chu Haoyan's grandfather looked to Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi. He said, "Children, what are the two of you still hesitating for? That spring belongs to the two of you."

Hearing those words, Chu Zhiyuan revealed a joyous expression and stepped into the spring without the slightest hesitation.

After entering the spring, he turned around. He saw that Chu Ruoshi was still standing there. Thus, he asked, "Ruoshi, what are you still waiting for? Quickly, come in and train with me."

"Big brother Zhiyuan, that spring is very powerful. However, it would be more effective for one to train in it alone. You want to defeat Chu Qing. Thus... Ruoshi will not be entering the spring," Chu Ruoshi said.

"Ruoshi, you..." Chu Zhiyuan was startled upon hearing those words.

"Big brother Zhiyuan, I have never thought about becoming number one. I only wanted you to become number one, as you are my man. Thus... do not disappoint me," Chu Ruoshi said.

Hearing those words, Chu Zhiyuan was startled momentarily. Then, a determined expression emerged in his eyes. He said, "Very well. Ruoshi, I will definitely not disappoint you. I will also not forget all that you've done for me."

After he finished saying those words, Chu Zhiyuan sat cross-legged in the spring water and closed his eyes. He began to enjoy the natural energies and martial comprehension that was pounding against him nonstop all alone.

"Ruoshi is a truly good girl. To have such a good girl as your granddaughter-in-law is not only Zhiyuan's fortune, it is also your good fortune. It would appear that not only will your grandson obtain the number one place in the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition, but that Chu Qing will also end up suffering."

“It is truly something worthy of celebration,” Chu Haoyan’s grandfather said to Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather.

“Rest assured, after my grandson emerges in power, your grandson shall become his trusted aide. The future of the Chu Heavenly Clan shall be in our hands,” Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather said.

“That would be the best,” Chu Haoyan’s grandfather said with a smile.

Finally, Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather revealed a smile on his face. It was a smile of having one’s plot finally succeeding after years of silent endurance.

That said, when the two of them were thinking that they had eliminated their greatest threat, when they felt that they would obtain the world, they had no idea that Chu Feng and Lord Youyuan were diving straight down into the lake following the undercurrent.

Merely, it was no longer Lord Youyuan holding Chu Feng. Instead, it was Chu Feng holding Lord Youyuan.

Lord Youyuan had ended up losing consciousness. His life and death was uncertain.

However, Chu Feng’s eyes were shining. They were emitting an incomparably astonished gaze.

At the same time, lightning had enveloped his body. The lightning was protecting him and Lord Youyuan like a sacred guardian beast.

It was that lightning that was shielding Chu Feng and Lord Youyuan from the frightening lake water, allowing Chu Feng to be completely unharmed in the hellish water.

Chapter 3007 - Trapped at The Bottom Of The Lake

With lightning covering his entire body, Chu Feng continued to dive down into the lake following its undercurrents. His speed was very fast.

“Chu Feng, what’s going on? That lightning on your body...?” Her Lady Queen was very puzzled. She originally thought that falling into the lake would mean certain death.

The reason for that was because even she could sense how frightening the lake water was.

The lake was soaring with heat. It was as if it were capable of burning everything.

Because of that, Her Lady Queen had never imagined that Chu Feng would be unharmed after entering the lake.

As for that, it was due to the lightning emitted from Chu Feng's body.

Not only was the lightning covering Chu Feng completely, but it also covered Chu Youyuan completely.

That said, the lightning did not seem to be under Chu Feng's control. Rather, it was flowing out by itself.

It could be said that it was Chu Feng's Heavenly Lightning Bloodline's instinctual reaction.

"I also do not know what's happening. However, I think Lord Youyuan does," Chu Feng looked to Chu Youyuan.

Chu Youyuan was unconscious.

That sneak attack from Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather had very seriously injured Chu Youyuan. Even though Chu Feng had already treated his wound, it was still not very effective.

That was understandable too. For someone of Chu Youyuan's cultivation, only an injury to his soul would cause him to fall unconscious. Unfortunately... even Chu Feng was powerless to help him with his current injury.

"It would appear that this Chu Youyuan knew that it was safe to escape into this place. It seems that he truly possesses a deep understanding of the Nine Moons Sacred Domain. He's not an Utmost Exalted Elder yet, he possesses strength surpassing that of ordinary Utmost Exalted Elders. That old man is not simple at all," Her Lady Queen had a high evaluation of Chu Youyuan. After all, it was Chu Youyuan who saved Chu Feng and her.

"Oh, that's right. Chu Feng, how's this old man's injury? He won't die, right?" Her Lady Queen asked.

"I am unable to cure Lord Youyuan's injury. The situation is not very good. However, it is not a danger to his life. That said, I have no idea when he will wake up," Chu Feng said.

"It's good as long as he's not going to die. Chu Feng, say, where do you think this undercurrent will lead you? Could it be another exit?" Her Lady Queen asked.

"I hope that there's another exit. In that case, we can make them pay," Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng was feeling very helpless at that moment. Even though he had escaped a calamity, the power of the lake water was still extremely strong. Now that he was inside the lake, Chu Feng could only follow the flow of the undercurrent. He had no idea where it would lead him.

Furthermore, the undercurrent was extremely fast. Yet, he was still unable to see the end even after drifting in it for so long. From this, it could be seen that the lake was much larger than Chu Feng had originally anticipated.

While the lake looked like a lake from the outside, it would be more fitting to describe it as an entire world on the inside. After all, the inside of the lake was simply too enormous.

With a very fast speed, Chu Feng continued to drift down for an entire day.

After a day of drifting, Chu Feng finally arrived at the bottom of the lake. After reaching the bottom, the undercurrent disappeared, and he regained the freedom to move around.

"You've finally reached the bottom after drifting for so long. Exactly how deep is this lake?" Even Her Lady Queen opened her mouth with astonishment.

As for Chu Feng, he was looking up.

Even though he was still inside the lake, the water above him was filled with undercurrents.

"Woosh~~~"

Suddenly, Chu Feng sprang upward rapidly.

However, right after leaping forth, Chu Feng's movement stopped. The next moment, he was sent back down by the powerful undercurrent.

"Those undercurrents are too powerful. It's simply impossible to go against them. Not to mention you, I doubt that old man would be capable of it either," Her Lady Queen said.

"I hope that there's another way out so that I will not have to be trapped to death in here," Chu Feng started to frown. They all said that one must leave the Nine Moons Sacred Domain before it closed, or else one would lose one's life in here.

And at that moment, Chu Feng was trapped at the bottom of the lake with no idea how to get out. With this, how could he not be worried?

Even though he was worried, Chu Feng did not lose his fighting spirit. On the contrary... his fighting spirit was aroused.

Carrying Chu Youyuan on his back, Chu Feng began to quickly travel across the bottom of the lake. Chu Feng wanted to find a way out.

However, after Chu Feng walked for several hours, he was still unable to find an exit. The bottom of the lake was simply too big and vast, so much so that Chu Feng was unable to make any assessment of its actual size. Furthermore, as the lake water was too powerful, Chu Feng's Heaven's Eyes ended up being restricted too.

In fact, even Chu Feng's perception was greatly restricted. At that moment, he was like a headless fly, not knowing where to go or how to leave.

However, even with this being the case, Chu Feng's fighting spirit was still burning strong. He still persisted.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng knew that he couldn't die, that he still had a lot of things that he had to do.

He still hadn't met his mother yet. He still hadn't found his grandfather yet. There were still a lot of enemies that he had to root out. Chu Feng could not afford to die. He must continue living.

And, being trapped there, Chu Feng would end up dying should the time limit arrive.

There was no one he could rely on. He could only rely on himself. If even he himself decided to give up, he would really end up waiting for death.

“Chu Feng, let me out. We can search separately. I will help you find the exit,” Her Lady Queen said with concern.

“No, absolutely not. This lake is too powerful. The clones that I’ve created with my world spirit techniques will be immediately annihilated the moment they leave the lightning around my body. I do not wish for you to take on this sort of risk,” Chu Feng refused Her Lady Queen’s request without the slightest hesitation.

“No matter what, this Queen is from the Asura Spirit World. You’re completely fine in here; how could I not be fine too?” Her Lady Queen refused to accept Chu Feng’s decision.

“Milady Queen, I know very well how strong you are. However, this place is truly special. I cannot allow you...”

Whilst urging Her Lady Queen against coming out, Chu Feng suddenly turned his gaze backwards and loudly shouted, “Who is it?!”

Chu Feng heard a sound. However, when he turned around, he was unable to see anything in that direction.

“Chu Feng, what’s wrong?”

Her Lady Queen shared Chu Feng’s vision and hearing. However, there was nothing present at the location Chu Feng had looked to. Thus, Her Lady Queen was very confused by Chu Feng’s sudden shout.

“I felt as if there were someone behind me just then,” Chu Feng said.
nove)Lb.1n

“That shouldn’t be the case, no? How could there be someone in a place like this?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“I’m unable to sense anything behind me right now. However, I definitely sensed it earlier,” Chu Feng said.

“Could it be that you’re overly exhausted, and started having hallucinations?” Her Lady Queen was worried.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was not simply traveling across the bottom of the lake. He was also carefully observing his surroundings and exhausting his spirit power to examine everything.

To examine one's surroundings so thoroughly was actually quite exhausting, and it was quite a burden on Chu Feng.

Chapter 3008 - Frightening Child's Laughter

"Perhaps," Chu Feng shook his head helplessly.

Even he himself felt that he might be seeing hallucinations.

"Paa~~~"

However, right at that moment, a hand suddenly appeared. That hand firmly hit Chu Feng's head.

That hit was very painful. Even Chu Feng started to grimace.

However, Chu Feng immediately reacted upon being hit. His body shifted forward, rapidly distancing himself from the place where he had previously stood. At the same time, he turned around to look behind him.

However, he discovered that there was nothing behind him at all.

Not only was he unable to see anything, but he was unable to sense anything either.

However, when his head was hit earlier, Chu Feng had clearly felt the aura of a living being behind him.

Moreover, even if he had sensed wrong, the pain on the back of his head was definitely real.

Furthermore, with Chu Feng's cultivation, even if he were hit, he shouldn't be feeling such intense pain. Unless... the hit ended up injuring his soul.

"Exactly who is it? Show yourself!" Chu Feng shouted once more.

"Heeheehee..." After Chu Feng said those words, laughter sounded from behind him.

This time around, Chu Feng was able to clearly hear the laughter. It was a child's laughter.

However, when Chu Feng turned around, he was unable to see anything. Furthermore, he was unable to sense anything either.

However, Chu Feng had clearly felt the someone's aura when that laughter rang out.

"Crap! There's a monster in this lake," Even Her Lady Queen became nervous.

She was not afraid for herself; she was only worried for Chu Feng.

Her Lady Queen was unable to feel what Chu Feng sensed. However, she had clearly heard the laughter.

Although it was a child's laughter, it was very strange. One would feel uncomfortable upon hearing it.

Because of that, Her Lady Queen felt it was most definitely not a normal child. The reason for that was because that laughter was too frightening. Such frightening laughter likely meant that the source of the laughter was a monster.

"Paa~~~"

Right at that moment, Chu Feng felt pain on the back of his head again. He felt as if he had been ferociously attacked by a powerful iron hammer.

"Bastard, if you have the ability, then reveal yourself!" Chu Feng shouted angrily.

Chu Feng felt as if he were being played for a fool. Such a feeling was extremely displeasing.

Most importantly, apart from the frightening child-like laughter, Chu Feng simply had no idea who it was that was attacking him. This meant that his attacker possessed strength surpassing his own.

At that moment, his attacker was only toying with him. However, if his attacker decided to kill him, wouldn't Chu Feng really end up dying here?

“Chu Feng, do not infuriate it,” Right at that moment, a weak voice was suddenly heard.

Although that voice was coming through as a voice transmission, Chu Feng was able to immediately tell that it was Chu Youyuan’s voice.

“Lord Youyuan, how is the condition of your injury?” Chu Feng revealed a joyous expression.

Even though he was confronting a crisis, Lord Youyuan’s awakening still caused Chu Feng to feel very joyous. Furthermore, judging from Lord Youyuan’s words, it seemed that he knew who that unknown fellow was.

“Chu Feng, do not worry, this old man’s injuries are not serious. That said, you are encountering an enormous opportunity right now,” Lord Youyuan said.

“An enormous opportunity? Lord Youyuan, could you be referring to that unknown fellow?” Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng was asking through a voice transmission. He did not wish for the conversation between Lord Youyuan and him to be heard by that fellow. Likely, this was also what Lord Youyuan wished. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have spoken to Chu Feng through a voice transmission from the very start.

“That little fellow is called the Infernal Ghost,” Lord Youyuan said.

“The Infernal Ghost?” Chu Feng revealed a surprised expression.

“I cannot provide you with a detailed explanation right now. The reason for that is because the chance of encountering the Infernal Ghost at the vast lake-bottom is extremely low.”

“Since you’ve encountered it right now, you must definitely grasp this opportunity. You cannot infuriate it. You must play with it. As long as it is happy with you, it will bring you to the Infernal Spring.

“The spring you saw earlier inside that cave, that spring of powerful and concentrated natural energies, is actually from the Infernal Spring. Only the Infernal Ghost knows where that Infernal Spring is located.”

“Thus, as long as you properly please it, it will bring you to the Infernal Spring. At the Infernal Spring, you will be able to enjoy natural powers many times more concentrated than that of the spring in the cave,” Chu Youyuan said.

“All I have to do is to play with it? But... how do I play with it? That little brat only knows how to hit me, I couldn’t possibly allow it to hit me continuously until it’s satisfied, right?” Chu Feng asked with a frown.

Even during the time when he was talking with Chu Youyuan, that Infernal Ghost was still hitting Chu Feng’s head nonstop. Furthermore, that fellow was a determined fellow. He was hitting the same spot nonstop.

At present, not only was there a red and bloody bump on the back of Chu Feng’s head, but Chu Feng was also feeling his head buzzing, as that Infernal Ghost was capable of injuring his soul directly.

“Under the Infernal Lake, the Infernal Ghost.”

“The spring water’s source, the Infernal Ghost.”

“Find the Spring Mirror and shine on the Ghost.”

“The Ghost shall then follow the one’s mandate.”

“This old man obtained those four sentences from the Nine Moons Sacred Domain’s oracle. Contained within them was a way to appease the Infernal Ghost.”

“This old man felt that the Spring Mirror would be crucial to appeasing the Infernal Ghost. Merely, I have no idea what the Spring Mirror is. However, that Spring Mirror is definitely in the Infernal Lake,” Lord Youyuan said.

“Spring Mirror?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s expression changed. Then, seemingly as if recalling something, Chu Feng immediately took out a leaf from his Cosmos Sack.

That leaf should be some sort of plant leaf. However, it was special in the fact that it was not only emitting a faint amount of natural energies, but it was also silver in color.

“Is that something from this lake?” Lord Youyuan’s expression immediately changed upon seeing the leaf in Chu Feng’s hand.

“Senior, this is indeed something from this lake. Earlier, while searching for the way out, I discovered this leaf. I felt that this leaf was extraordinary, and thus decided to put it away.”

“Ouch!”

“Brat, you’re doing it again?” *nove/Lb*(In

Before Chu Feng could finish his words, he let out an exclamation of pain. It was the Infernal Ghost. It had ruthlessly attacked the back of Chu Feng’s head while he was unprepared.

Chapter 3009 - Infernal Ghost

That Infernal Ghost had struck Chu Feng’s sore spot again.

However, this time around, Chu Feng immediately turned around. Although he was still unable to see the Infernal Ghost, Chu Feng held the leaf in his hand and began to run it across the air in front of him.

The leaf did not emit any sort of light. However, when the leaf swept through one location, a figure appeared.

It was a little boy. That little boy was only a meter tall, and seemed to be around three years old. He was not wearing anything at all. As for his skin, it was actually fiery red.

No, it was not only his skin, even his eyes were red. In fact, even his teeth, fingernails and hair were red.

Practically his entire body was red.

That said, although that boy was fiery red all over, he did not give Chu Feng a fearful sensation.

On the contrary, the boy had quite an adorable look.

It was a very pretty little boy.

“That leaf is the Spring Mirror? That’s too much of a coincidence. No, that’s definitely not a coincidence. It’s destiny, truly destiny.”

“Chu Feng... you are truly an extremely fortunate person, like your father and grandfather.”

After Chu Feng revealed the Infernal Ghost by illuminating it with the leaf in his hand, even Lord Youyuan was unable to contain his excitement.

He had truly never expected a random leaf Chu Feng picked up to be the Spring Mirror. That was not an ordinary coincidence. Instead, it was truly destiny. Only those with great fortune would be able to encounter such an opportunity. For people like them, even if they did not possess talent, they would still be able to attain greatness just through the opportunities they would encounter.

“Heehee...”

Right at that moment, that Infernal Ghost suddenly started laughing.

His laughter was still very frightening. However, his smile was very innocent. Like an actual child, he was showing a brilliant smile.

“Come catch me, fool,” then, that Infernal Ghost actually spoke. Not only that, but he also turned around and started running.

His speed was extremely fast. Chu Feng had to try very hard in order to keep up with him. While chasing after him, Chu Feng continued to shine the Spring Mirror on the Infernal Ghost.

“Fool, fool, giant fool. Come and catch me. Come and catch me,” the Infernal Ghost was cheering excitedly the entire time. While running, he would turn around and make all sorts of faces at Chu Feng.

When Chu Feng started falling behind, he would even stop and wait for Chu Feng to catch up.

It could be seen that he was very happy, truly very happy.

He felt that Chu Feng was playing with him. He was enjoying the process thoroughly.

At the beginning, it was quite exhausting for Chu Feng to chase after that little fellow. It was not only an issue of speed. Most importantly, he would have to look through the leaf in his hand in order to chase after that little fellow.

As for the little fellow, he was so fast that Chu Feng would lose track of him should he be inattentive for the slightest moment. Should that happen, he would have to search for him again.

However, Chu Feng soon discovered the trick to finding the little fellow's tracks. Thus, chasing after him gradually became more effortless.

"Lord Youyuan, how did you discover the information concerning this Infernal Ghost?"

As chasing after the Infernal Ghost was no longer very exhausting, Chu Feng finally had the energy to ask Chu Youyuan about the Infernal Ghost. He wanted to dispel the puzzle in his heart.

"This old man has guarded the Nine Moons Sacred Domain for so long, I've naturally seen scenes that others have not, and know things that others do not."

"One day, an earthen wall suddenly appeared on the vast plain that the Nine Moons Sacred Domain is located in. That earthen wall was very worn out. However, written on the wall was the word 'oracle.'" nove/Lb(In

"At that time, this old man felt that earthen wall to be an extraordinary item. Thus, I began to carefully examine it. Upon examining it, I managed to gain quite a harvest. At the very least, I now understand a lot about the Yin Yang Gate."

"Of course, what this old man deciphered was only a small portion of that oracle. The Nine Moons Sacred Domain is definitely not limited to only the Yin Yang Gate," Chu Youyuan said.

"In that case, Lord Youyuan, do you know about the origin of this Infernal Lake and that Infernal Ghost?" Chu Feng asked.

"This old man actually does know about it," afterwards, Chu Youyuan began to tell Chu Feng about the Infernal Ghost.

It turned out that the Infernal Ghost originated from the Ancient Era.

There was a couple in the Ancient Era. That couple were both cultivation experts. They were famed throughout an entire Starfield.

The couple were childhood sweethearts that ended up being with one another for their entire lives.

However, as the two of them were both wholeheartedly pursuing the path of martial cultivation, they did not express their feelings for one another the entire time.

It was only when the two of them reached over ten thousand years of age that they realized each other's importance, and finally married one another.

After the two of them married, their pursuit for martial cultivation grew weaker and weaker. On the other hand, their feelings for one another grew stronger and stronger.

Because of that, the couple decided to withdraw from the world of martial cultivation, the world where people fought for fame and profit. They planned to return to the mountains and live their lives in seclusion.

Although the couple were very old at that time, they were still vigorous. Not long after they retreated to the mountains to live in seclusion, they ended up having a child.

With that, the two formerly all-powerful experts ended up living lives similar to those of ordinary people. However, to them, that was the happiest period of their lives.

To be able to live such a life, the couple were unwilling to exchange it for further cultivation, no matter how strong.

Unfortunately, the heavens refused to comply with their wishes.

During the third birthday of their child, their enemies arrived at their door.

Although the couple had retreated to the mountains, they remained very powerful, as they'd cultivated for many years.

Although their enemies came in great numbers, they were no match for the couple.

However, their enemies were despicable and shameless people. They lured the couple away from their homes and captured their child.

Using their child as a threat, their enemies demanded that the couple kill one another.

The couple knew that even if they were to kill one another, their enemies, based on how despicable they were, would definitely not spare their child.

Thus, with their lives as the price, the couple unleashed an enormous slaughtering formation.

Flames soared into the sky as spring water burst forth.

The two incompatible powers of fire and water not only fused with one another, but they also turned into an extremely powerful slaughtering power.

Screams were heard nonstop.

Under the attack of the fire and water, practically all living things in the surrounding billion mile radius were killed.

There was only one exception -- the couple's child.

It turned out that the couple already expected their enemies to seek them out one day. Because of that, they'd meticulously created that grand formation, the Grand Infernal Lake Formation.

The father was the fire, whereas the mother was the water. The fire would slaughter everything, whereas the water would contain their martial comprehensions.

Inside the Infernal Lake, all but their own child would die.

As for their child, he would gain eternal life in the Infernal Lake.

Unfortunately, the Ancient Era was too long in the past. No one now knew the couple's name, or their child's name.

They could only name that child according to the Infernal Lake. That's why that child was called the Infernal Ghost.

**Martial God Asura #Chapter 3010 - Precisely My
Intention - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 3010 -
Precisely My Intention**

Chapter 3010 - Precisely My Intention

Upon finding out about the origin of the Infernal Ghost, not only did Chu Feng's grievance from the Infernal Ghost beating the back of his head vanish completely, but the gaze with which Chu Feng looked to the Infernal Ghost had also changed.

Chu Feng had always felt himself to be pitiful for not having his biological parents by his side.

However, when compared to the Infernal Ghost, Chu Feng was simply far better off. No matter what, his parents were still alive.

Furthermore, Chu Feng knew very well that even though his parents did not accompany him, they loved him greatly.

As for the Infernal Ghost, although his parents undoubtedly also loved him, his parents were no longer alive.

As such, how could he not be pitiful?

"Lord Youyuan, in that case, is the Infernal Ghost a human or a ghost now?" Chu Feng asked.

The reason Chu Feng asked that was because the Infernal Ghost's appearance was still that of a three-year-old child. That was very unconventional.

"Chu Feng, apart from gods, who could possibly live forever?"

"The Infernal Ghost's parents had pursued the path of martial cultivation for many years, and were already expert martial cultivators."

"However, even they were unable to live forever. Thus, how could they possibly allow a three-year-old child to live forever?"

"The reason why the Infernal Ghost is called a ghost is because he's already dead."

"Only by remaining in the Infernal Lake will he be able to continue living. However, if he is to leave the Infernal Lake, his soul will scatter, and he will fade into the world completely," Chu Youyuan said.

After hearing what Chu Youyuan said, Chu Feng started to sympathize with the Infernal Ghost even more.

"Chu Feng, did you feel it?" Suddenly, Chu Youyuan became excited.

"I felt it. It's natural energies, extremely concentrated natural energies." Chu Feng also became excited.

He'd been running after the Infernal Ghost for so long. Finally, he was able to feel the aura of natural energies.

Furthermore, the natural energies were growing more and more intense. Both Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan knew what was happening.

This meant that they were growing closer and closer to the Infernal Spring.

Sure enough, the Infernal Ghost soon started to slow down. The reason for that was because a stretch of extraordinary water had appeared before him.

The water inside the Infernal Lake was all fiery red. After all, this was caused by the mixing of fire and water.

However, at that moment, an incomparably clear body of water had appeared before the Infernal Ghost.

That body of water resembled a stretch of immortal ground appearing in the center of hell. It was truly fascinating to see.

As for the powerful natural energies, they were emitted by that body of water.

That body of water seemed to be boiling. Like a stream, the water was moving upward.

Likely, that stream of water was the source of the fountain spring in the cave.

"Chu Feng, what are you hesitating for? Quickly, go in. With such concentrated natural energies and even martial comprehensions, your cultivation will definitely increase upon entering it. You might even be able to make a breakthrough to the Heavenly Immortal realm," seeing the Infernal Spring, Her Lady Queen was simply even more excited than Chu Feng.

Actually, Chu Feng was also very excited. After all, this was a great opportunity for him to make a breakthrough.

However, Chu Feng was hesitating.

"Lord Youyuan, if I am to enter the Infernal Spring to train, would I end up exhausting the power of the Infernal Pond and cause the Infernal Ghost to become homeless?" Chu Feng asked.

It turned out that the reason why Chu Feng was hesitating was because he was worried for the Infernal Ghost.

Although the Infernal Ghost was no longer an actual living being, Chu Feng did not wish for his soul to scatter because he sympathized with the origin of the Infernal Ghost.

Although the Infernal Ghost was no longer an actual living being, Chu Feng felt that it would be a good thing for him to continue living carefree and without worries like this.

At the very least, Chu Feng wanted it to continue living.

"That wouldn't happen. Chu Feng, you can rest assured. According to the record on the oracle, the power of the Infernal Spring will not disappear, and it will also continue to exist. However, the assistance the Infernal Spring can provide you with is also limited."

"Thus, exactly how much you can obtain from it all depends on your own comprehension ability. It is not through consuming the power of the Infernal Spring," Chu Youyuan explained.

Hearing what Chu Youyuan said, the hesitation in Chu Feng's mind immediately dissipated.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng noticed that the Infernal Ghost, who was laughing the entire way, had entered the Infernal Spring.

After entering the Infernal Spring, the Infernal Ghost, who was extremely lively earlier, did a long stretch and then fell asleep.

He was in a very deep sleep. It was like a child falling asleep after getting tired from playing too much.

No, it wasn't just akin to being alike. Although the Infernal Ghost had continued to exist since the Ancient Era, he was... actually still only a child.

Both his character and appearance were only that of a child.

At that moment, Chu Feng also stopped hesitating and leaped into the Infernal Lake.

Upon entering the Infernal Lake, Chu Feng was immediately engulfed by boundless natural energies. The feeling of being engulfed by boundless natural energies was simply akin to reaching paradise for cultivators.

In other words, Chu Feng was feeling like a pervert being surrounded by countless beauties. It was simply the best feeling ever.

Chu Feng hurriedly closed his eyes and began to comprehend the natural energies contained within the spring.

However, Chu Feng soon opened his eyes again.

"Chu Feng, what's wrong?" Her Lady Queen hurriedly asked.

"Eggy, Milady Queen, truly the heavens are helping me," Chu Feng was wild with joy and extremely excited.

"Exactly what's happening? Stop beating around the bush and quickly tell this Queen," Her Lady Queen became even more curious upon hearing Chu Feng say those words. She who was originally sitting in Chu Feng's world spirit space lazily actually jumped onto her feet.

"Being here, I am able to sever the stream of water going upward. What do you think will happen should I sever the stream of water?" Chu Feng said with a beaming smile on his face.

"Is there even a need to guess? If you can sever the stream of water leading upward from the Infernal Spring, the natural energies in the spring above would dissipate too. With that, that Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi would not be able to train anymore," Her Lady Queen said.

"Precisely," Chu Feng said.

"Then why are you still standing there? Quickly, sever that stream of water," excited, Her Lady Queen began to urge Chu Feng.

Chu Feng smiled lightly at Her Lady Queen's urging. With a brilliant smile, Chu Feng said, "That is precisely my intention."

Chapter 3011 - Despicable And Shameless

The surface of the Infernal Lake was still surging with waves. Its dangerousness was clear to everyone.

Not even the two Chu Heavenly Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders dared to approach the lake.

The clear spring water located nearby formed a clear-cut contrast against the dangerous Infernal Lake.

One was frightening, causing people to distance themselves.

The other was attractive, causing people to want to be engrossed in it.

However, no one would've imagined that the spring water that contained such concentrated natural energies was actually flowing from the bottom of the Infernal Lake.

Ever since Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan escaped into the Infernal Lake, Chu Zhiyuan had been training inside the spring.

During that period of time, he did not even open his eyes once.

He was extremely earnest in his training.

"I wonder how big brother Zhiyuan's training is coming along," Chu Ruoshi said.

"Rest assured. The natural energies and martial comprehension within that spring water possesses an immeasurable effect for True Immortals like yourselves."

"The way I see it, Zhiyuan will definitely be able to break through to the Heavenly Immortal realm," After saying those words, Chu Haoyan's grandfather looked to Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather. He said, "Old guy, what say you?"

"My view is the same as yours," Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather said with a faint smile.

His grandson's cultivation was going to increase. Furthermore, the increase in cultivation would be vast. As his grandfather, he would naturally be very happy.

However, right at that moment, Chu Zhiyuan, who had his eyes tightly closed and was immersed in training, suddenly opened his eyes. He looked to Chu Ruoshi and the others. He said, "Should I be given sufficient time, I will be able to break through to rank two Heavenly Immortal."

It turned out that Chu Zhiyuan had heard the conversation between Chu Ruoshi and the others. That was why he deliberately opened his eyes to stop training. He wanted to inform them exactly how vast of a harvest he would obtain from the fountain spring.

"In that case, big brother Zhiyuan, how much of a harvest have you obtained now?" Chu Ruoshi asked excitedly.

"It's already not an issue for me to break through to rank nine True Immortal now. As for the Heavenly Immortal realm, I am only a bit away from it," Chu Zhiyuan had a proud and pleased expression on his face as he said those words.

"In that case, Zhiyuan, how long do you need to gain sufficient natural energies and comprehension to reach rank two Heavenly Immortal?" Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather asked. After all, Chu Zhiyuan was his grandson, the person he had placed all of his hopes on. ~~nDve-Lb~~)In

"Grandfather, please rest assured. I will be able to gain sufficient martial comprehension to break through to rank two Heavenly Immortal before leaving the Nine Moons Sacred Domain," Chu Zhiyuan said.

"Good, as expected of my grandson," Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather was overjoyed.

"Grandfather, do not worry about me. Rank two Heavenly Immortal is within my grasp. Your grandson will definitely not let you down, definitely not disappoint all that you've invested in me," Chu Zhiyuan said confidently.

"Clamor~~~"

However, right at that moment, the spring water that was originally flowing out actually started to decrease in intensity. Shortly after, no more water flowed

out. Even the water within the spring started to flow down the previously flowing source-head.

At the same time, the dense natural energies also started to gradually dissipate.

“This... what is happening?!”

Everyone present was astonished by this.

Chu Zhiyuan started to panic. He hurriedly turned to ask his grandfather, “Why would the spring water disappear? Grandfather, exactly what is going on?”

“Zhiyuan, it would appear that this opportunity of yours ends here,” Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather was also feeling extremely unreconciled. However, he was also powerless to do anything.

“No, no, I still haven’t obtained enough comprehension. The current me is still a bit away from reaching the Heavenly Immortal realm.”

“Grandfather, you must think of something. Could you split through these rocks? After all, the spring water comes from deep underground. If you are able to split through these rocks all the way down, we will definitely be able to find the spring water again,” Chu Zhiyuan was extremely emotional, and began to panic.

He really did not wish to miss such an opportunity. After all, rank two Heavenly Immortal was already within his grasp. He was unable to accept missing out on this opportunity just like that.

“Zhiyuan, what sort of place do you consider this place to be? This is the Nine Moons Sacred Domain. How could we possibly split apart the rocks in this place? If we were able to so easily destroy the rocks, we would not be under the Nine Moons Sacred Domain’s confinements,” Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather said.

“But... but...!!!” Feeling extremely helpless, a dejected expression covered Chu Zhiyuan’s face, and he let out an explosive sigh.

What was already within his grasp actually ended up escaping him just like that. How could he not feel unreconciled?

Chu Zhiyuan was already so furious without even knowing the reason why. If he were to know that the culprit behind all this was Chu Feng, Chu Zhiyuan might actually be irritated to death.

It was Chu Feng. Of course it was Chu Feng. It was Chu Feng who had severed the connection between the Infernal Spring and the cave. It was Chu Feng who had severed Chu Zhiyuan's ability to continue absorbing natural energies and martial comprehension.

However, none of them knew about this. They all felt that it was the Nine Moons Sacred Domain playing a trick on Chu Zhiyuan.

"Zhiyuan, forget about it. This is fate," Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather urged.

Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather was, after all, an Utmost Exalted Elder of the Chu Heavenly Clan, someone who had cultivated for many years. He was very experienced and knowledgeable. Even though this was also not something that he desired, he was very capable of adjusting his state of mind.

"Big brother Zhiyuan, didn't you say that you're only a bit away from reaching the Heavenly Immortal realm?"

"With your talent, this bit will definitely not stop you. Furthermore, as long as you reach the Heavenly Immortal Realm, Chu Qing will no longer be your match. At that time... you can seek out Chu Qing for revenge," Chu Ruoshi also started to comfort Chu Zhiyuan.

However, no matter how many people tried to comfort him, Chu Zhiyuan was still feeling very dispirited, still feeling very displeased.

That was how human hearts were. Everyone is very greedy, and wants to obtain even more.

Originally, he was able to obtain even more. Yet, he was now no longer capable of doing so. Naturally, he would feel very disappointed, very frustrated and very angry.

"Let us think about what to do with Chu Feng right now. Should we silence everyone by killing all of the people of the younger generation in the Yin Yang Gate or..." Chu Haoyan's grandfather asked.

"If we are to kill all of them and leave only Haoyan, Ruoshi and Zhiyuan, it would instead be more suspicious. Moreover... do you dare to kill that girl Chu Lingxi?"

"If something is to happen to her, even if her father and grandfather don't look into it, her mother will definitely investigate this matter till the end. I believe neither you or I would want to provoke that crazy girl, right?" Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather said.

"Then what do you suggest we do?" Chu Haoyan's grandfather asked.

"That's very simple. Since Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan are already dead, the authority over this is already in our hands. Whatever we say will be the truth," A despicable smile appeared on Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather's aged face.

"Exactly how do you plan to take care of this?" Chu Haoyan's grandfather questioned again.

"We shall frame him. We shall turn black to white and white to black."

"We will push all of the fault onto that Chu Feng. We will say that Chu Feng tried to forcibly seize all of the natural energies here for himself, and injured us, Ruoshi and Zhiyuan."

"Unfortunately for him, he was unable to control the overwhelming natural energies in the formation."

"Thus, he ended up being engulfed by the lake, and lost his life to it," Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather said.

"Brilliant! Old guy, you're truly brilliant!"

"Of course."

At that moment, the two Utmost Exalted Elders looked at one another. Then, they both blossomed with smiles, and began to laugh.

Merely, both their smiles and their laughter were very despicable and shameless.

Chapter 3012 - Frightening Mother

“Since we’ve decided, let’s leave this place. After all, apart from the spring water, there are no other treasures here.”

“And now, as that spring water is gone, there is no reason for us to stay here,” Chu Haoyan’s grandfather said.

“Wait,” Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather said. Then, he waved his sleeve and drew a map in midair.

“That is... the route here?” Chu Ruoshi asked in astonishment.

“Ruoshi, your eyesight’s pretty good. Indeed, this is the route here. Speaking of it, it is all thanks to that brat Chu Feng that we were able to reach this place.”

“However, without him, you all likely would not know how to return, no?” Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather asked.

“Now that you mention it,” Both Chu Zhiyuuan and Chu Ruoshi shook their heads and revealed ashamed expressions on their faces.

They knew very well that not even Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather knew how to reach this place.

Chu Feng was the only one who was capable of finding it.

Even the map that Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather took out was only something that he had secretly recorded on the way here.

Although it was a very easy task, Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi had neglected it.

That was the reason why they felt ashamed.

After all, if Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather hadn’t recorded the route, they would not know how to return, and would likely be trapped here.

The reason for that was because the journey here was truly rugged; it was simply an enormous maze.

At the same time, they were unable to keep themselves from gasping in admiration. Sure enough, the older ginger was more pungent. With someone

like Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather accompanying them, it truly gave them a sense of security.

"Zhiyuan, remember it."

"Although you're unable to break through to rank two Heavenly Immortal this time around, you will, with your talent, soon be able to break through to rank one Heavenly Immortal."

"The Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition will be the best time for you to prove yourself."

"Thus, it is time for you to reveal your edge," Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather said to Chu Zhiyuan.

His intention was very clear. He wanted Chu Zhiyuan to lead those people of the younger generation out of the cave.

After all, in the hearts of the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations, Chu Zhiyuan was merely a useless pretty boy.

If Chu Zhiyuan was able to successfully lead them out of the cave and save their lives, then his status in their hearts would naturally increase by a lot.

"I understand, grandfather," Chu Zhiyuan was, after all, also a genius of excellent talent. Thus, he memorized the map, the route out of the cave, with a single glance.

Then, Chu Zhiyuan and the others left.

For the sake of framing Chu Feng, they had decided to put on a very real disguise, and riddled themselves with bruises and scars on the way out.

This was especially true for the two Utmost Exalted Elders. The two of them made themselves appear so seriously injured that they were on the verge of death. With this, it would serve as a major advantage for them.

Firstly, those two people of the younger generation had already died. As for the two Utmost Exalted Elders, it would be impossible for them to continuing using their bodies as their own forever.

Thus, as long as they were seriously injured as they left, they would be in danger of dying at any moment.

After they helped testify for Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi that it was Chu Feng that had attacked them, the two of them could then “die”.

With that, they would not only frame Chu Feng with their deaths, but the two Utmost Exalted Elders would also be able to get away with killing the two people from the younger generation.

It was simply a perfect plan.

However, they did not anticipate that all of the people from the younger generation had left, leaving only a single person remaining in the cave. As for that person, she was Chu Lingxi.

Chu Lingxi had fallen to the ground, and was unconscious.

Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi walked toward Chu Lingxi to inspect her. They discovered that there were no injuries on Chu Lingxi. However, her aura was very weak; she was simply on the brink of death. It was her soul that was seriously injured.

However, even if it was a serious injury to her soul, it should’ve injured her physical body too. Yet, Chu Lingxi’s body was completely uninjured. It was only her soul that was injured; her body was completely unscathed.

In short, her injury was very strange.

“Grandfather, what is going on?” Chu Zhiyuan asked in a puzzled manner.

“It’s the Yin Yang Fate Pearl.”

“Chu Lingxi fused her Yin Yang Fate Pearl with Chu Feng’s. When they entered the Yin Yang Gate, their fates were bound with one another,” Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather said.

“In that case, it would mean that Chu Feng...” Chu Zhiyuan revealed a joyous expression.

“Chu Feng has naturally died. He entered that lake, and so was definitely killed. Furthermore, Chu Lingxi’s condition further verifies Chu Feng’s death,” Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather said.

“Since that’s the case, let us ignore this Chu Lingxi and let her die. We will even be able to put the blame of Chu Lingxi’s death on Chu Feng’s head as well,” Chu Zhiyuan said with a sneer.

Although Chu Feng had died, Chu Lingxi also possessed great talent that must not be looked down upon. In Chu Zhiyuan’s eyes, Chu Lingxi was a great threat too. He longed for her to die too.

“No, that wouldn’t do. Chu Lingxi absolutely must not die,” Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather said.

“Grandfather, why is that?” Chu Zhiyuan was very puzzled by his grandfather’s obstruction.

“Zhiyuan, you do not know how crazy of a girl Chu Lingxi’s mother is.”

“Should Chu Lingxi die, her mother will definitely not be willing to leave the matter at that. She will end up creating a major commotion,” Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather said.

“But, since it’s Chu Feng who caused her death, this should be unrelated to us,” Chu Zhiyuan said.

“But Chu Feng has died. She will not be able to cause trouble for someone that’s already dead. Thus, she will cause trouble for those that are alive. At that time, both you and I, in fact, not even the entire Chu Heavenly Clan, would be able to escape her.”

“She will definitely not disregard how Chu Lingxi died. She will demand that the Chu Heavenly Clan provide her with an explanation. As for that explanation, it is something that we cannot afford to give,” Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather said.

“Zhiyuan, you should listen to your grandfather. Chu Lingxi absolutely must not die. Otherwise... you will definitely regret it.”

“You will regret letting Chu Lingxi die,” At that moment, even Chu Haoyan’s grandfather started to urge against letting Chu Lingxi die.

Hearing those words, Chu Zhiyuan was unable to contain himself from swallowing a mouthful of saliva.

He was scared. Although he had never met Chu Lingxi's mother before, he was able to tell from his grandfather's nervous reaction that Chu Lingxi's mother was a very dangerous person.

Otherwise, how could his grandfather, an Utmost Exalted Elder of the Chu Heavenly Clan, one of the strongest people in the Chu Heavenly Clan apart from their clan chief, be scared?

That said, Chu Zhiyuan also became curious as to exactly what sort of existence Chu Lingxi's mother was.

After all, Chu Lingxi's mother was only a member of the younger generation before his grandfather.

Curious, Chu Zhiyuan asked, "Grandfather, exactly what sort of person is Chu Lingxi's mother? What sort of strength does she possess?"

"Zhiyuan, who is the strongest in our clan?" Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather asked.

"That would naturally be Lord Clan Chief," Chu Zhiyuan said.

"Chu Lingxi's mother is the strongest person in their clan," Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather said.

"She... she's actually that powerful?" Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi were both very shocked upon hearing those words.

Although they'd already guessed Chu Lingxi's mother to be very powerful, they did not imagine her to be that powerful.

The strongest in their clan, wouldn't that mean that Chu Lingxi's mother would be capable of contending against their Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief?

At that moment, they seemed to finally realize why the two Utmost Exalted Elders would be so afraid of Chu Lingxi's mother.

"Chu Lingxi's mother is definitely not as simple as being only powerful. That girl is also vicious and merciless. For the sake of obtaining her goal, she would not shrink from any crime, and use means both fair and foul."

"Let's say it like this: that girl is simply the most crazy, most frightening girl I've ever seen," Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather said.

When Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather said those words, Chu Haoyan's grandfather also nodded.

At that moment, the expression of fear on Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi's faces reached an extreme level.

Then, without saying a word, the two of them crouched down and began to put forth all of their strength to treat Chu Lingxi's injury.

They had decided to keep Chu Lingxi alive no matter what.

The reason for that was because they did not wish to confront Chu Lingxi's frightening mother.

Chapter 3013 - Sharp Gaze

For the sake of not provoking Chu Lingxi's frightening mother, Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi, the pair who were originally hoping for Chu Lingxi's death, started to dramatically put forth all of their strength to help her.

Merely, with the power that they possessed, it would not be an easy task for them to treat Chu Lingxi's serious injury.

Thus, in the end, it was the two Utmost Exalted Elders that acted to save Chu Lingxi, who was in imminent peril.

Of course, the two Utmost Exalted Elders deliberately concealed their tracks and gave the meritorious service of saving Chu Lingxi to Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi.

After saving Chu Lingxi from the brink of death, the four of them began to proceed outward whilst bringing Chu Lingxi along with them.

In the beginning, they were confused in regards to where Chu Haoyan, Chu Huanyu and the others had gone to. However, when they reached the entrance of the cave, they discovered that Chu Haoyan and the others were all present. They moved toward them and asked them what had happened.

It turned out that the commotion from the battle against Chu Youyuan was too strong; even the cave started to tremble. Fearing that the cave would collapse, those younger generations ran out in fear.

Upon finding out about this, the two Utmost Exalted Elders started to ridicule those younger generations' ignorance in their hearts. The rocks in that place were so firm, not even they could shatter them. Thus, how could the cave possibly collapse?

Of course, the ones to ask the other party were actually not them. Instead, it was Chu Haoyan and the others.

Although Chu Haoyan's grandfather participated in the conspiracy, Chu Haoyan did not know anything about it.

Thus, he simply had no idea that his grandfather was one of the two seriously injured younger generations. Because of that, he was not concerned with their injuries in the slightest. The only thing he was concerned about were the treasures located deep in the cave.

As expected, Chu Zhiyuan and the others began to tell the lie that they had prepared.

"Damn it, I knew that Chu Feng couldn't be so kind as to bring all of us here. Sure enough, he planned to hog all of the treasures for himself," upon hearing the lies, Chu Haoyan decided to believe them without the slightest hesitation. Not only that, but he even started to speak ill of Chu Feng.

After all, he was one of the people among the crowd present that desired Chu Feng's miserable death the most. Finding out that Chu Feng had died, he would naturally be very happy.

However, even with that being the case, he still had to speak ill of Chu Feng, still had to hold him in disdain. Even in death, he still did not plan to let Chu Feng off. He wanted to completely ruin Chu Feng's reputation.

"I have truly trusted him in vain. Never would I have imagined Chu Feng to be that sort of person."

"Serves him right. Someone like him deserved to die. That is the price of his greed."

"It is truly a pity though. We have wasted our time coming here for nothing."

At that moment, apart from Chu Lingxi, who was still unconscious, everyone else started to speak ill of Chu Feng. They were, after all, people with no mind of their own, people that would go to whichever side was more advantageous.

Suddenly, a person among the crowd asked, "But... since Chu Feng has died, how are we to leave this place?"

"That's right. We only reached this place by following Chu Feng. Now that he's dead, how are we to leave?"

"That damned Chu Feng, isn't he bringing harm upon us?!"

After that person asked how they would leave, the crowd reacted as if they'd been awakened from a dream. Immediately, panic, confusion and anger emerged in the crowd. Then, they began to curse out at Chu Feng. It was as if all of the responsibility, all of the fault, lay with Chu Feng, even though they'd willingly decided to journey here.

At the moment when the crowd was panicking and at a loss as to what to do, Chu Zhiyuan seized the opportunity and stood forth. He said, "I remember the way here."

"You?" However, the crowd immediately started to question Chu Zhiyuan's claim. Not only that, but they even looked at him with contempt in their eyes.

They seemed to be looking at someone who was making a fool out of himself.

"Chu Zhiyuan, was your head beaten stupid by Chu Feng? You've actually learned how to make outrageous claims too?"

"Humph, instead of learning what's good, you only know how to learn what's bad."

Chu Haoyan and Chu Huanyu, those two geniuses of the Chu Heavenly Clan, even began to mock Chu Zhiyuan.

After Chu Haoyan and Chu Huanyu started mocking Chu Zhiyuan, many others present also seized the opportunity to mock Chu Zhiyuan too.

None of them believed in Chu Zhiyuan. They all felt that Chu Zhiyuan was nothing but a pretty boy gigolo, a piece of trash.

In the end, it was only when Chu Ruoshi stood forth for Chu Zhiyuan that the crowd stopped their ridicule.

“Do any of you know the way out of here?” Chu Ruoshi asked loudly.

The crowd went completely silent. If they knew the way to leave, they would’ve left already. There would be no reason for them to stay here.

“Since you all do not know the way out of here, then behave yourselves and follow my big brother Zhiyuan. Otherwise... do not blame us should you end up dying here.”

Chu Ruoshi unleashed her oppressive might. Her words were also very sharp. Faintly, one could even feel the coldness emitted by her from the surrounding air.

Such a Chu Ruoshi was fully deserving of being the ruler among the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations. No one dared to go against her, and no one dared to refute her. Not even Chu Haoyan and Chu Huanyu dared to do so.

“Since no one has any objections, I, Chu Zhiyuan, will show the way for my brothers and sisters. Everyone, please follow me closely. Do not fall behind,” Chu Zhiyuan said those words and then walked to the front of the crowd. He was prepared to lead the crowd out.

“Wait,” however, right at that moment, Chu Haoyan suddenly spoke. He looked to Chu Zhiyuan and asked, “Chu Zhiyuan, are you really going to guide us?”

“Yes, that’s right,” Chu Zhiyuan replied.

“In that case, don’t blame me for speaking bluntly. If you are still leading us around when the Nine Moons Sacred Domain closes, do not blame me for killing you first,” Chu Haoyan threatened with a cold tone.

“Chu Haoyan, you are truly...” Chu Ruoshi stood forth again.

However, before Chu Ruoshi could finish, Chu Zhiyuan waved his sleeve.

After waving his sleeve, the tyrannical Chu Ruoshi actually became completely obedient like a lamb and moved back.

As for Chu Zhiyuan, he had a smile on his face.

Calmly, he looked to Chu Haoyan and said, "Haoyan, if I am still unable to lead everyone out of here by the time the Nine Moons Sacred Domain closes, then even without you doing anything, I, Chu Zhiyuan, will commit suicide by cutting my own throat to apologize to everyone."

After saying those words, Chu Zhiyuan turned around and started walking. The crowd hurriedly followed after him.

Only Chu Haoyan was standing there, stunned.

He felt as if he were seeing things wrong. When Chu Zhiyuan was speaking to him, he felt his gaze to be extremely sharp. That was a gaze that he had never felt before. At the very least, it was the first time he had felt such a sharp gaze from Chu Zhiyuan.

"Humph," however, Chu Haoyan soon let out a cold snort and said with a soft voice, "After leaving this place, I will teach you a lesson."

After he finished saying those words, he also followed after Chu Zhiyuan.
nDve-Lb)In

Even though he greatly detested Chu Zhiyuan, he still wanted to leave. After all, if they did not leave the Nine Moons Sacred Domain within the time limit, the only thing waiting for them would be death.

Chapter 3014 - Forming An Abnormal Sign Through Cultivation

Although skeptical, the crowd continued to follow Chu Zhiyuan for the sake of an opportunity to live.

As for Chu Feng, they had completely forgotten about him. Not only did they believe that he had died, but they also felt that he deserved to die.

However, they had no idea that while they were leaving the cave empty-handed, while they were preparing to leave the Nine Moons Sacred Domain, Chu Feng was training at the bottom of the Infernal Lake inside the cave.

Chu Feng was currently sitting cross-legged in the Infernal Lake's Infernal Spring, training wholeheartedly.

He was enjoying the greatest treasure in the Nine Moons Sacred Domain's Yin Yang Gate all by himself.

As for Chu Youyuan, he was standing outside the Infernal Spring with his hands behind his back.

Although Chu Youyuan was standing in the Infernal Lake, he was unaffected by its frightening lake water.

The reason for that was because lightning had surrounded Chu Youyuan's body. It was protecting him from the lake water.

It turned out that it was not only Chu Feng who was capable of emitting lightning to protect himself, Chu Youyuan was also capable of it.

It seemed that those possessing Heavenly Lightning Bloodlines were all capable of it.

Although he was outside of the Infernal Spring, Chu Youyuan was staring at the spring the entire time.

The reason for that was because the spring water now was already different from before.

The spring water was no longer as tranquil as before; it was actually boiling over, just like the water of the Infernal Lake.

The change to the Infernal Spring occurred not long after Chu Feng entered it to train.

Furthermore, the longer Chu Feng stayed inside, the more obvious the change to the Infernal Spring became.

Chu Youyuan determined that all of this was related to Chu Feng.

“Clamor~~~”

Suddenly, the surging spring water turned into an enormous vortex. With Chu Feng at the center, the vortex started to spin. It was extremely imposing, extremely spectacular.

Most importantly, natural energies visible to the naked eye were flowing into Chu Feng's body unceasingly. n))OvelBIn

“Wuu~~~”

With the situation being like that, even the sleeping Infernal Ghost was roused.

However, after the Infernal Ghost woke up, he did not make a ruckus like before. Instead, he started to blink his large crimson eyes and began to attentively watch the scene before him. Even the Infernal Ghost’s attention was captured by the scene before him.

“He actually brought forth such an abnormal sign through training in the Infernal Spring?” Chu Youyuan revealed a pleasantly surprised expression. He was only able to calm himself after a long while passed.

With admiration, he gasped, “Chu Feng, this old man is truly looking forward to what sort of harvest you’ll be able to obtain from this training.”

Meanwhile, Chu Zhiyuan and the other people of the younger generation were all hastening along their journey.

At the beginning, the crowd were very skeptical of Chu Zhiyuan. However, as they continued to travel, the crowd noticed the same scenery that they’d witnessed on their way in. Thus, they became increasingly more confident in Chu Zhiyuan.

As for Chu Zhiyuan, he possessed a complete map of the route. Thus, he would naturally not fail in guiding the crowd. Thus, in the end, he naturally brought the crowd back to the Yin Yang Gate’s entrance successfully.

At that moment, the people of the younger generation that did not know the truth started to burst into excitement.

They began to praise and thank Chu Zhiyuan nonstop.

Their reactions were understandable too. After all, Chu Zhiyuan had done the equivalent of saving their lives by bringing them .

After that, they walked out of the Yin Yang Gate and left the Nine Moons Sacred Domain.

When they walked out, the elders guarding the entrance hurriedly rushed toward them.

“What is with you all? What happened?”

The elders guarding the entrance were extremely nervous. Not only were the two younger generations whose bodies were seized by the two Utmost Exalted Elders seriously injured and on the brink of death, but even Chu Ruoshi, Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Lingxi were seriously injured.

They were all people of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations that could not be allowed to suffer any mishaps.

This was especially true for Chu Lingxi; she was actually unconscious at that moment. With this, how could the elders not worry?

“Wuu~~~”

Right at that moment, a soft groan was heard. Then, Chu Lingxi, who had been unconscious for a long time, actually regained consciousness.

“Wha... what happened to me?”

“Who attacked me?”

Chu Lingxi massaged her aching head. She felt the pain to her soul. Confused as to what had happened, she became extremely angry.

“Lingxi, someone attacked you?” The elders asked nervously.

Chu Lingxi was the most important young miss of their Chu Heavenly Clan. Even they did not dare to neglect her.

“I suddenly felt a massive pain in my head for no reason. Then, I fainted. If I wasn’t sneak attacked, what else could it be?” Chu Lingxi said in a very angry manner.

“Who is it? Who attacked you?” The elders asked.

“I’ve said that I’ve been sneak attacked. If I knew who attacked me, would I call it a sneak attack?” Chu Lingxi grew even more furious. Even when faced with those elders, her attitude was still very rude and unreasonable. It would appear that suddenly losing consciousness and then waking up to finding herself seriously injured had truly angered the young miss.

Right at that moment, Chu Zhiyuan suddenly said, “It was Chu Feng.”

“Chu Feng?” The elders were very surprised. Then, they all asked, “You said it was Chu Feng who sneak attacked Lingxi?”

“That’s right, it was Chu Feng,” Chu Zhiyuan said.

“You’re bullshitting me! How could Chu Feng attack me?!” Chu Lingxi felt extremely unhappy upon hearing those words. She pointed at Chu Zhiyuan and cursed loudly at him.

“Where’s Chu Feng? Where’s Chu Feng? Where did Chu Feng go?”

“Didn’t you all enter together? Why would you all be here with Chu Feng nowhere to be seen? Where did you all hide Chu Feng?” Upon discovering that Chu Feng was not present, Chu Lingxi grew even more emotional.

Right at this moment, Chu Ruoshi explained, “Lingxi, whilst it is true that Chu Feng would not be able to injure you, the Yin Yang Fate Pearl was capable of injuring you. It was the Yin Yang Fate Pearl that caused you to lose consciousness and become seriously injured. No one sneak attacked you.”

“The Yin Yang Fate Pearl?” Chu Lingxi was startled upon hearing those words. Then, the anger on her face turned into great concern.

“Why would my Yin Yang Fate Pearl harm me? Where is Chu Feng? Where did Chu Feng go? What did you all do to him?” Chu Lingxi asked. She subconsciously felt that something had happened to Chu Feng, and that what had happened to Chu Feng was most definitely related to Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi.

“Ruoshi, exactly what is happening?” At that moment, the confused elders were unable to keep themselves from asking about what happened.

“Lord Elders, it is better that I explain to you all what happened,” Chu Zhiyuan spoke again.

Once Chu Zhiyuan spoke, the elders started to frown. Even though Chu Zhiyuan was the grandson of an Utmost Exalted Elder, not even those elders liked Chu Zhiyuan because of how much of a disappointment he was.

Thus, they had wanted Chu Ruoshi to explain what had happened. However, as what had happened was of great concern to them, and they wanted to

know the truth, they did not demand too much, and decided to allow Chu Zhiyuan to explain.

Afterwards, Chu Zhiyuan began to inform the elders about the event of Chu Feng leading them to find the treasures, as well as the lie that they'd prepared.

"That's impossible! It's impossible for Chu Feng to do that sort of thing! You all are most definitely plotting against Chu Feng! You all have most definitely done something to Chu Feng, and are planning to frame him!" After hearing what Chu Zhiyuan said, Chu Lingxi exploded with anger.

Chapter 3015 - Requesting The Clan Chief Come Out Of Training

"Little sister Lingxi, this is most definitely not my personal claim. Ruoshi and these two brothers are also capable of testifying for me. Our injuries are also capable of testifying for us," Chu Zhiyuan explained.

"Impossible, it's impossible for Chu Feng to do that sort of thing. You all are wrongly accusing him. You are jointly maligning him!" Chu Lingxi shouted frantically. Absolute anger was present in her voice.

She simply did not believe that Chu Feng would do such a thing. Instead, she was determined that it was Chu Zhiyuan and the others that were wrongly accusing Chu Feng.

"The truth is before your eyes, yet you still insist on denying it. Lingxi, are you simply causing trouble and being completely unreasonable," Chu Ruoshi lashed out at Chu Lingxi.

"The truth? Now that Chu Feng is not here, the four of you can say whatever you want. Is this what is meant by truth?" Chu Lingxi sneered. She simply did not believe in the words of Chu Ruoshi and the others.

"Regardless of whether or not you believe us, it is the truth," Chu Ruoshi said.

"Based on your characters, how could I trust you all?" Chu Lingxi sneered repeatedly.

Chu Ruoshi was not to be outdone either. She and Chu Lingxi began to argue with one another.

"Cough, cough, cough, cough..."

Suddenly, the two people of the younger generations whose bodies were seized by the two Utmost Exalted Elders started vomiting mouthfuls of blood.

Then, the two of them both looked to Chu Lingxi. They said, "Chu Lingxi, we know that even though we are of the same clan, we are inferior to even dogs and pigs in your eyes. As for our lives and deaths, you simply gave no concern for them either."

"However, the words of a man on his deathbed always comes from the heart. Our injuries are caused by Chu Feng. Our deaths are also caused by Chu Feng. There is no reason for us to lie about this matter."

After they finished saying those words, the two of them looked to everyone present. They said, "Lord Elders, brothers and sisters, although Chu Feng has suffered the consequences of his actions and lost his life in the Nine Moons Sacred Domain, we have yet to avenge our grievances."

"We must let everyone know exactly what sort of person Chu Feng was. We must let everyone know how despicable, shameless and selfish he was."

"Lord Elders, brothers and sisters, cough cough..."

"...you all must definitely uphold justice for us."

"Cough cough... ah... cough cough..."

After saying those words, the two of them started to cough violently and vomit blood nonstop. Not long afterward, their bodies turned stiff, and they lost all signs of life.

They had died. Actually, the two of them had long since died. The ones speaking the entire time were Chu Haoyan's grandfather and Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather, the two Utmost Exalted Elders.

After they finished saying those words, the two of them used special means to secretly leave the bodies of the two young men. After they left their bodies, the two men from the younger generation became completely dead.

"Chu Lingxi, did you see that?"

"The two of them are our relatives. They have died miserably by that Chu Feng's hands. Yet you still want to refute our claims against Chu Feng? Do you even have any conscience at all? Are you a clansman of our Chu Heavenly Clan?" Chu Ruoshi lashed out at Chu Lingxi while pointing at her.

"Lingxi, don't blame big brother for criticizing you, but you are truly bewitched by that Chu Feng. You are no longer capable of distinguishing black from white, right from wrong," Chu Zhiyuan said.

This bastard couple echoed one another. One played the good cop, and the other played the bad cop as the two of them jointly refuted Chu Lingxi.

With the situation being like that, many of the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations started feeling enormous grievance.

They had all considered the words of those two dead young men to be true. They all felt that there was no benefit for two people on their deathbed to lie for Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi.

Thus, they all felt what the two of them said to be the truth, that Chu Feng's true character was like how they'd described it.

This was especially true after those two people of the younger generation died. Their deaths triggered the crowd's hatred toward Chu Feng.

However, even now, Chu Lingxi was arguing for Chu Feng. Even though her own clansmen had died, there was no change to her expression at all. Naturally, the crowd would feel very displeased.

At that moment, the gazes with which the crowd looked to Chu Lingxi all changed. Deep resentment and grudge filled their eyes.

"Humph," faced with the crowd's resentment and grudge-filled eyes, Chu Lingxi felt them to be beneath contempt. It was as if she did not care about their opinions at all.

"I do not care what the four of you say, I will still not believe it. I only believe in what Chu Feng says."

"I will go and find Chu Feng right now. If he's alive, I need to see him. If he's dead, I need to see his corpse. I will definitely not allow you all to continue to

tarnish him like this," after saying those words, Chu Lingxi really started rushing toward the Nine Moons Sacred Domain.

"Lingxi, don't act out on impulse," seeing this, the Chu Heavenly Clan's elders were greatly alarmed. They immediately stopped her.

"Release me! Release me! I am going back to find Chu Feng!" Chu Lingxi shouted and screamed in an almost frantic manner.

However, even with that being the case, the Chu Heavenly Clan's elders were still holding Chu Lingxi tightly and refusing to allow her to approach the Nine Moons Sacred Domain.

The time limit for the Nine Moons Sacred Domain was about to arrive. To enter it at such a time would simply be seeking one's death.

As Chu Lingxi continued to scream and curse frantically, the time limit for the Nine Moons Sacred Domain's disappearance started to approach.

During that period of time, the Chu Heavenly Clansmen that had entered the Nine Moons Sacred Domain to train began to come out in succession.

Those among them that wanted to know how it was for the people of the younger generation immediately arrived at the entrance of the Yin Yang Gate. Chu Xuanzhengfa was among them.

"You all said that Chu Feng wanted to hog the treasures for himself, and ended up being devoured by the treasures, losing his life in the Yin Yang Gate?"

"Impossible, that is absolutely impossible. Chu Zhiyuan, provide with me a proper and truthful explanation as to exactly what happened in there!" Upon finding out what happened, Chu Xuanzhengfa's expression changed greatly. Compared to Chu Lingxi, Chu Xuanzhengfa's reaction was even more emotional. He grabbed Chu Zhiyuan's lapel and lifted him up.

"Tell me, exactly what happened?! If you dare to utter the slightest lie, I will cripple you!" Chu Xuanzhengfa spoke with a threatening tone.

"Chu Xuanzhengfa, what are you doing?!" Right at that moment, two figures suddenly descended from the sky. They were Chu Haoyan's grandfather and Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather.

After leaving the two younger generation's bodies, the two of them immediately restored their own bodies and returned to the Yin Yang Gate's entrance.

The reason for that was because the two of them knew very well that Chu Xuanzhengfa, based on his personality, would definitely not believe Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi's claims. They knew that he would definitely make things difficult for them.

As for the two of them, they would naturally not allow such a thing to happen.

Upon arriving at this place, the two of them pretended to not know what had happened, and began to inquire of the crowd. Upon finding out what had happened from the crowd, the two of them immediately started to reprimand Chu Xuanzhengfa.

"Chu Xuanzhengfa, have you gone insane?"

"For the sake of his own benefits, that Chu Feng went so far as to kill his fellow clansmen. His crimes are simply unforgivable. His death is well-deserved."

"Yet you're actually shielding a person like that? Could it be that you're planning to betray our clan?" Chu Haoyan's grandfather said to Chu Xuanzhengfa.

"Betray our clan? What an enormous label you're putting on me."

"However, I know what sort of person Chu Feng is. He definitely would not do something like that. Unless I am to witness it myself, I will refuse to believe anyone regardless of what they say," Chu Xuanzhengfa declared.

"The evidence is before your eyes; you have no choice but to believe it," Chu Haoyan's grandfather said.

Right at this moment, Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather said, "Enough, there's no need to continue arguing. No matter how much you argue, it will not solve this matter. The way I see it, it is better that we request that Lord Clan Chief come out of his closed-door training and pass judgement on this matter."

Chapter 3016 - Trust Chu Zhiyuan

"Very well, since that's your intention, we shall do as you propose, and have Lord Clan Chief judge this matter."

"That said, do not blame me for speaking bluntly. If Lord Clan Chief is to find this matter fishy, I will definitely arrest Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi. I will personally interrogate them using the methods of our Law Enforcement Hall, and make them tell the truth," Chu Xuanzhengfa spoke with a very serious tone. Deep anger was present in his words.

After hearing what Chu Xuanzhengfa said, Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi's expressions changed. Fear emerged in their eyes.

They knew about the methods of the Law Enforcement Hall. If they were to truly end up in the Law Enforcement Hall's hands, if the Law Enforcement Hall was to extort a confession out of them using these methods, they would truly not be able to endure it.

"Milords, what we've said is the truth. Please, you all must uphold justice for us," Chu Ruoshi hurriedly arrived before the two Utmost Exalted Elders. She wanted them to back her and Chu Zhiyuan up.

"Ruoshi, rest assured, Lord Clan Chief will justify you all. He will definitely not wrong the two of you," Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather said.

Then, the two Utmost Exalted Elders and Chu Xuanzhengfa brought Chu Zhiyuan, Chu Ruoshi and Chu Lingxi, those three members of the younger generation, with them, and began to proceed toward the deepest part of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

That place was a wondrous land.

Mountains rose from the ground like swords piercing the clouds and reaching the horizon.

On the mountains were waterfalls. The waterfalls looked like white dragons descending straight toward the earth.

Groups of cranes flickered with silver brilliance as they danced in the sky.

Occasionally, soul-pleasing and heart-easing birdsong could be heard. It was as if that place was a land of immortals.

Indeed, it resembled a land of immortals. After all, even the natural energies there were exceptionally strong.

Because of that, that place possessed a name related to the land of immortals. It was called the Chu Wonderland.

That place was where the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief and Utmost Exalted Elders would enter closed-door training.

Being able to train there was not only a question of one's cultivation, it was also a signifier of one's status. Without sufficient status, one would not be allowed to train there.

Located in the depths of the Chu Wonderland was a tall mountain. On the peak of that mountain was an ancient pagoda. That was the place where the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief would undergo closed-door training.

Two old men were currently sitting cross-legged before the ancient pagoda.

Of those two old men, one was fat, and the other was skinny. One had a white gown, and the other had a black gown. Those were their greatest distinguishing characteristics. Apart from that, the two old men appeared very ordinary.

When the two Utmost Exalted Elders and Chu Xuanzhengfa approached, the two old men suddenly opened their eyes, revealing sharp gazes.

At that moment, even the heaven and earth trembled. The surrounding natural energies started to react to the two old men.

Merely their gazes managed to affect the natural energies in the area.

Those two old men were actually both rank two Exalted.

That said, even though the two of them possessed such strength, they were not the Chu Heavenly Clan's Utmost Exalted Elders. In fact, the two of them were simply not people of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

With their status, they should not appear in such a sacred place. The reason why they were able to be there was because the two of them were people that the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief trusted greatly.

The two of them were the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's bodyguards.

"The Clan Chief is in closed-door training. Others are not allowed to approach," before Chu Xuanzhengfa and the others reached them, the two old men sent out a voice transmission.

As the voice transmission entered Chu Xuanzhengfa and the others' ears, it actually seemed to possess a slightly threatening implication.

Upon hearing the voice transmission, the two Utmost Exalted Elders and Chu Xuanzhengfa immediately stopped, and did not fly up to the mountain peak.

At that moment, the two Utmost Exalted Elders and Chu Xuanzhengfa spoke at practically the same time, "Milords, we have an important matter, and wish to request Lord Clan Chief's attendance. Milords, would you please inform Lord Clan Chief for us?"

Although those two old men were not members of the Chu Heavenly Clan, the two Utmost Exalted Elders still had to greet them respectfully, and address them as lords.

They were giving enormous face to the two old men.

However, even with that being the case, those two old men seemed to have no intention of appreciating the face they were being given. **noVE/1B/1n**

Instead, they replied coldly, "The deadline for the Clan Chief's closed-door training has yet to arrive. Unless a major calamity is to happen to the Chu Heavenly Clan, no other matter is significant enough to disturb the Clan Chief. If there's something that you need, go and seek out Chu Hanpeng."

Hearing those words, the two Utmost Exalted Elders revealed displeased expressions.

No matter what, the two of them were Utmost Exalted Elders of the Chu Heavenly Clan. Nominally, they were people that held the greatest authority in the Chu Heavenly Clan, apart from their Clan Chief.

However, they ended up being berated in such a manner by two outsiders. It would only be natural for them to feel very displeased.

That said, even though they were feeling very displeased, they did not attempt to argue. Instead, they turned around to find Chu Hanpeng, who had just entered closed-door training.

As for Chu Xuanzhengfa, he was also powerless. They all knew the temperament of those two old men. Since they declared that they would not notify their Clan Chief, it meant that they would definitely not notify him. Even if the two old men were to be killed, they would still not notify their Clan Chief about the matter. Furthermore... they were no match for those two old men.

Thus, in the end, Chu Xuanzhengfa could only follow the two Utmost Exalted Elders to seek out Chu Hanpeng, who had just entered closed-door training.

Seeking out Chu Hanpeng was a smooth journey. However, when Chu Hanpeng found out about the matter regarding Chu Feng, he started to contemplate.

Chu Hanpeng contemplated for a very long time before finally slowly saying, "Although this old man feels very regretful for what happened to Chu Feng, Chu Feng remains an exiled child. If I am to choose, this old man is more willing to believe Ruoshi and Zhiyuan."

"Lord Hanpeng, this is not impartial. You must not affect your judgement just because Chu Feng has just returned to the clan," Chu Xuanzhengfa was extremely unwilling to accept it.

"Not impartial? What's not impartial about it? The way I see it, the only one that's incapable of making a proper judgement is you, Chu Xuanzhengfa. That Chu Feng has been in exile his entire life. He did not grow up in the clan, whereas Ruoshi and Zhiyuan are our Chu Heavenly Clan's actual clansmen."

"Yet, you would rather choose to believe an exiled child than your own clansmen. Chu Xuanzhengfa, are you worthy of being a clansman of our Chu Heavenly Clan? Are you worthy of being the Law Enforcement Hall's Vice Hall Master? Are you worthy of being their senior?" Chu Haoyan's grandfather pointed to Chu Ruoshi and Chu Zhiyuan as he lashed out at Chu Xuanzhengfa.

"Enough. The evidence is conclusive. There is no need to dispute this matter anymore. All of you, return first." Chu Hanpeng waved his hand at the two Utmost Exalted Elders. However, he did not wave his hand at Chu Xuanzhengfa.

Seeing this, the two Utmost Exalted Elders were surprised. They both realized that Chu Hanpeng was planning to tell Chu Xuanzhengfa something.

Although they were feeling worried, they had no choice but to respectfully bow and then leave the palace hall together with Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi, since Chu Hanpeng possessed greater strength and status than themselves.

At that moment, only Chu Hanpeng and Chu Xuanzhengfa remained in the palace hall.

[1. Wait, where's Chu Lingxi?]

Chapter 3017 - Imminent Catastrophe

"Zhengfa, I will ask you a question. Is our Chu Heavenly Clan more important, or is the truth more important?" Chu Hanpeng asked.

"Lord Utmost Exalted Elder, why are you asking me this question?" Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

"Zhengfa, you are a smart individual. I believe you should know why I made my decision."

"Even if it's Lord Clan Chief, he will definitely make the same sort of decision I have."

"Chu Feng has already died. Regardless of how he has died, what's important is that he is dead. As such, he will no longer be able to contribute to our clan. However, it is different for Chu Ruoshi and Chu Zhiyuan," Chu Hanpeng said.

"Even if that is the case, we should at least provide justice for Chu Feng. Milord, I believe that you are also capable of realizing that this matter is fishy," Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

"Justice? What use is justice? Is it capable of preserving our Chu Heavenly Clan's continued prosperity?"

"While justice is not capable of that, excellent successors will be. Both Chu Ruoshi and Chu Zhiyuan are our Chu Heavenly Clan's excellent successors. What we need to do is to protect them, and not to harm them," Chu Hanpeng said.

"But..." Chu Xuanzhengfa still wanted to argue.

"There's no but."

"Ever since Chu Xuanyuan offended the people from the Starfield Master Realm, the Starfield Master Realm has always had the intention of suppressing our Chu Heavenly Clan. As for the other Heavenly Clans, they have never given up on our position as the overlord of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm."

"Right now, as we are still alive, they do not dare to act rashly. However, if our clan is to have no qualified successors, do you know what will happen?"

"Not to mention that we will not be able to safeguard our status as the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm's overlord, our Chu Heavenly Clan might even be faced with a catastrophe capable of exterminating our entire clan."

"For the sake of ensuring the continued prosperity of our clan, we must nurture outstanding successors. Before that, justice and fairness are all meaningless."

"Only through having qualified successors will our clan be able to continue to exist. If our clan is unable to continue to exist, what use is there in having justice?" Chu Hanpeng asked.

At that moment, Chu Xuanzhengfa lowered his head and became quiet.

He was feeling extremely unreconciled. He felt deep regret for Chu Feng, and deeply wanted to obtain justice for him.

However, he also knew the situation their Chu Heavenly Clan was in at present.

Whilst their Chu Heavenly Clan was still the fully-deserving overlord of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, a storm was gathering in the shadows.

Their Chu Heavenly Clan had made countless enemies in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm. Many among them were no weaker than their Chu Heavenly Clan. All of those people wanted to seize their Chu Heavenly Clan's title as the overlord of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

It was as Chu Hanpeng had said, with their Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, Chu Hanpeng, and the others present, those people would not dare to act rashly against their Chu Heavenly Clan. However, time was a heartless thing.

Their Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, Chu Hanpeng, and the others were already very old.

One day, they would die of old age. At that time, who would prop up their Chu Heavenly Clan? Who would stand against their enemies?"

Chu Xuanzhengfa and the others?

No, they would not be enough. After all, even the people from Chu Xuanzhengfa's generation would one day grow old. Thus, it was as Chu Hanpeng had declared; if they wanted their Chu Heavenly Clan to continue to prosper, if they wanted their Chu Heavenly Clan to continue to exist, they had to continue to nurture outstanding successors.

As for Chu Ruoshi, Chu Zhiyuan, Chu Haoyan and Chu Huanyu, they were people of the younger generation that their Chu Heavenly Clan must nurture.

"Zhengfa, as a member of the Chu Heavenly Clan, as the Law Enforcement Hall's Vice Hall Master, you should even more so protect these future hopes of our Chu Heavenly Clan. Thus, do not mention the matter regarding Chu Feng anymore," Chu Hanpeng said. *nove/Lb*(In

"But, if Chu Xuanyuan is to find out that his son died in our Chu Heavenly Clan, would he be willing to leave the matter at that?" Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

Hearing those words, Chu Hanpeng grew quiet. After a short while, he said, "I believe that he would also place an even greater importance on our clan's safety. Otherwise, he would not have cooperated with our clan and accepted the punishment of being exiled to the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm."

Chu Hanpeng seemed to also know very well that their Chu Heavenly Clan was not strong enough to contend against Chu Xuanyuan, that it was Chu Xuanyuan who had willingly accepted the punishment back then because he did not want their Chu Heavenly Clan to be placed in a difficult position by the Starfield Master Realm.

"But, Chu Feng is his son. Furthermore, Chu Feng should be his only son."

"Back then, he was willing to slaughter the people from the Starfield Master Realm for Chu Feng. It is obvious how important Chu Feng is to him," Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“He ignored Chu Feng and made him train alone. I believe he has been prepared for the fact that his son might perish outside. Thus, Chu Feng’s death cannot be blamed on anyone,” Chu Hanpeng said.

“But what if Chu Xuanyuan is to investigate into Chu Feng’s death?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

“If Chu Xuanyuan wants to investigate Chu Feng’s death, who could possibly stop him? The criminal in his death will have to suffer the consequences,” after saying those words, Chu Hanpeng sighed.

After hearing those words, Chu Xuanzhengfa said no more. He knew that if Chu Xuanyuan wanted to investigate Chu Feng’s death, no one would be able to protect Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi, including the culprit that had helped them behind the scenes.

That’s right, Chu Xuanzhengfa firmly believed that someone had helped Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi from the shadows. Although he had no idea how they’d done it, he knew that Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi, with their current strength, would not be able to defeat Chu Feng.

However, even though this was the case, Chu Xuanzhengfa still felt very ashamed at being unable to obtain justice for Chu Feng.

Alas, Chu Hanpeng had already made himself very clear. Thus, Chu Xuanzhengfa had nothing more to say. After all, what Chu Hanpeng had said was very reasonable. As a clansman of the Chu Heavenly Clan, he must indeed consider things properly for the sake of their Chu Heavenly Clan.

The Chu Heavenly Clan had never been a truly united clan. Internal struggles had always existed. If one must put a party to death due to their grievances and grudges, then their Chu Heavenly Clan’s strength would likely suffer greatly.

After this, Chu Xuanzhengfa left the palace. He discovered that the two Utmost Exalted Elders, Chu Ruoshi, Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Lingxi were all standing outside the entrance, and had not left.

“How was it, Zhengfa? You tried to persuade Lord Hanpeng for so long, did you manage to make him change his heart?” Chu Haoyan’s grandfather spoke with a mocking tone.

He firmly believed that Chu Hanpeng would not change his decision, that Chu Xuanzhengfa would have no choice but to resign himself to fate.

After all, regardless of whether it might be his strength or status, Chu Xuanzhengfa did not possess the capability to contend against the two of them.

“Humph, did you all really think that you’d gotten away with it?” Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

“What do you mean?” Chu Haoyan’s grandfather asked.

“You all have caused the death of Chu Xuanyuan’s son. The way I see it, you all are facing an imminent catastrophe,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

Chapter 3018 - Sky-covering Divine Lightning

“Humph,” hearing those words, Chu Haoyan’s grandfather immediately revealed a displeased expression. After letting out his cold snort, he seemed to want to say something.

However, before Chu Haoyan’s grandfather could say anything, Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather said, “Imminent catastrophe? The one who has done all the evils was Chu Feng. Zhiyuan and Ruoshi are the victims here. We are already extremely benevolent and virtuous to not seek Chu Xuanyuan for justice. Yet, you’re saying that Chu Xuanyuan will come cause trouble for us? Forgive me for speaking bluntly, but if he really wants to seek trouble, this old man will keep him company.”

“Very well, you’re the one who said those words. I hope that you will still continue to act unyieldingly when Chu Xuanyuan returns,” Chu Xuanzhengfa sneered. Then, he waved his sleeve and said, “Lingxi, let’s go.”

After he finished saying those words, Chu Xuanzhengfa soared into the sky and left together with Chu Lingxi.

En route, Chu Lingxi started to ask Chu Xuanzhengfa in an unreconciled manner, “Lord Father, did Lord Hanpeng really believe in Chu Zhiyuan and the others?”

“Does Lord Hanpeng not know what sort of people Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi are?”

"I am also feeling very unreconciled to not be able to obtain justice for Chu Feng. However, without any proof, I am truly powerless to prove that it was Zhiyuan and Ruoshi that harmed Chu Feng."

"If I insist on clinging to the matter, they would instead be able to fault me for not being impartial," Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

"But, are we really going to let Chu Feng die in vain like this? Are we really going to let him shoulder accusations that do not belong to him on top of that?" Chu Lingxi asked.

Suddenly, Chu Xuanzhengfa asked Chu Lingxi with a smile on his face, "Foolish girl, did you really think that Chu Feng died?"

"Father, could it be that you're thinking that Chu Feng didn't die?" Chu Lingxi suddenly revealed a joyous expression.

"Chu Feng simply resembles his father too much. As for his father, he entered multiple dangerous grounds that were said to be certain death. Yet, in the end, he returned from all those places unscathed."

"People like them possess enormous luck. They would not be killed so easily," Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

"Lord Father, you mean to say that Chu Feng is still inside the Nine Moons Sacred Domain and not dead?"

"But... the Nine Moons Sacred Domain has already closed. Being trapped in there, he will undoubtedly die," Chu Lingxi said.

"Actually, I'm also uncertain as to whether or not Chu Feng is still alive. However, as matters stand, we're powerless to do anything. Rather than worrying, it's better that we entrust our hopes to Chu Feng," Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

"Entrust our hopes to Chu Feng? How are we to do that?" Chu Lingxi asked in a very puzzled manner.

"Let us hope that Chu Feng will be able to bring forth a miracle once more, and walk out of the Nine Moons Sacred Domain that no one could return from alive after it closes," Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

Hearing those words, Chu Lingxi became even more worried.

To hope for a miracle, this meant that if the miracle didn't happen, Chu Feng would really be dead.

However, if Chu Feng were to really die like that, his death would be too much of an injustice.

"Lord Vice Hall Master."

Right at that moment, a figure flew over rapidly. That person was a member of the Law Enforcement Hall.

"What is it?" Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

"It's the Nine Moons Sacred Domain. An abnormal sign has appeared in the sky above the Nine Moons Sacred Domain," That person said.

"Abnormal sign? What sort of abnormal sign?" Chu Xuanzhengfa asked.

"Lightning has filled the sky above the Nine Moons Sacred Domain. It is like a descent of divine lightning," that person said.

"Chu Feng! Father, it's Chu Feng!" Chu Lingxi looked to Chu Xuanzhengfa with a joyous expression on her face.

Chu Xuanzhengfa also revealed a joyous expression. Then, without demur, Chu Xuanzhengfa brought Chu Lingxi with him and began to rapidly proceed toward the direction of the Nine Moons Sacred Domain.

Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather and Chu Haoyan's grandfather should have obtained this information too. The two of them arrived at the Nine Moons Sacred Domain before Chu Xuanzhengfa did.

The Nine Moons Sacred Domain had disappeared. The vast palace from before had returned to being a vast and boundless prairie. However, the sky above the boundless prairie was in complete unrest.

Lightning was moving about high up in the sky. They were like furious dragons that would soon descend from the sky to subdue monsters and extinguish evil.

"Father, it really is Chu Feng, it really is Chu Feng. This abnormal sign is the same as the time he made his breakthrough back then."

“No, it’s slightly different. It is even stronger than before. The lightning seems to be even stronger this time.”

“This means that Chu Feng is making his breakthrough. Chu Feng is really still alive. He is still inside the Nine Moons Sacred Domain. Furthermore, he has obtained an opportunity that has allowed him to make a breakthrough,” Chu Lingxi was overjoyed. She was hopping in joy. Rarely did this young miss ever show such a side.

The reason why she was acting like that was because the lightning in the sky was very familiar to her. That was lightning that they’d never seen before Chu Feng. That was the tribulation lightning caused by his Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique.

While Chu Lingxi was feeling joyous, Chu Zhiyuan was frowning. He was panicking. Unable to contain himself, he looked to his grandfather.

“Grandfather,” Chu Zhiyuan quietly called.

“Zhiyuan, calm yourself,” Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather ordered through a voice transmission.

“But, this abnormal sign is too much like the one Chu Feng caused that day. That is simply the abnormal sign from Chu Feng making a breakthrough,” Chu Zhiyuan said through a voice transmission. He was truly panicking. Even though he was sending a voice transmission, his panic was present in his trembling voice.

“It is most likely him. What is going on with that brat, how could he still be alive after falling into that lake?” Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather also knew that the lightning was most likely caused by Chu Feng.

However, he was unable to understand how Chu Feng could still be alive after falling into the fiery lake. After all, he knew very well how frightening that lake’s waters were.

Not to mention Chu Feng, even a rank two Exalted expert like Chu Youyuan would undoubtedly be killed upon falling into that lake.

Furthermore, they were really unable to sense Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan’s auras after they fell into the lake. The two of them should be dead.

“Grandfather, what do we do? If they’re still alive, won’t our affair be exposed?”

“Lord Youyuan is someone Lord Clan Chief holds in high regard. Lord Clan Chief will definitely believe his words,” Chu Zhiyuan said.

“I said calm yourself. Not to mention that Chu Feng will not be able to come out, even if he did, he would have no means to prove that you and Ruoshi are lying,” Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather said.

Seeing the confident expression on his grandfather’s face, Chu Zhiyuan’s panicky heart eased greatly.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, the Divine Tribulation’s lightning in the sky suddenly struck down. It struck directly onto the location of the Nine Moons Sacred Domain.

After the lightning struck, it immediately disappeared. Not a single person was injured.

However, the people knew that the Divine Tribulation’s lightning had entered the ground. This meant that... Chu Feng was truly still alive.

Chapter 3019 - Spatial Crack

“He’s actually really alive. Exactly what is happening?” Even though Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather appeared to be very calm, he also felt apprehensive.

It remained that Chu Youyuan was not an ordinary Chu Heavenly Clansman. He was the only person tasked with guarding the Nine Moons Sacred Domain.

No one knew the secrets of the Nine Moons Sacred Domain better than him.

Because of that, Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather was actually also very worried that Chu Youyuan would have a way to escape from the Nine Moons Sacred Domain. Should that happen, they would end up confronting one another, and be forced into a passive state.

Even if the culprits ultimately ended up being indistinguishable, and the issue concluded abruptly, the fact that the demon-level genius Chu Feng was still alive would be extremely detrimental to his grandson.

Furthermore, should Chu Feng hold a grudge, it would not only be his grandson that would suffer, even he himself would suffer once Chu Feng matured.

With the situation being like that, Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather could only pray in his heart. He prayed that Chu Youyuan did not know how to escape from the Nine Moons Sacred Domain. He prayed for Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan to die in the Nine Moons Sacred Domain.

“Rumble~~~”

However, right at that moment, lightning once again appeared in the sky above the Nine Moons Sacred Domain. Furthermore, the lightning this time around was even stronger than the previous one.

“You're kidding... could this be... a continuous breakthrough?!”

“Chu Feng is making continuous breakthroughs?!”

The crowd present were endlessly astonished. The powerful Divine Tribulation lightning had appeared once again. This could only mean one thing -- Chu Feng had withstood the Divine Tribulation lightning from before, and successfully made a breakthrough in his cultivation.

At that moment, the Divine Tribulation lightning in the sky was caused by Chu Feng's second breakthrough attempt.

Sure enough, the lightning in the sky soon gathered and struck straight down. Once again, it disappeared the instant it touched the ground.

However, after a short moment, thunder once again started sounding. Dazzling light once again illuminated the earth.

Lightning once again filled the sky. The lightning this time around was even more imposing than the last.

“Another breakthrough?!”

The crowd were completely stunned. They had witnessed two consecutive breakthroughs before, but three consecutive breakthroughs was simply too rare.

Fortunately, after the third gathering of lightning struck down, the sky finally calmed down.

After the sky calmed down, the prairie also became serene again.

“Three successive breakthroughs, even if they’re all a success, the current Chu Feng should only be a rank nine True Immortal.”

“Thus, Zhiyuan, you do not need to panic. Even if that Chu Feng is able to escape from the Nine Moons Sacred Domain alive, he will only be a rank nine True Immortal. It is impossible for him to defeat you, who will become a Heavenly Immortal,” Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather said to Chu Zhiyuan.

“Mn,” Chu Zhiyuan nodded firmly.

Chu Zhiyuan was actually very worried that Chu Feng had encountered an even greater opportunity than him, and received even better treasures than him.

As such, he was very worried that Chu Feng would continue to make successive breakthroughs. However, after Chu Feng stopped his breakthroughs, his suspended heart also eased greatly.

Even if Chu Feng really managed to be enormously lucky and return from the Nine Moons Sacred Domain alive, he would not be able to do anything to him with the cultivation of a rank nine True Immortal.

Even if Chu Feng didn’t die, he, Chu Zhiyuan, would still shake the world in the upcoming Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition. He would seize the title of the strongest younger generation in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

That said, Chu Zhiyuan had no idea that the reason Chu Feng did not continue to make breakthroughs was not because he had not gained sufficient martial comprehension to reach the next breakthrough junction. Rather, it was because Chu Feng had encountered some issues.

Chu Feng was still in the Infernal Spring. However, Chu Feng had now stood up, and was looking around cautiously. Even Chu Youyuan was standing beside Chu Feng.

An enormous change had occurred to the Infernal Spring. The vortex formed by the spring water was now extremely powerful. It was so powerful that neither Chu Feng nor Chu Youyuan were able to get out.

In fact, even the surrounding space started to appear illusory.

“Lord Youyuan, what is happening?” Chu Feng asked.

“Look at the Infernal Ghost,” Chu Youyuan said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng turned his gaze to the Infernal Ghost.

It was only at that moment that he noticed that the Infernal Ghost was emitting a strange light from his entire body. That light was currently revolving around his body.

That light simply resembled a formation. The spinning pace and speed were simply one with the Infernal Lake.

“It’s caused by him!” Chu Feng came to a sudden realization.

“Little guy, what are you doing?!” Chu Feng asked loudly.

However, no matter how Chu Feng asked it, the Infernal Ghost did not say a word. It was as if he could not hear Chu Feng.

“Damn it, exactly what is going on with this little guy?” Chu Feng was panicky. The reason for that was because he was able to feel the power of the Infernal Spring growing stronger and stronger, more and more powerful.

“The situation seems to be bad. Chu Feng, follow me closely,” Chu Youyuan arrived before Chu Feng and grabbed Chu Feng’s wrist.

Chu Youyuan unleashed his rank two Exalted power. He wanted to stabilize himself in the vortex. nOve.1b-1n

However, as the power of the vortex increased, not even Chu Youyuan was able to stand firm. He began to spin with the vortex.

In the beginning, the spinning was very slow, but gradually, it started to go out of control.

The spinning speed became extremely fast. The power of the vortex was too strong. It was most definitely not as simple as merely spinning Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan, as even Chu Feng's awareness had turned fuzzy.

When Chu Feng's awareness returned, when he was finally no longer spinning in the vortex, Chu Feng was surprised to discover he had arrived in the starry sky.

Even in the vast starry sky, Chu Youyuan was still grabbing tightly onto his wrist. That said, the two of them did not regain their freedom. Instead, they were drifting blindly in the starry sky, following a formless power.

"Chu Feng, are you alright?" After regaining consciousness, Chu Youyuan immediately cast a concerned gaze toward Chu Feng. He was very worried about Chu Feng's safety.

"Senior, I am fine. Merely... where are we?" Chu Feng asked.

"I truly never expected that Infernal Ghost to possess such an enormous amount of power. He was actually able to rip apart space itself. Right now, we should have entered a spatial crack, and are traveling through a spatial tunnel," Chu Youyuan said.

"A spatial tunnel?" Chu Feng felt very surprised. He had no idea what a spatial tunnel was.

"A spatial tunnel is a sort of formless power. As things are now, we are unable to oppose this power, and can only drift in this void. Although we are able to clearly see the situation in our surroundings, people will not be able to see us or feel our aura if they are to pass by us," Chu Youyuan said.

"In other words, we're trapped here?" Chu Feng asked.

"That is the case," Chu Youyuan said.

"In that case, how do we escape from this place?" Chu Feng asked.

"There is nothing we can do. The only way to escape would be to encounter a spatial crack, and escape through it. There is no other alternative apart from that."

“According to legend, many powerful martial cultivators have accidentally fallen into spatial tunnels, and ended up being trapped their entire life until their death due to old age,” Chu Youyuan said.

“There’s actually such a place? We’re too unfortunate,” Chu Feng said.

“No, this is not necessarily a bad thing. No matter what, we are still alive right now. However, if we continued to stay in the Nine Moons Sacred Domain, we would undoubtedly have died,” Chu Youyuan said.

“In that case, that little guy deliberately saved us?” Chu Feng’s expression changed. He suddenly realized the disturbance caused by the Infernal Ghost was not to harm them, but rather to save them.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 3020 - Swallowing Anger - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 3020 - Swallowing Anger

Chapter 3020 - Swallowing Anger

“Although it might be unimaginable, it would appear that the Infernal Ghost really did save us,” Chu Youyuan said.

At that moment, Chu Feng started to feel very grateful. Although the situation at hand was not very optimistic, they had at least escaped a calamity.

Although the Infernal Ghost appeared to be a brat that understood nothing, he was not simple at all. At the very least, he knew that Chu Feng was in danger, and ripped open a spatial crack to allow Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan to leave the Nine Moons Sacred Domain that would soon be engulfed by danger.

“Heaven, heaven never bars one’s way. You are a person possessing great luck. I believe you will definitely encounter a spatial crack. Should that happen, it would do for us to capture that opportunity.”

“That said, you can leave the matter of the spatial crack to me. As for you, do not waste your time. Even in here, you’ll be able to make a breakthrough in your cultivation,” Chu Youyuan said.

“I can make a breakthrough in my cultivation in here? Will my Divine Tribulation lightning be able to reach this place?” Chu Feng looked into the void with a yearning expression on his face.

He had cultivated for many years, but had never made a breakthrough in the void. He actually quite wanted to experience this sensation.

“It is said that it’s possible. Earlier, you were interrupted by the formation of the Infernal Ghost. Thus, you should not have arrived at the cultivation limit that you can breakthrough to, right?” Chu Youyuan asked.

“Indeed, I have not yet reached my limit,” Chu Feng said.

“Then what are you still waiting for?” Chu Youyuan said with a smile on his face.

“Very well. This junior will continue on with his breakthrough,” Chu Feng smiled lightly, and then began to make breakthroughs again.

Not long after Chu Feng started attempting to make another breakthrough, lightning filled the space above his head.

Perhaps because he was located in the vast starry sky, the lightning that filled the sky felt extremely close. It was the first time Chu Feng was witnessing the Divine Tribulation lightning at such a close distance.

Most importantly, even though Chu Feng was clearly rapidly traveling through the spatial tunnel, the Divine Tribulation lightning remained above Chu Feng. The Divine Tribulation lightning was also moving with Chu Feng.

“Rumble~~~”

Soon, the Divine Tribulation lightning struck. Due to the fact that the lightning was very close, it arrived at Chu Feng practically instantly. The lightning actually managed to enter the spatial tunnel.

Furthermore, it began to unleash uninterrupted attacks at Chu Feng.

The Divine Tribulation lightning this time around was particularly powerful. The reason for that was because it was no longer a breakthrough in the True Immortal realm.

As long as Chu Feng succeeded, his cultivation would reach the Heavenly Immortal realm, a whole new realm of cultivation. Chu Feng would obtain the power that True Immortal-level experts would forever be unable to obtain.

Thus, even though the Divine Tribulation lightning was extremely painful, so painful that Chu Feng started gnashing his teeth, so painful that his face became twisted, Chu Feng was feeling overjoyed in his heart.

Finally, the lightning dissipated. Chu Feng had successfully endured the Divine Tribulation, and transformed his aura from that of the True Immortal realm to the Heavenly Immortal realm.

Although there was only a fine distinction between rank nine True Immortal and rank one Heavenly Immortal, Chu Feng was able to tell that his power was truly not something that True Immortals could compare against.

Even someone like Eggy with such overwhelming heaven-defying battle power, someone who was practically unmatched among True Immortals, Chu Feng would have absolute confidence of victory in a match against her.

Chu Feng was definitely not blindly confident. Instead, he was confident because of the power of the Heavenly Immortal realm.

That said, even though Chu Feng had reached the Heavenly Immortal realm, he still did not stop. He closed his eyes and began to attempt to make a breakthrough again.

Soon, Chu Feng brought forth the Divine Tribulation's lightning again.

Seeing this, Chu Youyuan revealed a joyous expression. He knew that Chu Feng, with his comprehension ability, would definitely obtain an enormous profit from the Infernal Spring. Otherwise, he wouldn't have caused an abnormal sign to emerge in the Infernal Spring.

Because of that, Chu Feng's cultivation would definitely not stop at rank nine True Immortal.

As for rank one Heavenly Immortal, that would definitely not be Chu Feng's destination either.

Chu Youyuan was looking forward to seeing exactly what level Chu Feng's cultivation would reach.

.....

Lightning was surging in the sky.

Unfortunately, the people of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, the Chu Heavenly Clansmen standing at the Nine Moons Sacred Domain, were unable to witness this sight.

At the location of the Nine Moons Sacred Domain, the sky and the ground were still as tranquil as ever.

However, the crowd's hearts were unable to remain calm.

"Why is there no sign of activity anymore? Why isn't Chu Feng coming out? Father, why isn't Chu Feng coming out?" After waiting for a long time and not seeing Chu Feng, Chu Lingxi became restless again.

She was practically certain that Chu Feng didn't die, and was trapped in the Nine Moons Sacred Domain.

As for Chu Xuanzhengfa, he also did not know how to answer Chu Lingxi.

Like Chu Lingxi, he too was worried for Chu Feng.

"It would appear that even the heavens do not plan to let Chu Feng get away with his crimes," right at that moment, a mocking voice was heard. It was Chu Haoyan's grandfather.

Seeing that Chu Feng was unable to escape from the Nine Moons Sacred Domain, Chu Haoyan's grandfather deliberately arrived beside Chu Xuanzhengfa to mock him.

"If the heavens have eyes, Chu Feng will definitely live," Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

"Is that so?"

"Heh..." Chu Haoyan's grandfather sneered. Then, he said, "Even if he is able to come out alive, our Chu Heavenly Clan will definitely not let him get away."

"I only fear that you will not be able to continue to smile so confidently when Chu Feng really appears before you," Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“Oh?” Hearing those words, Chu Haoyan’s grandfather revealed a strange smile. Then, using a voice transmission, he said to Chu Xuanzhengfa, “You’ve guessed right, Chu Feng’s death was indeed caused by us. He had discovered a treasure in the Yin Yang Gate. However, he was unable to obtain anything. Not only that, but he was also forced into the death lake by us.”

“However, even if you know about all this, so what? Not only is Chu Feng dead, but his reputation will also be completely ruined. He will be disdained.”

“As for you, you will not be able to change anything.”

“You...!” Hearing those words, Chu Xuanzhengfa revealed a furious expression.

He was truly unable to tolerate a Chu Heavenly Clan’s Supreme Elder actually capable of being this shameless.

“What’s this? You want to fight against this old man? You should judge your own strength first.”

“You should go and train for several thousand more years before seeking this old man out again. Of course, that’s only if this old man is still alive. Hahahaha...” Chu Haoyan’s grandfather let out an incomparably wild laugh. Even though he had already left, his laughter was still resonating.

This caused Chu Xuanzhengfa to become incomparably furious. However, he was powerless to do anything.

After all, he was no match for Chu Haoyan’s grandfather. Furthermore, being unable to find Chu Feng, he would have no evidence to prove that Chu Zhiyuan and the others had conspired against Chu Feng.

He had no choice but to swallow his anger.

At the same time, Chu Xuanzhengfa began to pray that Chu Feng would be able to return alive.

The reason for that was because only by Chu Feng returning alive would he be able to gain justice for himself.

Chapter 3021

After waiting for a long time without seeing Chu Feng, the people gathered at the Nine Moons Sacred Domain started to gradually disperse.

Apart from Chu Xuanzhengfa, Chu Lingxi and a few others, practically everyone in the Chu Heavenly Clan felt that Chu Feng was definitely going to die.

Even if he wasn't dead yet, he would die sooner or later.

After all, there had never been a single person who was able to return from the Nine Moons Sacred Domain alive after it closed.

Regardless of how heaven-defying Chu Feng might be, it would still be impossible for him to walk out of the Nine Moons Sacred Domain alive.

After all, the crowd felt that Chu Feng would've come out already if he was capable of doing so. There was no reason for him to make his breakthroughs inside the Nine Moons Sacred Domain.

The people who were feeling the most joyous upon thinking of this would be none other than Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather and Chu Haoyan's grandfather, those two Chu Heavenly Clan's Supreme Elders.

Even though Chu Feng had startled them earlier by bringing forth Divine Tribulation lightning and making successive breakthroughs, their worries started to gradually disappear after Chu Feng stopped his breakthroughs, and the region returned to normal.

They firmly believed that Chu Feng would undoubtedly die.

However, they were mistaken. Not only did Chu Feng leave the Nine Moons Sacred Domain, but his cultivation was also definitely not as simple as they thought it to be.

.....

The vast and boundless starry sky. This was a place where martial cultivators, no matter how powerful, would feel that they were tiny by comparison.

It was a true sea of stars. It was a world with borders not even martial cultivators could reach.

At that moment, Chu Feng was inside that vast starry sky. He was together with the stars.

However, Chu Feng's mood was extremely good.

He had stopped making breakthroughs. As for his cultivation, it had reached rank four Heavenly Immortal.

From rank six True Immortal to rank four Heavenly Immortal, this was an enormous distance.

It was a realm of cultivation that many people were unable to reach in their entire life. However, Chu Feng managed to make successive breakthroughs, and increased his cultivation to such a degree in a mere hour.

His cultivation speed was truly fast, even terrifyingly fast.

If the people of the Chu Heavenly Clan were to witness such fast cultivation breakthroughs, they would definitely be astonished by Chu Feng's talent once more, and feel reverence toward Chu Feng's talent.

That said, whilst rank four Heavenly Immortal was already a vast breakthrough in cultivation, it was not all the harvest that Chu Feng had obtained from the Infernal Lake.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was only a fine line away from rank five Heavenly Immortal.

Chu Feng was confident that he would soon be able to gain enough comprehension to reach the junction to rank five Heavenly Immortal, and successfully break through the barrier to become a rank five Heavenly Immortal.

In short, rank four Heavenly Immortal was not the limit for the current Chu Feng. After all, rank five Heavenly Immortal was already within his grasp.

"Chu Feng, you've actually managed to make successive breakthroughs to rank four Heavenly Immortal. It is truly worthy of celebration. Congratulations, congratulations," Chu Youyuan examined the current Chu Feng and revealed a joyous expression.

Chu Youyuan would naturally be happy. He was happy for their Chu Heavenly Clan. The reason for that was because he firmly believed that if it were others that entered that Infernal Spring, they would not be able to obtain as much of a harvest as Chu Feng had.

The reason why Chu Feng was able to obtain so much was because he possessed comprehension ability surpassing ordinary people.

For a genius like Chu Feng to be a member of their Chu Heavenly Clan, how could he not feel joy?

“Thank you, Lord Youyuan.”

“That said, Lord Youyuan, how are your injuries?”

Chu Feng had made successive breakthroughs into rank four Heavenly Immortal. His cultivation had surpassed all of the younger generations of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm. Because of that, he was originally very happy.

However, when he looked to Chu Youyuan, he suddenly recalled Chu Youyuan’s injury. His expression immediately changed to one of concern and worry. *nove/Lb(In*

After all, while Chu Youyuan’s injury had gotten much better, it was not completely healed.

“Don’t worry about it, it’s nothing serious,” Chu Youyuan said with a faint smile. Then, he looked ahead.

Chu Feng knew that Chu Youyuan was carefully examining the way ahead so that he could seize the opportunity to escape with Chu Feng should a spatial crack appear.

However, Chu Youyuan’s injuries had to be treated. If his injury was left untreated, it would be very detrimental to him.

“Lord Youyuan, please tell me what the spatial cracks looks like. If I am to see a spatial crack, this junior will immediately inform you. But before that, you should treat your injuries. Do you think that is fine?” Chu Feng asked with a pleading tone.

Hearing what Chu Feng said, Chu Youyuan was somewhat hesitant. However, when he saw Chu Feng's determined gaze, he seemed to realize that Chu Feng would not be willing to compromise should he refuse him. As such, after a moment of hesitation, he smiled and nodded.

Chu Youyuan said, "Very well. This old man will inform you about the spatial cracks, and then treat his injuries."

Then, Chu Youyuan began to tell Chu Feng about the spatial cracks.

Not only did he inform Chu Feng of what the spatial cracks looked like, but he also explained the origins of the spatial cracks to Chu Feng.

Everyone knew that when experts unleashed their attacks, even space would shatter, should their attack be powerful enough. At the instant when space shatters, heaven and earth will turn to a patch of darkness. When space was shattered, all the things inside that space, with the exception of cultivators, would disappear. People would temporarily enter a void without space.

However, the shattering of space was only a temporary thing. The power of space itself was extremely strong. At the very least, it far surpassed the power of ordinary cultivators. Even if it was shattered, it would immediately recover.

However, the martial cultivators from the Ancient Era were much stronger than the martial cultivators now. One could very well imagine what sort of destruction the peak experts of that era were capable of.

Although the spatial destruction created by those martial cultivators, no matter how powerful they might be, would definitely recover, some traces would remain as time passed.

Those traces were spatial cracks and spatial tunnels.

The spatial tunnels flowed through the vast starry sky. Although spatial tunnels were invisible, they were like rivers following different trajectories as they flowed through a certain location of the vast starry sky or a certain world.

Within every spatial tunnel were spatial cracks. The spatial cracks were the entrances and exits.

However, it was a very difficult task to enter the spatial tunnels. Thus, exiting the spatial tunnels was also a very difficult task.

Thus, even if Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan were fortunate enough to discover a spatial crack in the spatial tunnel, they would still need enormous power in order to exit through the spatial crack.

As for such power, it was not something that Chu Feng possessed. As such... Chu Youyuan was needed to handle the task.

Chapter 3022 - Rapid Passage Of Time

After informing Chu Feng about the spatial cracks, Chu Youyuan started to wholeheartedly treat his injuries.

As for Chu Feng, he began to carefully inspect the tunnel ahead so as to not miss the appearance of a spatial crack.

The reason for that was because while the trajectory of the spatial tunnel might be constant, spatial cracks could appear at random, and were constantly on the move.

It might be possible that a spatial crack would be present not far ahead of Chu Feng. However, when Chu Feng approached it, the spatial crack might already have disappeared.

It was also possible that a spatial crack would appear in the location where Chu Feng had just passed, even though there was clearly nothing there when he passed by.

It was precisely because of the random nature of spatial cracks and their mobility that spatial tunnels were such a frightening place to be.

Even though there would definitely be one or more spatial cracks in every spatial tunnel, the mobility of the spatial cracks caused many people to be trapped in spatial tunnels for their life.

That was the reason why Chu Feng needed to focus on observing the tunnel ahead.

Unfortunately, even though Chu Feng was so focused, luck was not looking after him.

Chu Youyuan had already completely healed his injuries. Time was still passing nonstop. Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan had been now been drifting in the spatial tunnel for several months already.

The day of the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition was approaching. Yet, Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan were still trapped in the spatial tunnel, with no exit to be seen.

During those past several months, Chu Feng had gained sufficient comprehension to make a breakthrough to rank five Heavenly Immortal. However, Chu Feng had not attempted to make his breakthrough the entire time.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng was afraid that he would be forever trapped in the spatial tunnel. He was withholding his breakthrough opportunity precisely for that.

According to Chu Youyuan, there were true experts in the martial cultivation world that were capable of separating themselves from the world and roaming the vast starry sky.

Those experts were capable of forcibly ripping an opening in the spatial tunnels with their own power, and rescuing the people trapped inside.

However, spatial tunnels were extremely well-hidden. Even those enormously powerful experts would not be able to detect their existence.

That was the reason why Chu Feng needed to retain his breakthrough opportunity. If they were fortunate enough to encounter an expert roaming through the vast starry sky, Chu Feng could then make his breakthrough and draw forth the Divine Tribulation's lightning, exposing his location.

As long as that expert was interested in Chu Feng, that expert would act to rescue him.

Of course, this method was all based on luck. It could even be said that, compared to encountering a spatial crack, encountering an expert like that would be even less likely to happen.

After all, experts of that level were extremely rare in the entire martial cultivation world. Naturally, it would be very difficult for one to run into one such expert.

However, there was no other choice. Chu Feng could not allow himself to be trapped here forever. Even if the possibility of encountering an expert like that was extremely slim, he still had to attempt it.

At that moment, Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan were still traveling inside the spatial tunnel. Chu Feng was sitting cross-legged. He seemed to be pondering some things.

As for Chu Youyuan, he was looking ahead.

Even though it had been so long, and they had not encountered any spatial cracks in all this time, Chu Youyuan's focus did not waver.

"Lord Youyuan, I cannot wait anymore," Suddenly, Chu Feng stood up. A crimson sword was present in his hand. It was the Demon Armament, the Evil God Sword.

"In the end, you've decided to use that sword?" Chu Youyuan was facing Chu Feng with his back. He did not turn around. However, he knew what Chu Feng wanted to do.

"Lord Youyuan, we cannot allow ourselves to be trapped in here forever," Chu Feng said.

"Chu Feng, I know that Demon Armament of yours to be very powerful. However, you should be able to sense the power of the spatial tunnel."

"If you are to continue waiting, there is still a chance of escape. However, if you are to use your Demon Armament and end up receiving its backlash, you might end up having no chance of escape," Chu Youyuan said.

This was actually not the first time Chu Feng had attempted to use the Evil God Sword. **noVE/IB/1n**

However, Chu Youyuan had managed to urge Chu Feng against using his Evil God Sword every time. Chu Youyuan knew that the Evil God Sword would have an enormous backlash, and might even endanger Chu Feng's life. Thus, he did not want Chu Feng to use the Evil God Sword.

"Lord Youyuan, you don't have to urge me against it anymore. I have made my decision. This time around, I must definitely attempt it."

“Moreover, Lord Youyuan, please rest assured. I will not go all-out in my utilization of the Evil God Sword. I will only give it a try. If it doesn’t work, I will immediately stop my activation of the sword. I will definitely not allow it to cause enormous harm to me or seize my body.”

“Lord Youyuan, just allow me to give it a try,” Chu Feng spoke with a pleading tone.

Being inside the spatial tunnel for so long, Chu Feng had already realized that the spatial tunnel revolved around the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

Thus, should a crack appear in the spatial tunnel, it would most likely allow Chu Feng to return to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

At that time, Chu Feng would be able to demand justice from Chu Zhiyuan and the others.

Chu Feng was impatient to retrieve justice for himself. That was the reason why he was so impatient.

Faced with such a Chu Feng, Chu Youyuan was hesitant.

“Chu Feng, look!” Suddenly, Chu Youyuan pointed ahead and shouted.

Looking toward the direction indicated by Chu Youyuan, Chu Feng’s expression changed greatly. Then, extreme joy filled his face.

A cobweb-like image had appeared ahead of the spatial tunnel. It was a legendary spatial crack.

“Spatial crack, it’s a spatial crack. Chu Feng... you don’t have to use the power of your Evil God Sword anymore. You will be able to leave this place,” Her Lady Queen was leaping up and down in joy. She was simply even more excited than Chu Feng.

After all, Her Lady Queen knew about the power and danger of the Evil God Sword even better than Chu Youyuan. Thus, she had hoped that Chu Feng would not have to use the Evil God Sword’s power even more than Chu Youyuan.

And now, with the spatial crack appearing before them, it meant that Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan would be able to leave the spatial tunnel. Not only

would Chu Feng not have to use the dangerous Evil God Sword, but he would also be able to leave the spatial tunnel and return to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. With this, Her Lady Queen would naturally be unable to contain the joy in her heart.

Chapter 3023 - Someone's Coming

“Haha, the heavens have eyes. Chu Feng, oh Chu Feng, it would appear that even the heavens do not wish for you to use that Demon Armament,” Chu Youyuan was laughing loudly. This was the first time Chu Feng had seen Chu Youyuan so happy.

Even to that Exalted-level expert, being able to escape the spatial tunnel was a very happy thing.

Actually, that was quite understandable. Like Chu Feng, Chu Youyuan would also want to obtain revenge.

As long as they escaped, they would be able to seek their revenge.

Suddenly, Chu Youyuan shouted, “Chu Feng, prepare yourself, this old man is going to start now!”

“Lord Youyuan, go ahead and start. This junior is prepared. I will definitely not drag you down,” Chu Feng arrived beside Chu Youyuan and tightly grabbed his clothes.

Following the current of the spatial tunnel, Chu Youyuan finally approached that spatial crack. Like sharp blades, Chu Youyuan thrust his hands directly into the spatial crack.

“Eaaahhh~~~”

The next moment, Chu Youyuan let out a roar.

At the same time, powerful Exalted-level martial power was emitted from his body in an unceasing flow. *nove/Lb(In*

His powerful arms started to bulge tightly. Chu Youyuan was planning to use his arms to forcibly tear a hole through the spatial crack.

Only by tearing a hole through the spatial crack would he and Chu Feng be able to enter the spatial crack and leave the spatial tunnel.

“Snap~~~”

“Snap~~~”

As Chu Youyuan continued to exert even greater power, the spatial crack started growing bigger. It was actually showing signs of tearing apart.

However, as Chu Youyuan was trying his best to rip a hole through the spatial crack, Chu Feng was also under enormous pressure.

The power of the current was too strong. The reason why Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan were not moving along with the current was because Chu Youyuan was grabbing the spatial crack with his hands.

At the same time, the power of the current was impacting the two of them.

The situation was better off for Chu Youyuan. After all, he was a rank two Exalted-level expert. By grabbing onto the spatial crack, he was still able to endure the power of the current.

However, Chu Feng was unable to do so. Being only a rank four Heavenly Immortal, it was very difficult for him to withstand the pressure of the current.

Most importantly, the pressure from the current was something that no treasure or ability could stop. One could only withstand it using one's body.

Thus, Chu Youyuan was unable to help Chu Feng. At this moment, Chu Feng could only rely on his own power to withstand the impact from the current.

Chu Feng simply had no heart to worry about how much of a hole Chu Youyuan was able to tear through the spatial crack. The reason for that was because he was feeling as if his body would shatter, feeling as if his soul would explode, as if he could die at any moment.

Gradually, Chu Feng's line of sight grew fuzzy. He was about to lose consciousness. However, his hands were still tightly grabbing onto Chu Youyuan's clothes. He was unwilling to let go. He knew that if he were to let go, he might end up missing this opportunity to escape.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at the moment when Chu Feng was about to lose consciousness, light suddenly blossomed before him.

The next moment, Chu Feng felt himself flying toward the light.

“Putt,” Chu Feng smashed into the ground. However, he was feeling overjoyed.

The reason for that was because he was able to smell the ground, smell trees and plants, and even hear the sounds of birds.

He knew that he had escaped from the spatial tunnel, and returned to the real world.

Gradually, Chu Feng’s line of sight began to recover. He discovered that he was on a mountain. Sure enough, he had returned.

“Senior, you’ve succeeded. You’ve successfully brought me...”

“Senior, what’s wrong? Senior, what is...”

Chu Feng was wild with joy. However, when he saw Chu Youyuan, his expression immediately changed.

Chu Feng was astonished to discover that Chu Youyuan’s arms were covered in blood. Only bloody bones remained on his arms. All of the flesh and muscle on the bones had disappeared. It seemed like they were ripped away from him.

Not only that, but Chu Youyuan’s aura was extremely weak. His injury was simply much more serious than when he was attacked by Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather.

“Was it that spatial crack? Did that spatial crack injure you?” Chu Feng asked with concern.

“Yeah. The power of that spatial crack was much stronger than this old man imagined it to be. I had to risk my life to rip a hole through it.”

“However, in the end, we managed to get out. We’ve managed to get out. Haha...”

Although Chu Youyuan was seriously injured, he was not at all depressed. Instead, he started to laugh.

Even though his laughter was very weak, Chu Feng was still able to tell how joyous he felt.

That's right. Although he was seriously injured, it remained that they'd escaped.

As long as they escaped, they would be able to return to the Chu Heavenly Clan and get revenge against those two Supreme Elders.

"Senior, please take this medicinal pellet," Chu Feng did not care about his own injuries, and immediately took out his best medicinal pellet to give to Chu Youyuan.

"Don't worry about me. This old man merely needs to recuperate for some time to completely recover from this," Chu Youyuan waved his hand with a smile on his face. He was telling Chu Feng to not worry about him. However, he did not refuse Chu Feng's kind intentions, and accepted Chu Feng's medicinal pellet and swallowed it.

"Mn?" Suddenly, Chu Youyuan's expression changed. He turned his gaze deep into the mountain.

"Senior, what's wrong?" Chu Feng asked.

"It seems like someone's coming," Chu Youyuan said.

Chapter 3024 - Fortunate Opportunity

Chu Feng's psyche immediately grew tense upon hearing those words. He immediately activated his Heaven's Eyes and looked toward the location indicated by Chu Youyuan.

Underneath the gaze of his Heaven's Eyes, the layers of obstructions began to constantly disappear. Chu Feng discovered that there was indeed someone approaching them from far away.

It was a middle-aged man. Although he looked like a middle-aged man, Chu Feng was able to tell that he should be at least a thousand years old. He was a martial cultivator.

From his speed, Chu Feng was able to tell that his cultivation should be rank one True Immortal.

At that moment, the middle-aged man was in a panic. The reason for that was because a group of fiendish monstrous beasts was chasing after him.

Those monstrous beasts were about as powerful as the man. However, their speed was faster than his.

That said, Chu Feng was slightly surprised by the outfit of those fiendish monstrous beasts; they were somewhat unusual.

Generally speaking, monstrous beasts would only wear gowns and other clothes when they took on human form.

When they were in their monstrous beast form, they would generally be more fond of wearing armor and such to show off their power.

As for this group of monstrous beasts, they were clearly fiendish in appearance, and all in monstrous beast form. Yet, they were dripping with gold and silver.

Their appearances resembled one another. They should be from the same race. However, their outfits were different from one another. The only identical trait to their outfits was that they were all richly bedecked. It was as if every one of them was extremely wealthy.

Such appearances were very rarely seen even among humans. As for monstrous beasts, it was even rarer. To put it simply, the way they dressed was very crude.

Thus, monstrous beasts like them were truly unconventional.

That said, Chu Feng was not only surprised by the group of monstrous beasts' strange outfits. He was also unable to keep himself from sighing with admiration at how powerful an Exalted-level expert's perceptive ability was.

That man and those monstrous beasts were very far away from him. Without using his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng would simply be unable to even see them, not to mention surveying them.

However, Chu Youyuan managed to easily sense that middle-aged man and the group of monstrous beasts.

"Senior, may I act to save that man?" Chu Feng asked Chu Youyuan.

Chu Feng did not know that middle-aged man. However, seeing the panicky expression of that middle-aged man and how those monstrous beasts were insulting and laughing at him whilst chasing after him, Chu Feng subconsciously felt that middle-aged man to be the victim.

In the end, Chu Feng was a human. no **VE/IB/1n**

Seeing a fellow human being humiliated by monstrous beasts in such a manner, Chu Feng started feeling like he should help that man.

"If you want to save him, go ahead and do so. Just follow your heart. However, if you plan to act, do not be lenient. Make sure to kill them all," Chu Youyuan said with a smile.

Seeing Chu Youyuan's profound smile, Chu Feng immediately realized that Chu Youyuan should know about the origin of that group of monstrous beasts. Furthermore, those monstrous beasts must not be of the benevolent kind. Otherwise, he would not have told Chu Feng to kill them from the get-go.

"Roger," Chu Feng answered. Then, he soared into the sky and rapidly flew toward the group of monstrous beasts.

The monstrous beasts had caught up to the middle-aged man and surrounded him. After uttering more insults at him, they all took out their weapons, and were planning to take that middle-aged man's life.

At that moment, the middle-aged man felt that he would definitely die. As such, he tightly closed his eyes and prepared himself for death.

"Plop, plop, plop, plop, plop~~"

Suddenly, muffled explosions began to be heard nonstop. During this period of time, the middle-aged man was even able to hear splashing sounds.

As the middle-aged man was, after all, a martial cultivator, he was able to tell with his sharp perception that that was not water. Rather, it was blood.

He subconsciously opened his eyes, and discovered that the monstrous beasts that had surrounded him had all fallen to the ground. Furthermore, none of them had any signs of life.

Chu Feng was now standing a short distance away from the middle-aged man.

"It's you who saved me?" The middle-aged man looked to Chu Feng with disbelief in his eyes.

Questions filled his eyes. That was understandable too. After all, judging from how young Chu Feng was, he simply did not believe Chu Feng would possess the strength to kill those monstrous beasts.

"If it wasn't me, who would it be?" Chu Feng said with a faint smile.

"Putt~~~"

After Chu Feng said those words, the middle-aged man actually knelt on the ground. He started kowtowing to Chu Feng. He said, "Lord Benefactor, Lord Benefactor!"

"Lord Benefactor, you are so powerful and kind-hearted, might you be willing to save my family too? If you don't save them, they'll end up being captured and reduced to slaves by that group of monsters. They will no longer be able to see daylight, and their entire lives will be ruined."

"Agree to help him," right after that middle-aged man said those words, Chu Youyuan's voice sounded in Chu Feng's ears.

Chu Feng was startled. He did not understand why Chu Youyuan would be so determined to have Chu Feng agree to help this middle-aged man.

However, before he could say anything, Chu Youyuan's voice sounded again.

Merely, this time around, it was no longer a voice transmission. Instead, it sounded from afar.

"Cough, cough. Chu Feng, saving a life is more meritorious than building a seven-floor pagoda. Since fate has brought you together, you should go and save them."

Chu Youyuan walked out from the mountain with his walking stick in hand. He looked very weak.

"Lord Youyuan," Chu Feng hurriedly rushed toward Chu Youyuan to support him.

"Chu Feng, you should help them," Chu Youyuan said again.

"Very well," Chu Feng nodded. Then, he carried the injured Chu Youyuan on his back and asked the man, "Where is your family? Lead the way."

"Thank you milords, thank you milords," the middle-aged man was overjoyed. He began to kowtow to Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan repeatedly before getting up and guiding them.

On their way, Chu Youyuan asked Chu Feng through a voice transmission, "Chu Feng, do you know why this old man wants you to save his family?"

"Lord Youyuan must not want those monstrous beasts to humiliate people of our human race."

"Actually, it is not only when humans are bullied by monstrous beasts, even if its monstrous beasts that are bullied by humans, this junior will still act to save them. It is the duty of martial cultivators to root out the strong and support the weak," Chu Feng said.

"No, no," however, Chu Youyuan shook his head at Chu Feng's words.

"Lord Youyuan, could it be that there's another reason?" Chu Feng was surprised.

"Of course there's another reason. The reason for that is because that group of monstrous beasts are no ordinary monstrous beasts. They possess a special name in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm -- Bandit Beasts."

"These Bandit Beasts possess quite an origin. To encounter them might be a fortunate opportunity for you," Chu Youyuan said with a smile.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's heart moved. Joy rose in his heart.

Chu Feng was happy not only because Chu Youyuan said he might encounter a fortunate opportunity.

Rather, it was because Chu Youyuan said that the Bandit Beasts were a race of monstrous beasts of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

This meant that Chu Feng had truly returned to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

Having returned to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm meant that Chu Feng would be able to seek out Chu Zhiyuan, Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather and the others for revenge.

Naturally, Chu Feng would be very happy.

Chapter 3025 - Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector

"Lord Youyuan, exactly what sort of origin do the Bandit Beasts possess?" Overwhelmed with joy, Chu Feng was unable to contain himself, and began to inquire as to the origin of the Bandit Beasts. After all, judging from Chu Youyuan's tone, the Bandit Beasts seemed to be very remarkable.

"The Bandit Beasts could be said to be an unconventional race of monstrous beasts. They have been living in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm for even longer than our Chu Heavenly Clan."

"The reason why I said they're unconventional is because they're not a benevolent race. What they are most fond of doing is not the pursuit of martial cultivation. Instead, it is robbery, pillaging and murder."

"It is precisely because of their bandit-like behavior that they are known as the Bandit Beasts."

Hearing till this point, Chu Feng finally realized why Chu Youyuan told him to kill them from the very start. It turned out that the Bandit Beasts possessed a very vile nature. For their own selfish desires, they would kill, pillage and commit all sorts of unimaginable crimes.

Their behavior was simply no different from demonic sects. Indeed, they should be killed and eliminated.

"That said, while the Bandit Beasts possess a very vile nature, they have accumulated a lot of treasures over the years. Reportedly, the Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector that is capable of allowing Heavenly Immortal users to utilize

Immortal Armaments is among the treasures they possess,” Chu Youyuan said.

“Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector?” Chu Feng’s expression changed.

“The Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector is said to be something created by a peak Exalted-level expert.”

“As everyone knows, Immortal Armaments are very powerful and hard to control. However, if one is to wear the Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector, even Heavenly Immortal-level experts would be able to use Immortal Armaments,” Chu Youyuan said.

“In that case, that Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector is truly a treasure,” Chu Feng knew very well that the power of martial cultivators would always be restricted by their cultivation. Treasures capable of unlocking this sort of restriction could all be considered to be very valuable treasures.

As for that Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector, it was evidently one such highly valuable treasure.

“It is naturally a treasure. Immortal Armaments are extremely powerful. Even for Martial Immortals, Immortal Armaments are indispensable treasures for increasing their battle power. However, if a Heavenly Immortal is to be able to use Immortal Armaments, do you know how frightening the power of that Immortal Armament would be?” Chu Youyuan asked.

“Lord Youyuan, please educate me,” Chu Feng said.

“If a Heavenly Immortal expert is capable of using Immortal Armaments, the power of that Immortal Armament would not only increase that Heavenly Immortal’s battle power. Instead, the Immortal Armament would directly confer a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting one level of cultivation,” Chu Youyuan said.

“Heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting one level of cultivation?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s right. However... that is only the case should a Heavenly Immortal-level expert use an Immortal Armament.”

“If a Martial Immortal-level expert were to use an Immortal Armament, they would not gain that heaven-defying battle power,” Chu Youyuan said.

Chu Feng was able to understand why that was the case.

It was due to the fact that Immortal Armaments were so powerful that Heavenly Immortals could not use them. However, should they be able to use one, it would be quite normal for the Immortal Armament to unleash a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting one level of cultivation when used in the hands of a Heavenly Immortal. *nove-lb-In*

After all, Immortal Armaments were originally things that didn’t belong to Heavenly Immortals. Immortal Armaments were normally weapons that only Martial Immortals could control.

Should a Martial Immortal’s weapon be used by a Heavenly Immortal, it would instead be unreasonable if it didn’t unleash some sort of power that far surpassed that of Incomplete Immortal Armaments.

“The Bandit Beasts have been in existence for so long, I’m afraid they’re not so easy to handle, no?” Chu Feng asked.

The reason Chu Feng asked that question was because he was already tempted by the Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector. After all, Chu Feng was a Heavenly Immortal now, and also possessed Immortal Armaments that he was unable to use.

However, if he were to obtain the Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector, he would solve the issue of being unable to use his Immortal Armaments. For Chu Feng, that would be akin to a tiger growing wings.

However, according to Chu Youyuan, the Bandit Beasts were evidently not so easy to handle. Even though the Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector might be in their possession, it would likely be very difficult to obtain it.

“Reportedly, the Bandit Beasts are not very strong. Even their clan chief is only someone who has just stepped into the Heavenly Immortal realm. As such, they will generally only dare to bully and humiliate cultivators in the True Immortal realm or lower,” Chu Youyuan said.

“They’re actually so weak? In that case, Lord Youyuan, how have they been able to survive in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm for so long?” Chu Feng

was surprised. If the Bandit Beasts were so weak, they should've been eradicated by other powers long ago.

After all, if their chief was only at the early Heavenly Immortal realm, there would be a lot of people in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm that would be able to easily take care of them.

"The most amazing aspect of the Bandit Beasts would be their mobile base. Their base is capable of concealing itself. When it is concealed, not even ordinary Exalted-level experts will be able to find it."

"Moreover, the Bandit Beasts do not possess a normal manner of activity. Thus, it is very difficult to find them," Chu Youyuan said.

"They've worked their evil for so long, how could they not encounter people that are capable of taking care of them?" Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng felt that the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm was a place with hidden dragons and crouching tigers. With the Bandit Beasts plundering people all these years, they should have encountered experts before.

With their strength, they would definitely end up suffering should they encounter an expert.

"That has naturally happened before. However, while the Bandit Beasts are very greedy, they are also very united. Even in death, they will not expose their hideout. Furthermore, they possess a sort of power within themselves capable of shattering their own souls. Thus, whenever they are captured by others, they will immediately commit suicide through self-detonation."

"Thus, it is useless even if one were to capture them. After all, one would not even have the opportunity to torture them, much less interrogate them into giving out the location of their lair," Chu Youyuan said.

"What about following them from the shadows?" Chu Feng asked.

"That is most likely the only feasible method. However, it's not that simple either. The reason for that is because the Bandit Beasts are extremely prudent, possessing a special perceptive ability, and will immediately conceal themselves when they approach their lair."

“In short, encountering them is a fortunate opportunity. However, the question of obtaining actual treasures will depend on whether or not one can actually reach their lair.”

“Thus, you must pretend to be weak later. You must allow yourself to be captured by them like a slave. Even if they beat you up, you must still endure it. The reason for that is because they will only let down their guard toward people that they’ve subdued,” Chu Youyuan said.

“This junior understands,” Chu Feng nodded. He understood Chu Youyuan’s intention.

Then, he looked to the middle-aged man before him. He asked, “Excuse me, how shall I address you?”

“Lord Benefactor, I am called Luo Dali. You can address me as Dali,” the middle-aged man answered with reverence.

“Actually, you’re not that much older than me. I’ll just address you as Brother Luo,” Chu Feng said.

“Eh... this... if Lord Benefactor is fond of that,” Luo Dali scratched his head awkwardly. Even though he had lived for over a thousand years, his wisdom resembled that of a child.

“Brother Luo, you said earlier that your family was captured by those monstrous beasts?” Chu Feng asked.

“Yes, Lord Benefactor. My entire family, old and young, were all captured by those monstrous beasts. I escaped by myself to find people to save them. Fortunately, I ran into Lord Benefactor. Otherwise, I truly would not know what to do.”

This man by the name of Luo Dali had a very grateful expression on his face as he spoke to Chu Feng. It would appear that he was someone who knew how to repay the kindness he had received.

“Brother Luo, remember this. I will definitely save your family. However, I need you to cooperate with me,” Chu Feng said.

“Of course, of course. Lord Benefactor, please go ahead and tell me what you need me to do. I will definitely cooperate with you,” Luo Dali nodded his head

repeatedly. It seemed that he will agree to whatever Chu Feng wanted him to do.

“Due to certain reasons, I cannot save them immediately. However, you can rest assured that I will definitely save them,” Chu Feng said.

“Ah? Lord Benefactor, could it be that you’ve got something that you need to take care of, and have to leave now?” Hearing those words, panic covered Luo Dali’s face.

He thought that Chu Feng was planning to leave, and not immediately save his family.

Chapter 3026 - Definitely Save You All

“No, I will be returning with you to search for your family members.”

“However, I cannot save them immediately,” Chu Feng did not mention what his intentions were to Luo Dali.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had a very clear goal; he planned to infiltrate the Bandit Beasts’ hideout. However, it remained that Chu Feng did not know Luo Dali well. Thus, he could not reveal too much about his plan to him.

At that moment, the only thing Chu Feng wanted was for Luo Dali to help him conceal his strength. Only by doing so would he be able to infiltrate the Bandit Beasts’ hideout.

“Lord Benefactor, it’s alright. We are neither friends nor relatives. We are merely strangers that have encountered one another. I already cannot thank you enough for your willingness to help me.”

Luo Dali did not understand Chu Feng’s intention. However, upon hearing that Chu Feng was planning to help him, he felt relieved.

After that, Chu Feng chatted with Luo Dali and informed him that he was planning to conceal his strength. Chu Feng indicated that he was not planning to reveal his cultivation when they reached the place where his family members were captured. Furthermore, he would not save them right away.

“Lord Benefactor, please rest assured. I will definitely comply with all of your instructions. As long as you’re willing to save us, it is all good,” Luo Dali vowed.

“You have escaped from that place. When you return, you will inevitably be tortured. Take this medicinal pellet. Not only will it alleviate the pain, but it will also ensure that you don’t die,” Chu Feng handed Luo Dali a medicinal pellet.

“Very well. Thank you, Lord Benefactor,” Luo Dali was very obedient. He immediately swallowed the medicinal pellet.

“Now then, bring me there,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well,” Luo Dali nodded repeatedly.

Being guided by Luo Dali, Chu Feng began to walk deeper into the mountain. Soon, they found a group of Bandit Beasts.

There were around a thousand Bandit Beasts. However, they were not very strong. They seemed to all be only True Immortals.

Among them were even some younger Bandit Beasts that had not even reached the True Immortal realm, and were still only Martial Ancestors.

The strongest Bandit Beast among them was only a rank three True Immortal.

In the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, their strength could be considered to be extremely weak.

Apart from the thousand-plus Bandit Beasts, there were also several thousand human cultivators. Those people were all bound by the Bandit Beasts using special chains. Evidently, they had been captured by the Bandit Beasts.

To be captured by Bandit Beasts this weak illustrated how weak those humans were.

“Isn’t that the guy who escaped?”

“Why would he return by himself? What happened to those guys that went to pursue him?”

When Chu Feng and Luo Dali approached the Bandit Beasts, they immediately caught their attention. However, when the Bandit Beasts recognized Luo Dali, they were all astonished. nOve.1b-1n

They had immediately discovered Luo Dali's escape, and immediately dispatched Bandit Beasts to pursue him.

They felt that, with Luo Dali's strength, he would definitely be killed by his pursuers.

However, Luo Dali had returned.

Yet, the Bandit Beasts that had gone after him were nowhere to be seen.

"Milords, Milord, I know my wrong now. I shouldn't have attempted to escape. I want to be together with my family. Even if I am to be forced to work like an oxen or a horse, I would be more than willing. Milords, I beg of you, please spare my life. I will never dare to escape again, never dare to escape again."

After being discovered by the Bandit Beasts, Luo Dali immediately knelt on the ground and began to kowtow to them.

For the sake of surviving, he was willing to renounce his dignity.

With how petty and low Luo Dali was acting, even the Bandit Beasts found it embarrassing to reprimand him.

"Who are they?" After the Bandit Beasts surrounded Luo Dali, Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan, they pointed to Chu Feng, and Chu Youyuan on Chu Feng's back.

"Eh..." Luo Dali was startled. He was actually at a loss as to how to address Chu Feng. After all, in his heart, Chu Feng was his savior.

However, he also knew that Chu Feng was trying to infiltrate the Bandit Beasts' camp. Thus, he was at a loss as to what to say, since he didn't want to belittle Chu Feng.

"I... I... my uncle and I were gathering herbs on the mountain. We just so happened to run into him. He said that he knew where we could find herbs, and brought us here. Milords, where are the herbs?" Seeing that the Bandit

Beasts were asking about their identity, Chu Feng decided to step forth and declare who he was.

Furthermore, when Chu Feng was saying those words, he was pretending to be a fool.

“Haha, so they’ve been deceived by you.”

“Boy, I really couldn’t tell that you’re actually a swindler.”

“Seeing that you’ve made amends for your mistake, I will spare your life. Scram.”

The Bandit Beasts all thought that Chu Feng was swindled by Luo Dali. Because of that, they were all feeling extremely joyous. They actually did not attempt to beat him up. They tied Chu Feng, Luo Dali and Chu Youyuan up and then pushed all of them toward the captured humans.

Luo Dali was naturally very obedient. However, Chu Feng, on the other hand, started to act up.

Since Chu Feng was planning to infiltrate the Bandit Beasts’ camp and had to put on a play, he decided he might as well make it more realistic.

Being tied up for no reason at all, even a fool would know that something was wrong.

Thus, Chu Feng began to shout violently. He was shouting that he had been deceived, that he had been swindled. He turned around and attempted to flee.

However, once he started acting up, the Bandit Beasts immediately turned their attention to him and started beating him up. They continued beating him for a long time before finally stopping.

As Chu Feng was protecting Chu Youyuan while he was beating “beaten up”, Chu Youyuan did not suffer any injuries. However, Chu Feng was badly beaten and left with a bloody nose, a swollen face and bruises all over.

Of course, with the strength of those Bandit Beasts, how could they possibly be capable of injuring Chu Feng. All of his injuries were deliberately made by himself.

After being beaten, Chu Feng was dragged over to Luo Dali and the others. They were then guarded by the Bandit Beasts like prisoners.

At that moment, Chu Feng noticed that several dozen people had gathered around Luo Dali. It would appear that they were his family.

Among them was a decent-looking woman. She sat beside Luo Dali. While they appeared to not be saying anything to one another, Chu Feng was able to tell that they should be communicating with one another through voice transmission.

That woman was Luo Dali's younger sister. Her name was Luo Xiaofeng.

"Big brother, what are you doing? We made so much effort to screen your escape, why would you return by yourself. What happened to our reinforcements? You said you would go find reinforcements to save us."

It turned out that Luo Xiaofeng was complaining.

Her reaction was understandable. They had truly put in a great amount of effort to cover Luo Dali's escape. It had even cost the lives of two family members.

However, after Luo Dali successfully escaped, not only did he not bring back reinforcements, but he even returned and begged to be captured again.

It was not only Luo Xiaofeng who was unable to accept Luo Dali's behavior; even Luo Dali's parents and their other family members were all looking at him with complaints and grievance in their eyes.

Chapter 3027 - Martial Cultivation Genius

Luo Dali was someone who cared about his reputation. Being reprimanded by his family in such a manner caused him to feel grievance. n/)0.-v-)e)-L(-b.)l)-n

After a moment of hesitation, he said through voice transmission, "Little sister, you're wrongly accusing me. I have brought back a helper. However, you must keep this a secret. You must not reveal this matter. Otherwise, if we end up pissing off my benefactor, all of us can forget about escaping alive."

Luo Dali not only said those words very carefully, but he even used a tone filled with respect and reverence when he said the word 'benefactor.'

Hearing those words, Luo Xiaofeng's expression changed. Light blossomed in her previously complaint-filled eyes. Soon, she carefully asked, "Big brother, in that case, you've managed to successfully find help? In that case... where is that benefactor of yours?"

"There, that person is my benefactor," Luo Dali secretly glanced to Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan, who were lying on the ground nearby.

"It's that elderly man?" Luo Xiaofeng asked.

"No, it's that youngster," Luo Dali said.

"Big brother, look at the situation we're in. How can you make this sort of joke at a time like this?" Hearing those words, the previously joyous expression on Luo Xiaofeng's face was immediately replaced with an angry look.

The reason for that was because she felt that experts would generally be lofty and unyielding people. Unless they had no other alternative, experts would not allow themselves to be humiliated by others.

As for Chu Feng, not only was he very young, but he was also badly beaten just now. No matter how she looked at it, she did not feel Chu Feng to be a cultivation expert. She simply felt him to be a fool, a weakling.

"You must trust me. I am truly not deceiving you. However, that benefactor of mine said that his identity and cultivation cannot be exposed. Although I do not know what my benefactor wants to do, I feel that he must have something in mind. That is the reason why he deliberately allowed himself to be thrashed."

"In short, you must also keep this matter confidential. You absolutely cannot let it be known," Luo Dali said with a serious expression.

"Enough of your nonsense. If I had known you'd act like this, we wouldn't have had you escape. If we are to rely on you, our entire family will end up dying," Luo Xiaofeng took a fierce glance at Luo Dali. She was so angry her face turned red. Then, she took a glance at a man lying on the ground.

There were some grazes on that man's body. He appeared to be unconscious.

That said, whilst the man also had grazes on his face, they were unable to ruin his handsome features.

He was the sort of model beautiful man.

Seeing that man, Luo Xiaofeng revealed a rarely-seen gentle expression. Then, she said to Luo Dali, "It would appear that I can only rely on my big brother Jialuo."

"Xiaofeng, big brother is not deliberately criticizing you, but how could you still believe in the words of that pretty boy at a time like this? Quickly, wake up from this delusion. Consider it that big brother is begging you. Do not allow yourself to be deceived by him," at that moment, Luo Dali cast a gaze of disdain at the man.

In Luo Xiaofeng's eyes, that beautiful man was akin to a treasure.

However, in Luo Dali's eyes, he was completely worthless, akin to dogshit.

One could not blame Luo Dali for his reaction. After all, the beautiful man was simply too weak. He was actually not even a True Immortal; he was only a peak Martial Ancestor.

With that strength, how could he possibly save them?

"Big brother, why would you refuse to believe in big brother Jialuo like this? He is a martial cultivation genius. You too have witnessed the time of his excellence."

"The reason why his cultivation has not increased after all these years is because he has been training in a divine technique passed on by his ancestor. When he successfully masters that divine technique, his cultivation will advance by leaps and bounds."

"Furthermore, big brother Jialuo has said that he is already at the crucial moment to successfully mastering that divine technique. Soon, he will master that divine technique. At that time, his cultivation will advance by leaps and bounds, and he will be able to bring us away from here," Luo Xiaofeng said with a serious expression on her face.

"Whatever, do as you want," Luo Dali felt very helpless.

There was simply no need for his sister to inform him about the man. Luo Dali actually knew the man extremely well.

That man was called Xu Jialuo. He possessed an ordinary birth and an ordinary family.

As for their Luo Family, they were a great and rich family in their local territory.

As for that Xu Jialuo, he was someone who had seduced his sister Luo Xiaofeng with his handsome face.

Not only did Luo Xiaofeng pester him nonstop, and urge their parents to bring this Xu Jialuo into their home, but she even began to provide him with cultivation resources.

In the beginning, Xu Jialuo was quite hard-working. The speed at which his cultivation increased could even be said to be very fast. At one time, even Luo Dali thought highly of Xu Jialuo.

Furthermore, their Luo Family's Family Head, who was also Luo Dali's father, wanted to arrange a marriage between Xu Jialuo and Luo Xiaofeng. He wanted them to marry so as to tie this genius up with their Luo Family.

However, Xu Jialuo suddenly made a request, saying that their family possessed an ancestral teaching that he could not get married or have sexual intercourse before he mastered his inherited divine technique. Otherwise, he would not be able to train in the divine technique.

What Xu Jialuo said was not a random claim either. He actually took out a book, the so-called divine technique secret skill. Furthermore, he proclaimed that secret skill to be something handed down by their Xu Family's ancestor, that only the people of their Xu Family could comprehend.

Sure enough, the people of the Luo Family were unable to make sense of that secret skill. However, it did not seem to be ordinary. Thus, the people of their Luo Family ended up believing Xu Jialuo.

Moreover, the Luo Family's Family Head, Luo Dali's father, had determined Xu Jialuo to be a genius. Thus, not only did he agree to postpone the marriage between Xu Jialuo and Luo Xiaofeng, but he even started to provide as much assistance to Xu Jialuo as he could. He began to provide Xu Jialuo with all sorts of goods so that he could train in his so-called divine technique.

In the blink of an eye, Xu Jialuo had been training in that divine technique of his for over a hundred years.

In those hundred plus years, his cultivation did not increase at all. It remained at peak Martial Ancestor the entire time.

Although Xu Jialuo's cultivation did not increase at all, Xu Jialuo remained in their Luo Family and freeloaded over a hundred years of cultivation resources.

For the sake of nurturing Xu Jialuo, the Luo Family could have be said to have suffered disastrous losses. They had nearly exhausted half of all their family's wealth.

Thus, Luo Dali was determined that Xu Jialuo was a pretty boy who had deceived them for food, drink and cultivation resources.

However, he was the only person that was thinking like that His younger sister, his parents and even the other people of the Luo Family all firmly believed the divine technique Xu Jialuo was training in to be real.

Chapter 3028 - Waterfall Formation

All of the people from the Luo Family felt that Xu Jialuo was an actual cultivation genius.

They all felt that he would one day become a dragon and soar into the sky. At that time, their Luo Family would also bask in his light.

Thus, no matter how much Luo Dali urged them, saying that Xu Jialuo was a phony, he would only receive supercilious looks from his family. Simply no one was willing to listen to him.

After so many years, Xu Jialuo's status in their Luo Family had surpassed his, the eldest son.

Luo Dali even felt certain that the position of the family head would be passed onto Xu Jialuo instead of him in the future.

As such, how could Luo Dali be fond of Xu Jialuo?

.....

Chu Feng did not hear the conversation between Luo Dali and his younger sister. However, Chu Feng was able to guess what they were talking about based on their expressions.

He knew that Luo Dali had leaked information about him to his younger sister.

Fortunately, his younger sister did not believe him. Otherwise, she wouldn't have cast such a look of disdain at him.

Actually, Chu Feng had seen countless people like Luo Dali's younger sister. Chu Feng simply did not care what she thought of him. In fact, he did not care what any of the people there thought of him.

What Chu Feng wanted was very simple - he wanted to successfully infiltrate the Bandit Beasts' hideout and seize their treasures. After that, he would eliminate this scourge on the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

Chu Feng and the others were kept there for several hours. During that period of time, Bandit Beasts returned nonstop. Furthermore, they would all return with badly beaten and half-dead humans.

Chu Feng felt that their goal this time around was not plunder or looting. Rather, they were purely capturing humans to serve as their slaves.

"Why aren't those guys returning?"

"Truly useless. We had them go and capture the escapee, yet the escapee returned himself, with them nowhere to be seen."

The Bandit Beasts were mumbling and complaining as they chatted with one another.

Chu Feng was able to tell that 'those guys' that they spoke of should be the group of Bandit Beasts that were dispatched to pursue Luo Dali, who had fortunately encountered him, and thus met their fate.

Suddenly, a Bandit Beast arrived before that small commander-looking Bandit Beast and asked with a soft voice, "Milord, could they have encountered some sort of trouble?"

Hearing those words, that small commander's gaze turned cautious. Then, he waved his sleeve and said, "We wait no more. Return."

After he finished saying those words, the small commander led all of the Bandit Beasts present and brought Chu Feng and all of the other captured humans with them and began to proceed deeper into the mountains.

“It would appear that they do not suspect you. You did not allow yourself to be beaten in vain. Hehe,” Her Lady Queen’s voice was heard. It could be seen that Her Lady Queen also heaved a sigh of relief. **novel-club**

After all, the Bandit Beasts had been around for a very long time. Many people had tried to infiltrate their headquarters, only to fail in the end. This meant that the Bandit Beasts were extremely cautious beings.

Thus, before arriving, Her Lady Queen, Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan were all very worried that their true strength and intentions would be discovered by the Bandit Beasts.

Should that happen, they would not be able to infiltrate the Bandit Beasts’ headquarters.

However, seeing things now, at least that group of Bandit Beasts did not make the connection between the failure of the group of Bandit Beasts that were dispatched to pursue Luo Dali and Chu Feng.

“These Bandit Beasts would commit all sorts of crimes. However, their strengths are very weak. Likely, it is very common for them to be captured and killed by cultivators while they’re out of their hideout.”

“Thus, they have already grown accustomed to their members failing to return. That is the reason why that small commander did not make a fuss about it.”

“However, the Bandit Beasts must possess some special methods. Otherwise, it would be impossible for them to be able to exist in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm for so long. Regardless, we cannot lower our guard,” Chu Feng said.

“Mn. Taking care of this bunch is very easy. However, taking the treasures into consideration, it is best for you to be extra careful.”

“It wouldn’t actually matter for this Queen. However, you, on the other hand, will have to suffer grievances,” Her Lady Queen said.

“No, it’s nothing. What about this could possibly be considered a grievance? While it might appear that I have suffered some grievances after being beaten up by them, they are the ones that are actually being played by me. I am in fact quite fond of toying with this bunch of animals,” Chu Feng said with a mischievous smile.

“Haha, it is precisely that good mentality of yours that I am fond of. Since that’s the case, you might as well continue on with your disguise all the way through. This Queen is also interested in seeing exactly what these animals’ hideout looks like,” Her Lady Queen’s eyes were filled with anticipation as she said those words.

It was actually not only Her Lady Queen who was looking forward to it; Chu Feng was also looking forward to seeing the Bandit Beasts’ base.

He wanted to know exactly what sort of hideout was capable of protecting such weak animals that refused to shrink away from any crime, no matter how hideous.

Afterwards, Chu Feng followed the Bandit Beasts and began to proceed deeper into the mountain.

After walking for some time, they arrived at a cave. The cave was very well-hidden. However, to Chu Feng’s surprise, there was actually a waterfall inside the cave. The waterfall had no visible water source. It looked very unconventional.

“Lord Youyuan, that should be a formation, right?” As a world spiritist, Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that the waterfall was a spirit formation.

“Indeed, that’s a formation, a formation capable of detecting one’s cultivation,” as Chu Youyuan was a rank two Exalted, he was able to tell what that waterfall was with a single glance.

“It would appear that the Bandit Beasts are truly careful. For them to place this formation here, they must be afraid that someone might be trying to conceal their cultivation to infiltrate their headquarters.”

“Chu Feng, here, pinch this. I guarantee you that that formation will not be able to expose your cultivation,” Chu Youyuan secretly handed a transparent pearl-like pellet to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng immediately pinched the pellet.

After pinching the pellet, Chu Feng was able to feel an invisible power dispersing from the pellet and entering his body. That power would not exist for a long time. However, it was capable of concealing Chu Feng's cultivation temporarily.

"Chu Feng, how was it? Is that thing Chu Youyuan gave you of any use?" Her Lady Queen asked.

"If that pellet is ineffective, I'm afraid there wouldn't be anything else that could conceal my cultivation," Chu Feng gasped with admiration. As a world spiritist, he was able to tell how powerful the pellet Chu Youyuan gave him was.

Although the pellet's effects would only be temporary, it was able to absolutely conceal Chu Feng's cultivation when it was in effect.

A treasure like that must be of considerable value. In fact, it could even be said to be a treasure that could not be purchased.

Chapter 3029 - Successful Concealment

Upon arriving at the waterfall, people began to walk past the waterfall in succession.

While this was happening, a little stone had appeared in the Bandit Beast commander's hand.

To be exact, it actually resembled a title plate more than a stone.

Whenever someone passed through the waterfall, a series of numbers would be displayed on that title plate. The number indicated the cultivation of the person that had walked through the waterfall.

In the beginning, the numbers that appeared were all the same.

However, when an old man walked past waterfall, the commander's expression changed enormously.

The Bandit Beast commander pointed to the old man that had stepped through the waterfall and shouted, "Humph, you're actually concealing your cultivation? Are you trying to infiltrate into our race? Men! Seize him!"

“Wahahaha, this old man was originally puzzled as to why such a waterfall would appear in a place like this. It turns out that this waterfall is actually a formation capable of exposing one’s cultivation.”

“That said, so what if I am discovered by you all? With your mere strength, how could you possibly arrest this old man?”

“Bunch of animals, this old man will not only kill you all, but I will also seize your treasures.”

After having his cultivation exposed, that old man immediately changed his demeanor and began to laugh mockingly.

At that moment, his cultivation also changed enormously. From a rank nine Martial Ancestor, he became a rank five True Immortal.

His strength surpassed all of the Bandit Beasts present. After all, the Bandit Beast commander was only a rank three True Immortal.

“Puu~~~”

However, right at the moment when that old man was feeling immensely proud with himself, right when he was about to slaughter all of the Bandit Beasts, a light ray suddenly flew out from deep inside the cave and pierced into the old man.

The next moment, that old man fell to the ground in disbelief. He had died.

“There’s an expert inside the mountain. It’s a rank nine True Immortal.”

Chu Feng’s expression changed. Before that rank nine True Immortal acted to slaughter the old man, not even Chu Feng had been able to detect his existence inside the cave.

Moreover, after that individual attacked and killed the old man, his aura immediately disappeared.

However, his aura was clearly captured by Chu Feng the moment he attacked that old man.

There was indeed a rank nine True Immortal hidden inside the cave. Furthermore, that individual should possess superb concealment ability.

Otherwise, it would be impossible for even Chu Feng to only be able to detect his existence when he attacked.

“Humph, did you really think our race to be full of fools? A mere rank five True Immortal wanted to infiltrate into our race?” Seeing the fallen corpse of that old man, the commander let out a mocking laugh. Then, he shouted, “Continue!”

Urged by the Bandit Beasts, the other humans began to walk past the waterfall in succession. Soon, it was Chu Feng’s turn.

At that moment, Chu Feng was slightly worried. It was not that he was worried about his safety.

After all, he was already a Heavenly Immortal expert. Furthermore, behind him was Chu Youyuan, a rank two Exalted.

A rank two Exalted cultivation was a level of cultivation that stood at the apex of the entire Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

Even though Chu Youyuan was seriously injured, it remained that he was a rank two Exalted. He was still so overwhelmingly powerful that he could easily massacre all existences beneath the rank two Exalted level of cultivation.

With such an existence by his side, how could Chu Feng be worried about his own safety?

What Chu Feng was worried about was his cultivation being exposed.

Should his cultivation be exposed, he would lose this opportunity to infiltrate the Bandit Beasts’ hideout. Should that happen, Chu Feng would have gone through all this trouble in vain.

When Chu Feng was about to pass through the waterfall, Luo Dali revealed a worried expression.

He knew that Chu Feng should be very powerful, and was definitely not an ordinary True Immortal. However, he only imagined Chu Feng’s cultivation to be at most rank three of rank four True Immortal.

That old man earlier was a rank five True Immortal. Yet, he was still killed by a single attack.

Luo Dali was worried that Chu Feng's cultivation would be exposed, and that he would end up suffering the same fate as the old man earlier.

If that were to happen, Luo Dali would feel extremely guilty. After all, this matter was originally unrelated to Chu Feng. It was he who asked Chu Feng to save them. If Chu Feng were to suffer any sort of misfortune, he would feel as if he were the one to have harmed him.

While Luo Dali was looking at Chu Feng with a worried expression on his face, Luo Xiaofeng was observing Chu Feng and the title plate in that Bandit Beast commander's hand with an interested expression on her face.

Even though she did not believe in Luo Dali's claim of Chu Feng being a martial cultivation expert, she still wanted to verify her guess. At the same time, she was feeling a slight amount of hopeful anticipation.

However, when Chu Feng successfully passed through the waterfall, Luo Xiaofeng revealed a disappointed expression. Furthermore, she looked to Luo Dali and said through a voice transmission, "Is he the martial cultivation expert you spoke of?"

The reason why Luo Xiaofeng was acting with such disdain was because she had noticed that Chu Feng's cultivation was indicated by the title plate to only be a mere rank one Martial Ancestor.

A mere rank one Martial Ancestor. Not to mention saving them, he would not even have the strength to protect himself. He was simply the weakest individual among everyone present.

As for Chu Youyuan, his cultivation was also displayed on the title plate after Chu Feng. His indicated cultivation was much stronger than Chu Feng's. However, his cultivation was displayed as only a rank nine Martial Ancestor.

Likewise, he was unable to enter Luo Xiaofeng's discerning eyes. After all, she was a rank one True Immortal. n..0V**elb1n**

However, Luo Dali had a joyous expression on his face. Although he did not know Chu Youyuan was a rank two Exalted and Chu Feng was a rank four Heavenly Immortal, he knew that Chu Feng was definitely not as weak as a rank one Martial Ancestor.

This indicated two things. One, that Chu Feng's cultivation had not been exposed. At least, this meant that he was safe.

Two, Chu Feng might even be stronger than he had anticipated. Otherwise, how could his cultivation not be exposed when that old man with the cultivation of a rank five True Immortal was exposed?

Martial God Asura #Chapter 3030 - Strange Formations - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 3030 - Strange Formations

Chapter 3030 - Strange Formations

"Big bro, what are you giggling foolishly about?" Seeing that Luo Dali was not only not angry after she mocked him, but instead had a joyous look on his face, Luo Xiaofeng felt very confused.

"Didn't I say that my benefactor possesses extraordinary strength? Look, not even the waterfall is capable of detecting his cultivation. Didn't I tell you so?"

"Lil' sis, just you wait and see. As long as my lord benefactor begins to act, we will definitely be saved," Luo Dali spoke proudly.

"You... you are simply incurable!" Luo Xiaofeng revealed a helpless expression.

Even after Chu Feng's cultivation was revealed, her older brother was still saying that Chu Feng would be able to save them. Liu Xiaofeng simply felt that her older brother was deceiving himself.

Afterwards, everyone passed through the waterfall. Among the following people were two more individuals who were concealing their cultivation.

One was a rank five True Immortal, whereas the other was a rank six True Immortal. However, without exception, both of them were killed by the Bandit Beast hidden inside the cave the moment their true cultivations were exposed.

After passing through the waterfall, Chu Feng and the others were finally able to continue entering deeper into the cave.

After walking for only a short while, they entered a region covered in mist. Chu Feng was able to see eight Bandit Beasts there.

Those eight Bandit Beasts all possessed rank nine True Immortal-level cultivation.

However, before entering that region covered in mist, Chu Feng was simply unable to detect the existence of those eight Bandit Beasts.

Likely, they were the ones that had killed the three people that concealed their cultivations.

Soon, Chu Feng and the others walked out of the cave and entered a lake. They passed through a river and entered an underground tunnel. They passed through multiple different locations and continued to journey for two days and two nights straight.

There were many testing formations in every location that were used to test the strength of Chu Feng and the others.

After being repeatedly tested over and over again, Chu Feng was unable to keep himself from gasping with admiration at the Bandit Beasts for possessing so many methods of detection and such vigilance, even though they were not strong at all.

It was no wonder they were able to continue to exist in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm even though they were so weak.

What they relied on were their powerful formations and their determination to never lower their guard.

However, in the end, Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan still managed to successfully enter the Bandit Beasts' hideout.

It was another mountain. While it appeared to be completely ordinary on the surface, as they walked into the mountain, they soon entered an isolated world.

In that world was a vast amount of palaces. The buildings here were all dazzling with gold. Even the stone slabs on the ground were golden.

When illuminated by the sun, the entire place would shine a bright gold color.

Bandit Beasts were all over this place. A rough estimation would place the number of Bandit Beasts there at over three million.

There were a lot of powerful Bandit Beasts there. In fact, there were even Heavenly Immortals among them.

Chu Feng knew that he had very likely successfully infiltrated the Bandit Beasts' lair.

Otherwise, it shouldn't be possible for there to be so many Bandit Beasts gathered in one place.

"Chu Feng, do not be anxious. Make certain that this is their hideout before doing anything," Chu Youyuan said through a voice transmission.

Even without Chu Youyuan's reminder, Chu Feng would not act right away. He still needed to observe more.

On the way there, he had witnessed too many methods and tricks. Even though this place greatly resembled a hideout, Chu Feng was unable to be sure if it was a fake hideout for diversionary tactics.

Only by verifying this to be the actual hideout would Chu Feng act.

Chu Feng continued to hide his strength, and continued to follow the Bandit Beasts. Soon, they arrived at the depths of the hideout.

There were two giant craters there. The craters were so large that they resembled two enormous ravines. Inside those two enormous craters were hundreds of thousands of humans.

They were lifting a special sort of crystal stone with their naked hands and walking back and forth between the two enormous craters.

Chu Feng noticed that the crystal stones that they were carrying were all the same. However, the crystal stones would change in color depending on which crater they were in.

After they changed color, they would let out a special power that would assimilate into the craters before returning to their original color.

When the crystal stones that were returned to normal were transferred to the other enormous crater, it would give the same sort of response as before.

Like this, the humans continued to travel back and forth between the two craters.

That said, those two enormous craters were definitely not as simple as they appeared to be.

Chu Feng was able to tell with a single glance that those two enormous craters were two formations.

Those were power-supplying formations, and the crystal stones were the sources of the power.

As the crystal stones were passed back and forth between the two enormous craters, the two formations would be able to produce a sort of power to supply some sort of formation or some sort of existence with a steady flow of energy.

However, most importantly of all, those crystal stones could not be transported with tools. One could only transport them with one's body.

However, those crystal stones were harmful. They would corrode one's soul. If one were to continue to stay in the two formations and transport the crystal stones between them nonstop, one would one day be killed by the corrosion.

That was precisely the reason why all of the people in the craters appeared to be in very weak health.

They were all martial cultivators, and thus they should be very robust and healthy. However, they all seemed to be sick, listless and on the verge of dying.

Apart from doing their work, they seemed to have forgotten about all purpose in life. Those people were truly pitiful.

Chu Feng knew that those people would one day end up dying.

They absolutely weren't going to die because they reached their life expectancy. Instead, they would die from having their souls corroded by the crystal stones.

Likely, that was the reason why the Bandit Beasts decided to capture all those humans. As the people inside the two formations, inside the two craters,

would eventually die, they would have to capture new humans as slaves and throw them into the formations as replacements.

"The Bandit Beasts are truly existences lower than dogs and pigs," seeing this scene, the anger in Chu Feng's heart started to surge.

"Chu Feng, you've endured it for so long, just endure it a bit more and make proper observations of the place first," Her Lady Queen felt Chu Feng's anger, and quietly urged him to control himself a bit more.

She did not wish for Chu Feng to ruin everything after going through so much effort to get there.

Chu Feng naturally knew what was meant by failure in toleration would ruin a great scheme. As such, he forcibly restrained his anger. Then, he was pushed into one of the craters by the Bandit Beasts.

"What the hell are you all standing around for? Quickly, get to work! Do you want a beating?!"

After Chu Feng and the others were pushed into a crater, there were immediately Bandit Beasts that raised their long whips and began to urge them to work.

Chu Feng and the others were helpless. As such, they began to work at transporting the crystal stones like the other humans.

Chapter 3031 - Mastery Of The Divine Technique

Once the crystal stone entered his hand, Chu Feng immediately started to frown.

Not only was the crystal stone corroding his soul, but it was actually even absorbing his soul.

This formation was even more frightening than Chu Feng had anticipated. It was simply a demonic formation.

After discovering the dangers of this place, Chu Feng wanted to leave as soon as possible. He also wanted to quickly rescue the captured people from those formations.

Thus, as Chu Feng started to transport the crystal stones, he began to survey his surroundings with his Heaven's Eyes.

Chu Feng was examining the hideout. He was searching for the place where the treasures were kept.

Fortunately, the people present seemed to be extremely scared of the Bandit Beasts, and thus they were all wholly concentrated on their work. Simply no one dared to slack off.

Because of that, the Bandit Beasts did not continue to pay attention to Chu Feng and the others inside the formation. Seeing that they had started working, the Bandit Beasts decided to leave.

As such, they simply did not notice Chu Feng looking around and observing the place.

"Everyone, from now on, there is no need for you all to subject yourselves to the control of those animals," suddenly, a voice was heard.

It was that man by the name of Xu Jialuo. He had finally regained consciousness.

"Big brother Jialuo, you've finally woke up?" Luo Xiaofeng was overjoyed to see Xu Jialuo waking up.

The others from the Luo Family hurriedly surrounded him. They too had overjoyed expressions on their faces.

"Big brother Jialuo, could you... have successfully made your breakthrough?" Luo Xiaofeng asked with overwhelming excitement.

She discovered that not only were the injuries on Xu Jialuo's face gone, but he had also become much more spirited.

It had been over a hundred years since she had last seen Xu Jialuo like this. The reason for that was because ever since Xu Jialuo started training in his so-called divine technique passed down from his ancestor, he became very lifeless.

"Mn," faced with the excited Luo Xiaofeng, Xu Jialuo reacted very calmly, and nodded lightly.

His simple action caused the people from the Luo Family to become endlessly excited. They were feeling so joyous that they were simply about to shout in excitement.

If it wasn't for the fact that they were afraid that they would catch the attention of those Bandit Beasts, they would definitely be cheering excitedly right now.

After all, for the sake of nurturing Xu Jialuo, their Luo Family had invested enormously. At this moment, they would finally be able to reap the harvest of their investment, and see the fruits of their labor. Naturally, they would be very happy.

After all, one must know that this was an effort of over a hundred years, an investment of half of their entire family's wealth.

"Big brother Jialuo, in that case, what is your current cultivation?" Luo Xiaofeng walked toward Xu Jialuo and asked.

"My current cultivation is rank one Heavenly Immortal," Xu Jialuo said.

"Rank one Heavenly Immortal, amazing! Your cultivation actually increased from rank nine Martial Ancestor to rank one Heavenly Immortal directly. That is truly a divine technique, a divine technique!"

"Jialuo, sure enough, I did not misjudge you, you did not disappoint this old man."

"Brother Jialuo, you are the pride of our entire Luo Family."

After hearing what Xu Jialuo said, the people of the Luo Family were all overwhelmed with excitement. Even Luo Dali revealed an astonished expression.

It was only at that moment that he realized that he had underestimated Xu Jialuo.

That said, Chu Feng shook his head when he saw Xu Jialuo, whose cultivation had increased dramatically.

Chu Feng was able to see through Xu Jialuo with a single glance through using his Heaven's Eyes.

His sudden sharp increase in cultivation was not without cause. He had trained in some sort of special martial technique.

Whilst that martial technique did manage to sharply increase his cultivation, he would end up paying disastrously for it.

Likely, Xu Jialuo's cultivation would stay at rank one Heavenly Immortal, and be unable to increase any further for the rest of his life.

"Truly a pity. With that child's talent, it would definitely not have been an issue for him to reach the Martial Immortal Level should he train steadily."

"Unfortunately, he decided to take a shortcut, a wrong path, and harmed his future."

Chu Youyuan also let out a sigh. It seemed like Chu Youyuan had also managed to determine the price Xu Jialuo ended up paying for that martial technique he trained in.

However, Chu Youyuan was able to see more thoroughly than Chu Feng. He was even able to analyze the level of cultivation Xu Jialuo would have been able to reach if he had trained steadily.

Unfortunately, due to his ill-considered action, he who was originally capable of reaching the Martial Immortal level of cultivation would ultimately only stay at rank one Heavenly Immortal. n0V E/IB/1n

"This is great! We will finally be saved! We will finally be saved!"

"Big brother Jialuo, teach those animals a proper lesson. They've killed two of our family members."

Seeing that Xu Jialuo's cultivation had greatly increased through his successful mastery of his divine technique, Luo Xiaofeng acted as if she had finally found the person she could rely on. Her entire attitude changed.

"Xiaofeng, I can bring you and your family members out. However, there is one thing that I must tell you," Xu Jialuo said.

"Big brother Jialuo, we are family, there is no need to beat around the bush. Go ahead and tell me whatever you want. I will listen to you in regards to everything."

Luo Xiaofeng acted very obedient, like a young married woman. It seemed that she was already prepared to be the woman standing behind her man in everything. From this, it could be seen that she was truly fond of this Xu Jialuo.

"Xiaofeng, I actually already have someone I like. I made a pledge when I was younger that I wouldn't marry anyone besides her. Thus... I'm afraid that I will not be able to marry you," Xu Jialuo said.

"Boom~~~"

His words came like a bolt from the blue.

Luo Xiaofeng's joyous expression immediately disappeared. Her face turned completely pale. She took several steps back, and nearly fell to the ground.

"Xu Jialuo, what are you saying?! Do you dare say it again?!" At that moment, Luo Dali was immediately furious.

"You all have heard what I've said already. I do not care what you think of me. However, I absolutely will not marry Luo Xiaofeng. However, I, Xu Jialuo, will forever remember the help your Luo Family has provided me. In the future, I will definitely repay you all," Xu Jialuo said.

Even though Xu Jialuo was declaring that he would repay the Luo Family, his attitude was extremely cold, and even unyielding. He had an attitude of 'you all will have to listen regardless of whether you want to listen or not'.

"You damned animal!" At that moment, Luo Dali was about to explode with rage. As he spoke, he planned to walk up toward Xu Jialuo and fight him.

"Paa~~~"

However, before he could approach, a powerful hand grabbed his arm.

It was Luo Dali's father, their Luo Family's Family Head.

"Jialuo, things like marriage can be discussed. I believe Xiaofeng would not mind being your concubine," the Luo Family's Family Head said.

"Do you not mind being my concubine?" Xu Jialuo turned to ask Luo Xiaofeng.

Chapter 3032 - Short-sighted

"No, I wouldn't mind, of course I wouldn't mind. Big brother Jialuo, as long as I am able to be with you, I am willing to do anything."

Hearing those words, Luo Xiaofeng reacted as if she had seen hope. There was simply no trace of complaint in her at all. So was feeling so thankful that she was on the verge of tears.

Seeing Luo Xiaofeng acting like this, Luo Dali felt very helpless. He was feeling grievance for his younger sister. Luo Xiaofeng's manner of love was simply too petty and low.

Suddenly, Luo Xiaofeng looked to Luo Dali and said, "Big brother, did you see that? I told you my big brother Jialuo would be able to succeed. See, I didn't lie."

"Rather than relying on your so-called benefactor, it is better to rely on my big brother Jialuo. Do you finally know who is more reliable now?"

She seemed to have forgotten the fact that her fiancé had wanted to break their marriage arrangement earlier. In the blink of an eye, she had begun to praise her fiancé again.

Seeing Luo Xiaofeng acting like this, Luo Dali did not say anything. He merely sighed and shook his head.

He felt that his younger sister was beyond help now. Likely, her entire life would be ruined by that Xu Jialuo's hands.

"Xiaofeng, since you are willing to be my concubine, it would mean that you and I are still a couple. Your family is my family too."

"Right now, I will bring everyone away from this damned place," Xu Jialuo said.

"Wait!" Right at that moment, a voice was suddenly heard. It was Chu Feng.

"With your strength, you will not be able to bring them away from here," Chu Feng said.

"What did you say?" Xu Jialuo was immediately displeased upon hearing those words. Then, he swept his gaze across Chu Feng and spoke with a contempt-filled tone, "Who the hell are you? You dare to look down on me?"

"I am not looking down on you. Perhaps you didn't sense that there are rank three Heavenly Immortals overseeing this place. With your cultivation of a rank one Heavenly Immortal, trying to leave this place is simply courting death," Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng did not lie. He had been surveying the outside ever since he had arrived in the mines. Although he hadn't yet found the treasures of the Bandit Beasts, he had thoroughly determined their strength.

The overall strength of the Bandit Beasts was not strong at all. In fact, there were a lot of powers in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm that would be capable of eliminating the Bandit Beasts.

However, Chu Feng had judged that there were over a hundred Heavenly Immortal-level experts among the Bandit Beasts present. The strongest among them were two rank three Heavenly Immortals.

Although that cultivation would still be very weak in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, they were not existences that Xu Jialuo could take on.

"Impossible! With my perception, how could I not be able to perceive the existence of Heavenly Immortal-level experts?" Xu Jialuo did not believe Chu Feng's claims.

"In that case, are you able to sense my cultivation?" Chu Feng asked with a smile.

"Humph, of course I can sense your cultivation. You are but a mere Martial Ancestor," Xu Jialuo spoke with great disdain.

"Xu Jialuo, do not be rude! That man is my benefactor, the person who saved me!" At that moment, Luo Dali stood forth.

"Your benefactor? Have you gone stupid? You are a True Immortal. Yet, you're calling a mere Martial Ancestor your benefactor? Luo Dali, it would appear that you're truly growing more and more stupid," Xu Jialuo looked to Luo Dali with contempt.

"You damned bastard inferior to pigs and dogs. If it wasn't for our Luo Family, how could you obtain your current standing? Yet you dare to scold me like this?!" Luo Dali immediately flew into a rage upon hearing those words.

"Come, if you have the ability, come and try me. This young master is happy, that's why I decided to save your family. If you are to make this young master unhappy, all of you will die," Seeing Luo Dali wanting to fight, Xu Jialuo actually narrowed his eyebrows and emitted a chilly sensation from his eyes.

"You!!!" Seeing Xu Jialuo acting like that, Luo Dali started to gnash his teeth furiously. However, he did not dare to attack Xu Jialuo. After all, Xu Jialuo truly possessed the strength to slaughter him.

Overwhelmed with anger, Luo Dali looked to Luo Xiaofeng. He said, "Look at the good husband that you've found. See exactly what sort of person he is. He is simply inferior to even animals."

"You shut up! I refuse to allow you to speak ill of my big brother Jialuo!" Faced with Luo Dali's reprimand, Luo Xiaofeng instead revealed an angry look. It was as if she would become her older brother's enemy should he dare utter another word.

"Dali, you must not be disrespectful toward Jialuo."

"Dali, exactly what is wrong with you? How could you help an outsider like this?"

"Furthermore, that young man's head has problems. Could you also have problems with your head? How could you call him your benefactor? With his cultivation, how could he possibly save you?" Even the others from the Luo Family began to speak on Xu Jialuo's behalf.

Actually, how could they not be disgusted by Xu Jialuo's actions? They too were feeling very displeased.

However, they knew very well that Xu Jialuo was the only person that could save them. As such, they felt that they had to flatter Xu Jialuo and comply with all of his demands.

"I... I..." Being targeted by his own family, Luo Dali felt even more grievance. Unable to help himself, he looked to Chu Feng, seemingly wanting Chu Feng to stand up for him.

"I have promised brother Luo. Thus, I will definitely save you all from this place. However, you will have to wait a bit longer."

"If something is to happen to you all before I verify what I want to verify, I'm afraid that I will not be able to save you all. Thus... it is best for you all to wait a bit longer."

"Later, I will bring you all away from here," Chu Feng said.

"Young man, you must be truly insane. With your cultivation, how could you possibly save us?" Luo Dali's father looked to Chu Feng with a gaze filled with contempt and disdain.

"Father, what use is there for you to bother speaking with that crazy man? My big brother has gone retarded, are you also going to go retarded?" Luo Xiaofeng's attitude was even more vile.

"If it wasn't for the fact that you all are brother Luo's family, I truly would not wish to save you all," Chu Feng shook his head with a smile on his face.

He did not get angry. People like them were not worthy of him getting angry over. All Chu Feng felt was that they were very lamentable people.

Even though the person that could save them was clearly before them, they were turning their backs to that person and looking at him with contempt. n- /o)V(.E..L(/b((1))n

This was precisely what they meant by being short-sighted.

Chapter 3033 - Familiar Auras

"You are truly capable of boasting. If you want to save someone, then go and save my big brother. We do not need you saving us," Luo Xiaofeng said while pointing at Chu Feng.

Right at that moment, Xu Jialuo spoke with a very impatient tone. "Are you all planning to follow me or not? If you are, then follow me right away. If not, then you all can stay here."

The current Xu Jialuo was incomparably arrogant and proud. He was reacting as if he was the son of heaven, overlooking everything.

However, even though he was so proud and arrogant, he was refuted by Chu Feng. Naturally, Xu Jialuo would feel very displeased.

After Xu Jialuo finished saying those words, he began to walk toward the outside of the formation.

Seeing that, the people from the Luo Family hurriedly followed after him.

“Lord Benefactor, this...” Luo Dali looked to Chu Feng. He was momentarily at a loss as to what to do.

Even though Luo Dali was also surprised by Xu Jialuo’s sudden increase in cultivation, he seemed to believe in Chu Feng’s words even more.

“Trust me. Go and urge that Xu Jialuo to not do anything. If he is to ruin my business, even if the Bandit Beasts don’t kill him, I will,” Chu Feng said.

“Dali, what are you still standing there for? Quickly, come over here! Do you really think that madman will be able to save you?” Right at that moment, a shout was heard. It was Luo Dali’s mother.

“Lord Benefactor, I am sorry. Even if I am to die, I must die with my family,” Luo Dali bowed helplessly to Chu Feng. Then, he ran toward his family.

“Truly foolish,” Seeing the people of the Luo Family that left following Xu Jialuo, Chu Feng shook his head helplessly. Then, he sat down cross-legged.

Although the people from the Luo Family were very foolish, Chu Feng had promised Luo Dali to save his family. Thus, he would naturally not refuse to save them.

Thus, Chu Feng decided to hold nothing back, and unleashed his perceptive power to its limits to detect whether that place was the actual hideout or not.

Meanwhile, the people from the Luo Family had arrived outside the formation following Xu Jialuo.

“Impudent! Who allowed you all to come out?! You all have truly grown tired of living!”

Xu Jialuo and the people from the Luo Family were immediately surrounded the moment they left the formation.

"Humph, a bunch of monstrous beasts dare to act so impudently before this young master?"

Faced with the Bandit Beasts that surrounded them, Xu Jialuo merely waved his hand and shot forth a wave of martial power. The monstrous beasts that surrounded them all exploded and died. They did not even have time to scream in pain before dying by Xu Jialuo's hands.

"There are slaves escaping, slaves escaping!!!"

Once Xu Jialuo killed those Bandit Beasts, even more Bandit Beasts rushed toward them and surrounded them. Furthermore, the Bandit Beasts that were rushing over to surround them were becoming stronger and stronger.

That said, regardless of how powerful those Bandit Beasts were, as long as they were not at the Heavenly Immortal Realm of cultivation, they were no match for Xu Jialuo regardless of how numerous they were. The more that rushed over, the more that ended up being killed by Xu Jialuo. Killing them was simply as easy as stomping ants to death.

At that moment, the Bandit Beasts that were acting arrogantly and aggressively earlier all turned extremely timid and fearful after having a lot of their fellows killed by Xu Jialuo.

Seeing Xu Jialuo slaughtering those Bandit Beasts, Luo Xiaofeng had a love-struck expression. She would even look to Luo Dali, who stood behind her, repeatedly.

Her expression seemed to be saying, 'Look at how you were looking down at my big brother Jialuo before. Look, do you see how powerful he is now?'

"A bunch of trash! You've actually allowed a human expert to infiltrate here!" Suddenly, a furious shout exploded from afar. When that voice exploded, the entire region started to tremble violently. The people from the Luo Family even felt as if their eardrums were about to explode. The vibration from that explosive shout caused their heads to feel very dizzy.

After that explosive voice was heard, a figure flew into the sky. Then, that individual landed before Xu Jialuo and the others.

After that individual landed, not only did panic cover the faces of the people from the Luo Family, but even Xu Jialuo's expression changed.

The person that had arrived before them was naturally also a Bandit Beast. However, that Bandit Beast was stronger than Xu Jialuo had anticipated. That Bandit Beast was a rank one Heavenly Immortal.

But Xu Jialuo had clearly observed his surroundings with his perception. He had simply not detected any rank one Heavenly Immortal-level existences.

"Big brother Jialuo, what's going on? Why would there be such a powerful monstrous beast here?" Luo Xiaofeng had a panicky expression on her face.

It was not only Luo Xiaofeng who was panicking; the others from the Luo Family were also panicking. They had all followed Xu Jialuo and walked out of the formation. It was obvious that they were with him.

If Xu Jialuo was unable to handle that monstrous beast, he would not be the only one out of luck. They too would end up suffering the same fate as him.

"What's there to panic about? I've already mastered my divine technique. No one will be able to obstruct me today," As Xu Jialuo said those words, he swung his sleeve. Immediately, surging martial power swept forth and then turned into countless ferocious beasts that rushed toward that Bandit Beast to attack it.

"Roar~~~"

That bandit beast was not to be outdone either. After letting out a roar, it unleashed its powerful martial power.

It was like a surging storm. Energy ripples spread all over the place. The two of them then collided with one another.

While Xu Jialuo and that Bandit Beast were fighting, Chu Feng was carefully observing the entire hideout.

Perhaps because Xu Jialuo had caught the attention of the Bandit Beasts, even though Chu Feng had unleashed his perceptive ability full-force, no one noticed him.

The more Chu Feng observed, the more joyous he became. Even though he was still unable to find the location of the treasures, he deduced this place to most likely be the Bandit Beasts' hideout.

"These auras?!"

Suddenly, Chu Feng's expression changed again.

As Chu Feng pulled back his perception, he reduced the scope of his power. This caused his perception to become even stronger.

Even though Chu Feng did not deliberately try to sense the people inside the two formations, he still ended up sensing two familiar auras.

"Lord Youyuan, please wait here for me," Chu Feng said to Chu Youyuan beside him.

After he finished saying those words, before Chu Youyuan could respond, Chu Feng hurriedly turned around and flew toward the corner of the other formation.

In the blink of an eye, Chu Feng landed beside a woman.

That woman had a very beautiful appearance. Before her, a woman like Luo Xiaofeng would simply be considered ordinary.

Chapter 3034 - Torn With Grief

Due to the commotion caused by Xu Jialuo, everyone had stopped working, and was looking for an opportunity to escape.

Only this woman was reacting as if she did not notice Xu Jialuo, and continuing to diligently transport the crystal stones.

Furthermore, she was not all dirty like the others. Even though she was transporting crystal stones, her clothes were still very clean.

She still maintained the demeanor that a martial cultivator should have.

That woman served as a complete contrast to that place. However, she was doing the same sort of work as the others; she was also transporting crystal stones.

Perhaps because she had moved crystal stones for too long, not only was her complexion pale, but she also looked very weak. Her soul had been corroded by the crystal stones. Furthermore, her degree of corrosion was very serious.

Moreover, that woman was carrying a man on her back.

She was actually working while carrying a man on her back.

Compared to the woman, the man was in even weaker health. He was coughing nonstop. He simply resembled a dying man.

Seeing the woman and the man, Chu Feng immediately started to frown. The corners of his eyes began to go moist.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng knew those two people. They were Chu Feng's benefactors, two seniors that he respected greatly.

Those two people were Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi.

Back then, Ying Mingchao, Zi Xunyi, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong had all stepped onto the path to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm together with Chu Feng.

However, they encountered the strange vortexes that had appeared on the Stairway to Heaven, and were separated.

Chu Feng was sent into the the Primal Sea Sacred Mountain's Sacred Mountain World.

Wang Qiang had appeared in the Void Sacred Tree.

As for Zhao Hong, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi, Chu Feng was unable to find any news regarding them the entire time.

That said, Chu Feng had thought that the vortexes were strange. Since both he and Wang Qiang were able to pass through the vortexes alive and encounter a fortunate opportunity, he felt that Zhao Hong, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi should have encountered a fortunate opportunity too.

Never would Chu Feng have imagined that he would see Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi here.

The two grand characters that were capable of shaking the entire world in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm were actually reduced to slave workers by the Bandit Beasts.

Furthermore, they looked so very miserable.

"Seniors," Chu Feng quietly called out.

Chu Feng's voice was very soft, and trembled slightly. The reason for that was because Chu Feng was feeling enormous pain for Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi. It was not only Chu Feng's voice that was trembling, even his heart was trembling.

However, that soft call from Chu Feng caused the working Zi Xunyi to instantly freeze.

Then, she abruptly turned around and cast her eyes onto Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng, it really is you!" Zi Xunyi was immediately overjoyed upon seeing Chu Feng. She hurriedly let go of the crystal stone in her hand and walked over to Chu Feng. She grabbed Chu Feng's wrist and began to carefully examine him. Not only were her eyes filled with joy, but they were also filled with deep concern.

Even though she herself was in such a miserable state, she was still worried for Chu Feng's well-being.

Seeing Zi Xunyi like this, Chu Feng felt as if his heart was being sliced apart by knives. It was an extremely uncomfortable sensation. However, he could only force himself to smile. *nove-lb-In*

"Senior, it's me, it's me, Chu Feng."

"Mingchao, Mingchao, quickly, wake up, look at who this is."

Being called by Zi Xunyi, Yin Mingchao hurriedly opened his eyes. His eyes were devoid of spirit. It seemed like even his eyesight had gone bad. However, when his eyes landed on Chu Feng, they started to emit light.

"Chu Feng, is it Chu Feng?"

"Xunyi, you've found Chu Feng?"

Ying Mingchao let out an extremely weak voice. Even his voice had changed.

Even though Ying Mingchao still had the appearance of a middle-aged man, his voice was as hoarse as a dying old man.

"Senior, it's me, it's me," Chu Feng hurriedly helped Ying Mingchao down from Zi Xunyi's back.

Chu Feng immediately took out medicinal pellets and fed them to both Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi.

"Chu Feng, never would I have expected that you'd be captured by them too."

"What are we to do now?"

At that moment, the expression of joy that Zi Xunyi had revealed when she first saw Chu Feng was already gone, to be replaced by endless worry.

She felt that Chu Feng had been captured by those Bandit Beasts too.

She had already experienced the despair of that place. Thinking that Chu Feng had landed in the same sort of predicament as them, Zi Xunyi felt very pained.

After all, Chu Feng possessed such excellent talent. He should not be trapped until he died in a place like this.

"Senior, please don't worry. I am fine."

"That said, how did the two of you end up here?"

Chu Feng asked Zi Xunyi about what had happened as he treated Ying Mingchao's injuries. He was truly unable to understand why Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi would end up suffering such miserable fates when both he and Wang Qiang had obtained fortunate opportunities.

Chu Feng wanted to know what had happened.

Zi Xunyi did not try to conceal anything. She began to tell Chu Feng what had happened after they arrived in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

Different from Chu Feng and the others, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi were both sucked into one vortex, and sent to the same place.

They were sent to a strange ravine. The ravine was filled with intense natural energies.

Not only that, but all of the plants, vegetation and fruits inside the ravine were beneficial to martial cultivation.

It was simply a sacred ground for cultivation.

Unfortunately, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi did not realize that that ravine was a sacred ground for cultivation. They had thought that the entire Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm was like the ravine.

Determined to find Chu Feng and the others, the two of them did not stay in the ravine. Instead, they tried their hardest to leave.

When they left the ravine, they discovered that they'd entered a plain, and had no means of returning to the ravine.

It was only at that moment that they realized the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm was not filled with abundant natural energies and cultivation resources like that ravine.

Even though they were feeling slight regret for exiting the ravine, due to their worries for Chu Feng and the others, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi did not attempt to find the entrance to return to the ravine to train.

Instead, they immediately set off to search for Chu Feng, Wang Qiang and Zhao Hong.

Unfortunately, not long after they began their search, they encountered the Bandit Beasts, and were captured.

Ying Mingchao's injuries were not caused by the corrosion of the crystal stones. Instead, he was beaten to such a state by the Bandit Beasts because of his resistance on the day they were captured.

If it wasn't for Zi Xunyi begging the Bandit Beasts, Ying Mingchao would've been killed that day.

"I am useless. If it wasn't for me, Xunyi would not have kneeled to those animals," Hearing till that point, Ying Mingchao actually started tearing up.

One must know that Ying Mingchao was a legendary character in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

"They actually forced senior to kneel, those animals are truly abominable!" As for Chu Feng, his anger was surging like an erupting volcano. His anger had filled all of the blood in his body.

To Chu Feng, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi were most definitely not ordinary seniors. They were both his benefactors. Chu Feng regarded the two of them as his own elder brother and sister.

For the two of them to suffer such injustice upon arriving in the mines... Chu Feng was absolutely unable to tolerate it.

Chapter 3035 - Genocide

"Seniors, it's all my fault. I failed to find the two of you sooner, and have made you suffer."

"However, from today on, I guarantee that no one will dare to harm the two of you again."

"I will have those animals pay the price for their actions right now," Chu Feng looked to Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi and spoke with a judgmental tone.

"Chu Feng, do not be impulsive. Those animals are very powerful. If you are to provoke them, you'll likely suffer a great catastrophe," seeing that Chu Feng wanted to avenge them, Zi Xunyi hurriedly grabbed Chu Feng to stop him.

Even though she firmly believed Chu Feng's talent to be superior to that of ordinary people, that he was a genius among geniuses, she knew very well how ruthless and terrifying those Bandit Beasts were after being captured for so long. She did not wish for Chu Feng to brave danger because of them.

Seeing Zi Xunyi acting like that, Chu Feng's heart felt even more pained.

He knew that Zi Xunyi was most likely scared by the torture of the Bandit Beasts.

Otherwise, she wouldn't be continuing with her work obediently even when someone was causing a commotion by trying to flee, and when the great majority of the captured workers stopped their work to watch the commotion and look for an opportunity to escape.

She was scared. She was acting like that out of fear. It was because she was afraid that she didn't dare to rebel.

But, one must know that Zi Xunyi was not easily scared. She was Zi Xunyi, a person who had endured countless hardships, experienced countless trials, and become an all-powerful existence in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

For someone like Zi Xunyi to become so timid, one could imagine what sort of torture and abuse she had suffered by the Bandit Beasts' hands.

"Those animals! I will definitely make them suffer miserable deaths!" At that moment, Chu Feng was clenching his fists even tighter. Chu Feng, who had always been calm and collected, was actually gnashing his teeth, his face deep red from anger. His eyes were burning with anger and emitting an intense killing intent.

Chu Feng was determined to kill. Treasures and such were completely worthless to him now.

At that moment, Chu Feng was determined to exterminate the Bandit Beasts that would not shrink from any crime.

"Wuuahhh~~~"

Right at that moment, a scream was suddenly heard.

It was Xu Jialuo. Xu Jialuo had fallen heavily to the ground before the people of the Luo Family. He was completely covered in blood, and seriously injured.

Although both him and that Bandit Beast were rank one Heavenly Immortals, he not only did not possess an Incomplete Immortal Armament, but Xu Jialuo didn't even know any Immortal Techniques. Thus, he was simply no match for that Bandit Beast.

Seeing such a scene, the crowd that had stopped working and were watching the battle in the hopes of being saved hurriedly picked up the crystal stones that they'd put down and began to work again.

They all knew that they would have no chance to escape.

To them, they would at the very most receive some punishments. However, Xu Jialuo and the people of the Luo Family would not be let off with a simple punishment. Instead, they would all be killed.

At that moment, the people from the Luo Family were all trembling. Fear filled their faces. They were truly scared.

Seeing the fiendish appearance of those Bandit Beasts, they were able to imagine what would happen later.

Death. They all knew that they would be killed.

At that moment, they were filled with regret. If they knew this would've happened, they would've listened to Chu Feng, and not allowed Xu Jialuo to attempt to escape.

At the very least, if they didn't revolt, they would still be able to live. Yet at present, they would not be able to live anymore. Furthermore, who knew what sort of torment they would suffer before their deaths?

"Animals! Today, I will completely eradicate you all from this world!!!" Right at that moment, a furious shout exploded from the direction of the two formations.

Turning over, the crowd were able to see a figure soaring into the sky and arriving in the air above the formations.

"It's Lord Benefactor?" Luo Dali was overjoyed to see Chu Feng. He realized that Chu Feng might finally be planning to act.

"Why is he causing a commotion at a time like this? Is he trying to die?"

"Mad, that man is truly a madman, a lunatic."

However, compared to Luo Dali, the others from the Luo Family all felt that Chu Feng was a madman.

Even Xu Jialuo, who successfully mastered his family's divine technique and become a rank one Heavenly Immortal, was no match for the Bandit Beasts. How could a young man with the cultivation of a rank one Martial Ancestor possibly be able to take them on? That was simply courting death, nothing more than courting death.

“Another one seeking death? Very well, I will grant your wish today.”

“I shall see who else dares to attempt escape,” upon seeing Chu Feng, that rank one Heavenly Immortal Bandit Beast let out a sneer.

“Drop dead!” Right at that moment, Chu Feng let out another shout.

After he shouted those words, martial power visible to the naked eye swept forth like a tornado with a speed ten thousand times faster than lightning.

At that moment, the weather started to change as violent winds covered the region. Chu Feng’s enormous martial power instantly submerged everything.

Even the people from the Luo Family that were outside the formations were overturned and lightly injured by that martial power. n/-0V**e**l**B**1n

“Heavens, that...”

When the people from the Luo Family crawled up and saw the scene before them, they were all stunned. A fearful expression never before present emerged in their eyes.

This was especially true for that Luo Xiaofeng. Her body was trembling violently in fear. She was acting as if she had seen a ghost.

The reason for that was because all of the buildings in her field of view had been razed to the ground.

Weapons, body parts and blood covered the ground.

Those weapons were the Bandit Beasts’ weapons.

Those body parts were the Bandit Beasts’ bodies.

The blood was the Bandit Beasts’ blood.

There was so much blood that it formed a lake.

An intense reek of blood filled the air. It was truly an odor of death.

Dead. All those Bandit Beasts from earlier had died. They were instantly eradicated. Not a single one survived.

Even that rank one Heavenly Immortal Bandit Beast that seriously injured Xu Jialuo met a tragic death without even an intact corpse.

At that moment, Luo Xiaofeng and the people from the Luo Family were unable to keep themselves from turning around to look at Chu Feng again.

“Did he do that?” Luo Xiaofeng let out an incomparably frightened voice.

Chapter 3036 - Like A Demon

Seeing the current Chu Feng, Luo Xiaofeng’s face was covered in fear. She was extremely scared.

She was simply even more scared now than when Xu Jialuo was defeated by that Bandit Beast.

It was only at that moment that she realized that the young man that she had looked down on was actually such a frightening existence.

Seeing the tragic deaths of those Bandit Beasts and the bloodbath that surrounded her, she knew that the young man that she had looked down on was truly someone who viewed killing like the cutting of grass.

Before him, even those Bandit Beasts became extremely small and weak, so small and weak that one would feel mercy and pity for them.

However, upon thinking of how she had looked down on Chu Feng and insulted him, Luo Xiaofeng felt as if she had provoked someone that she shouldn’t have.

She felt that she would likely suffer the same fate as those Bandit Beasts, and die here.

But... she didn’t want to die so miserably.

The others of the Luo Family were also thinking the same thing as Luo Xiaofeng.

Of course, this also included Xu Jialuo, who was lying seriously injured on the ground.

Earlier, he had considered himself to be a self-proclaimed genius, and looked down on Chu Feng. He had felt that Chu Feng was nothing more than a joke.

If it wasn't for him taking Luo Dali into consideration, he would've already smacked Chu Feng to death.

It was only now that he realized that the actual joke was him.

At this moment when everyone were looking at Chu Feng with astonishment, panic, happiness or unease, only two people were looking at Chu Feng with pleasantly surprised expressions on their faces.

They were Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi, Chu Feng's seniors that had a deep level of friendship with him from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Even though they were unable to sense Chu Feng's cultivation, they knew that the great majority of the Bandit Beasts were True Immortals, and that the Bandit Beast that was fighting against Xu Jialuo was even a rank one Heavenly Immortal.

Chu Feng instantly massacred all of the Bandit Beasts within their line of sight. This completely displayed how powerful Chu Feng was, and indicated that Chu Feng's strength was at least that of a rank one Heavenly Immortal.

But, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi were only separated from Chu Feng for less than two years.

Within two years' time, Chu Feng had managed to break through from True Immortal to Heavenly Immortal.

His speed of progress was simply too frightening. Even though Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi already knew of Chu Feng's demon-level genius, they were still caught off-guard by his enormous speed of progress.

That being said, they were also feeling very happy and excited for Chu Feng.

"Xunyi, you were still worried for Chu Feng earlier. Now, you don't have to worry anymore, no?"

"You should know that Chu Feng is never one to boast. He said he would obtain justice for us. Thus, he will definitely do it. Haha."

"That boy is truly frightening," Ying Mingchao was wild with joy. Although he was incomparably weak, he had regained a lot of his spirit, and was now laughing openly.

Seeing Ying Mingchao acting like that, the joy in Zi Xunyi's eyes grew even stronger. In the two years' time she had been in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, she had never seen Ying Mingchao laugh like that.

"Impudent human, you dared to massacre our race! I will dismember your body into ten thousand pieces!" Right at that moment, a furious shout was heard. The next moment, over a hundred silhouettes landed outside the grand formation and surrounded Chu Feng.

They were all Bandit Beasts, and all Heavenly Immortals. Their leader was a rank three Heavenly Immortal.

All those Bandit Beasts were unleashing their auras without any reservation.

That was the reason why surging black clouds filled the sky, oppressive might could be felt in the air, and even the earth itself was trembling.

It was like demons had descended upon the earth.

The people inside the two grand formations were already filled with panic.

Even Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi were looking at Chu Feng with worried expressions on their faces.

It was not that they did not have confidence in Chu Feng. Rather, the Bandit Beast leading those Bandit Beasts was simply too powerful. His aura made Ying Mingchao and the others feel as if they had landed in hell. Even breathing became difficult.

The powerful aura of that Bandit Beast caused everyone to feel that Chu Feng would not be its match.

"A bunch of animals dare to boast shamelessly before me? All of you, kneel!" Chu Feng shouted. The next moment, Chu Feng unleashed overwhelming oppressive might from within his body. **noε-Lb.1n**

Chu Feng's oppressive might was too powerful. Not only did it disperse the black clouds that had gathered in the sky, but it even forced all of the Bandit Beasts present onto their knees. Even that rank three Heavenly Immortal Bandit Beast was no exception.

It was not only the Bandit Beasts that had surrounded him. At that moment, all of the Bandit Beasts in this hideout were forced to their knees or stomachs by Chu Feng's oppressive might.

"Heavens, exactly how strong did that boy Chu Feng's cultivation become? Exactly what did he experience in less than two years?" Seeing that even those powerful Bandit Beasts were unable to do anything before Chu Feng, Ying Mingchao, that legendary character of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, was shaking in excitement.

At that moment, that rank three Heavenly Immortal Bandit Beast asked with difficulty, "Damn it! Exactly who are you? What is your purpose?"

"Who I am is not important. What's important is that all of you shall die," as Chu Feng spoke, coldness flashed through his eyes. Suddenly, the oppressive might that surrounded the hideout suddenly started to change.

"Eaaahhh~~~"

The next moment, miserable screams resounded through the entire hideout.

All of the Bandit Beasts that were still alive were rolling on the ground. Their bodies were gradually being torn apart. Unbearable pain filled their entire bodies. Even their souls were gradually being shattered.

They were destined to die. Merely, this process of dying was simply too painful, so painful that they were simply unable to tolerate it. To them, this was truly torture.

"You... you didn't come for the treasure. Who exactly are you? Why... why would you decide to massacre our race from the very start?"

"Why, why are you doing this?"

That rank three Heavenly Immortal bandit beast was also enduring the pain of his body being torn apart and his soul being shattered.

However, he was feeling extremely unreconciled. The reason for that was because he felt that Chu Feng did not come for the treasures. Otherwise, he would have asked them about the treasures, and not decide to massacre them from the very start.

“You’re asking me why?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng laughed. His laughter was very frightening, very cold.

“Since you want to know, I will have you die with this knowledge.”

“The reason why you Bandit Beasts will be massacred today is because you all have captured people that you shouldn’t have.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng pointed toward one of the grand formations below.

He was pointing to where Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi stood.

Chapter 3037 - The Powerful Chu Youyuan

“It’s them?”

When their gazes turned to Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi, it was not only the captured humans that were surprised; even the Bandit Beasts were surprised.

Even though Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi were at the apex of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, their cultivations were simply mediocre when placed in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. In fact, they would be seen as being so weak that no one would bother to pay attention to them.

How could people like them be related to an expert like Chu Feng?

“Eeaaahh~~~”

Before they could think about the matter, the Bandit Beasts began to fall to the ground after screaming their hearts out.

Their bodies were completely torn apart, and their souls were completely shattered. After being tortured, they all died by Chu Feng’s hands.

In the end, only that rank three Heavenly Immortal Bandit Beast was still alive. However, he was in a very miserable state too, and was on the verge of dying.

“If you’re thinking that you’ve eliminated our race, then you are truly delusional! Our race was able to continue for so long because of something that you cannot possibly imagine! While it’s true that we will be killed by you, our race will not be extinguished! As for you... you are destined to pay for

what you've done here today!" That rank three Heavenly Immortal Bandit Beast shouted loudly.

Even though he was clearly on the verge of dying, that Bandit Beast was actually still threatening Chu Feng.

"Bang~~~"

Right after he said those words, Chu Feng's gaze shifted. Following a muffled explosion, that rank three Heavenly Immortal Bandit Beast turned into bloody water that splattered all over the ground.

The final Bandit Beast in that vast hideout had died by Chu Feng's hands.

After killing that rank three Heavenly Immortal Bandit Beast, Chu Feng said to the people below, "All of you can go now."

At that moment, Luo Xiaofeng and the others from the Luo Family were all startled. They did not dare to believe their ears.

Even though they'd insulted Chu Feng, he actually did not plan to kill them? This sort of broadness of heart was simply something that they'd never seen before.

Because of this, they felt very skeptical. Was Chu Feng... really planning to spare them?

"Milord, thank you for saving our lives, thank you for saving our lives," while the people from the Luo Family were confused, the people from the two grand formations below all knelt on the ground and began to express their thanks to Chu Feng by kowtowing to him.

After all, Chu Feng had truly saved them.

That said, Chu Feng did not have much of a reaction when faced with the crowd kowtowing to him to express their thanks. Instead, he flew over to Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi.

"Chu Feng. Boy, you have truly grown up. Tell me, exactly what level is your cultivation now?" Ying Mingchao immediately went up to Chu Feng after he landed. Even though he was still extremely weak, he was very energetic.

The reason for that was because he was feeling very delighted and spirited.

“Senior, I am a rank four Heavenly Immortal right now,” questioned by Ying Mingchao, Chu Feng would naturally not attempt to conceal his cultivation.

“Heavens, you’re already a rank four Heavenly Immortal? If my memory is correct, boy, you were only a rank one True Immortal when we left the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“In less than two years, you’ve become a rank four Heavenly Immortal already. The speed of your progress is simply more and more frightening. Truly frightening, truly frightening.”

“Haha, as expected of the brother of I, Ying Mingchao. I have not misjudged you,” Ying Mingchao strongly patted Chu Feng’s shoulder, and was openly praising him.

Ying Mingchao was very surprised. Back in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, the True Immortal realm was the peak level of cultivation for martial cultivators. Those that were capable of reaching the True Immortal realm would stand at the apex of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

The barrier to the True Immortal realm had blocked the great majority of people in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. It was a barrier that many people would not be able to break through in their entire life.

As for Chu Feng, he was actually able to mature to a rank four Heavenly Immortal in less than two years’ time. Chu Feng’s talent had surpassed Ying Mingchao’s imagination.

After all, to the people of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, True Immortal was already a far-fetched dream. As for Heavenly Immortal, they would not even dare to dream about it.

“Senior, please stop praising me. You should sit down and allow me to continue to heal your injuries,” Chu Feng supported Ying Mingchao and spoke with great concern.

At that moment, what Chu Feng was worried about the most was Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi’s well-being.

“Chu Feng, let this old man treat their injuries. What you should do now is find the treasures here,” right at that moment, an old man’s voice sounded.

It was Chu Youyuan.

“Chu Feng, this person is?” Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi both looked to Chu Youyuan, who was swaying back and forth as he walked toward them with a walking stick in hand.

“Seniors, I’ve forgotten to make introductions. This person is a senior I encountered in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. He is also my benefactor, the person who saved my life, Lord Youyuan.”

“Lord Youyuan, these two are my seniors from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm...” Chu Feng walked forward and began to make introductions.

“Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi. I know,” however, before he could finish introducing Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi, Chu Youyuan spoke with a smile on his face.

He actually knew about Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi.

However, upon thinking about it, that was not surprising either. After all, Chu Youyuan even knew about Chu Feng’s Demon Armament. Likely, he had investigated Chu Feng thoroughly.

Thus, it would be natural for him to know about other things regarding the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

That said, what was surprising was that after Chu Youyuan walked over to Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi, that old man who possessed a very high status even within the Chu Heavenly Clan, actually bowed respectfully to Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi. In a very grateful manner, he said, “Thank you for looking after Chu Feng in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.”

“Lord Youyuan, you must not do this, must not do this,” seeing this, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi hurriedly rushed forth to stop Chu Youyuan from continuing. However, they did not dare to actually approach Chu Youyuan. Thus, they were at a loss as to what to do.

Even though they were indeed top characters in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, they were still very nervous before Chu Youyuan.

Judging from the way Chu Feng had introduced him, they were able to tell that Chu Youyuan was most definitely not an ordinary person in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

They felt that Chu Youyuan was likely much more powerful than the current Chu Feng. To the two of them at that moment, a person that powerful would simply be akin to a god. As such, how could they not revere and respect him?

“We’re all family. This old man will not be courteous, so the two of you need not regard me as an outsider either. Quickly, sit down. This old man will treat your injuries,” Chu Youyuan said with a wave of his hand.

“Thank you senior,” Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi stopped hesitating. They bowed to Chu Youyuan gratefully, and then sat down simultaneously.

Chu Youyuan also sat down cross-legged. He waved his sleeve, and spirit power enveloped Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi.

When Chu Feng saw the spirit power Chu Youyuan unleashed, he also revealed a surprised expression.

The reason for that was because Chu Youyuan’s spirit power was not only Exalted-level, it was also Dragon Mark.

Not only was Chu Youyuan an Exalted level expert, but he was also a Dragon Mark Exalted-cloak World Spiritist.

Dragon Mark Exalted-cloak World Spiritists were the strongest world spiritists in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

As for rank two Exalted, it was also a cultivation that could look down on everyone in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

Both his martial cultivation and level as a world spiritist had reached the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm’s pinnacle.

It was only at that moment that Chu Feng truly realized how powerful Chu Youyuan was.

It was no wonder Chu Youyuan would be tasked with guarding a place as important as the Nine Moons Sacred Domain all by himself. He truly possessed the ability to do so.

After Chu Youyuan waved his hand, the others present all noticed that the spirit power Chu Youyuan unleashed was no small matter.

Even Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi Revealed astonished expressions.

Merely by feeling it, they were able to tell how powerful Chu Youyuan's spirit power was. It was a power that they had never seen before, and never felt.

At that moment, they became even more certain that Chu Youyuan was a grand character.

"Chu Feng, you should've sensed it, right?" Chu Youyuan asked Chu Feng while treating Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi's injuries.

"Senior, this junior has sensed it. The treasures are actually located underneath the formations," Chu Feng pointed below.

"In that case, stop hesitating. Go ahead and begin," Chu Youyuan said with a smile.

As Chu Youyuan spoke, he, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi, who were all sitting on the ground, actually started floating at the same time.

Not only did the three of them float into the air, but they also moved far away from the two strange formations below.

Chu Youyuan was giving Chu Feng space to act.

Chapter 3038 - Frightening Thing

"Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~"

After Chu Youyuan left, Chu Feng's hands began to move nonstop, forming all kinds of hand seals. He had unleashed his boundless spirit power. noVe(lB-In

His spirit power was like a magnificent army of thousands of men and horses. Following Chu Feng's commands, they began to move about in all directions and condense together.

Chu Feng was setting up a grand unsealing formation.

Chu Feng had determined that the Bandit Beasts' treasury was located beneath the two grand formations. There was most definitely some sort of special purpose for those formations to be instilling energy beneath them.

That said, the treasury was concealed too well. Even Chu Feng was only able to find clues regarding it, and was unable to see through it completely.

As such, Chu Feng would have to set up a grand unsealing formation in order to enter the place where the Bandit Beasts kept their treasures.

"He... is actually also an Exalted-cloak World Spiritist?"

"For him to possess such abilities, exactly who is he?" At that moment, Luo Xiaofeng, who was already astonished by Chu Feng before, let out a trembling voice.

It was not only her; many others from the Luo Family were also feeling that way. They were completely stunned by how powerful Chu Feng was.

In fact, even Luo Dali, who had believed that Chu Feng would be able to save them the entire time, was stunned.

"You all are truly ignorant, you actually do not even recognize him," at that moment, an old man arrived beside Luo Dali and the others from one of the two formations below.

He was an old man who was also captured with Chu Feng and the others. He possessed the cultivation of a rank two True Immortal. He had been quiet the entire time on the journey there, but surprisingly, he was actually speaking to the people from the Luo Family now.

Seeing that the old man seemed to know who Chu Feng was, Luo Dali hurriedly stepped forth and asked him, "Senior, exactly who is this benefactor of mine?"

The others from the Luo Family also cast their curious gazes toward the old man.

They all wanted to know exactly who Chu Feng was for him to possess such overwhelming power.

“Originally, I had thought that they were merely lookalikes. After all, with how vast of a place the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm is, there are a lot of lookalikes.”

“However, judging by things now, he is most definitely not simply a lookalike. Instead, it really is him. He is the future hope of our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm,” the old man looked to Chu Feng as he said those words. Not only were his eyes filled with endless anticipation for the future, but even his voice was filled with excitement.

“Senior, exactly who is he?” The people from the Luo Family were unable to contain their curiosity.

“It would appear that this place is truly a remote location. The news in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm travels far and fast. Yet, you all have never heard of the name Chu Feng,” Seeing that Luo Dali and the others seemed to really not know about Chu Feng, the old man revealed a helpless expression.

After all, truly few people in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm did not know about Chu Feng.

“While you all might not have heard about Chu Feng, you should’ve heard about the Chu Heavenly Clan, right?” The old man asked.

“We naturally know about the Chu Heavenly Clan. They are the overlords of our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. Who wouldn’t possibly know about the Chu Heavenly Clan?” Luo Dali said.

“In that case, have you all heard about Chu Xuanyuan?” The old man asked.

“We have naturally heard about Chu Xuanyuan. He was Chu Hanxian’s son and a legend of our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. He was even deemed to be the strongest man to ever appear in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm,” Luo Dali appeared very emotional when mentioning Chu Xuanyuan. Even his tone became emotional.

Hearing those words, that old man revealed a smile on his face. He said, “In that case, things will be easier then.”

“Not only is that Chu Feng the strongest person of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s current younger generations, he is also Chu Hanxian’s grandson, and Chu Xuanyuan’s son,” the old man said.

“What? He’s actually Lord Chu Xuanyuan’s son? But... but... wasn’t it said that his son...???”

The words spoken by that old man came like a lightning strike to the head. It was not only Luo Dali; all of the people from the Luo Family felt their heads buzzing. They simply did not dare to believe what they had just heard.

Not to mention the fact that they felt someone of that caliber would never come across them in their entire life, they’d also heard rumors of Chu Xuanyuan’s son having died since a long time ago.

“There’s no but. Chu Xuanyuan’s son hasn’t died. Furthermore, he is standing before you all.”

“Moreover, you all insulted him earlier,” as the old man spoke, he took a deliberate glance at Luo Xiaofeng and the others from the Luo Family.

“Heavens! He’s actually that Chu Feng!” At that moment, Luo Dali became extremely excited. He seemed to be on the verge of being unable to contain his excitement. His body was trembling so much that he resembled someone who was seriously ill and dying.

As for the others of the Luo Family, especially Luo Xiaofeng and Xu Jialuo, they all fell paralyzed on their butts with ashen faces.

It was only at that moment that they realized what sort of person they’d insulted.

Merely the title of a Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generation would be sufficient to bring upon them the penalty of death.

As for Chu Feng, he was even the strongest person of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations, the descendant of the two legends Chu Hanxian and Chu Xuanyuan.

“The-the-then, senior, who is that senior over there?” Luo Dali pointed to Chu Youyuan, who was treating Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi’s injuries in midair.

“I truly do not know that person. That said, seeing that he appeared at this place together with Chu Feng, I’m assuming that he should be that person,” the old man said.

“Which person?” Luo Dali asked.

“Even if I tell you about it, you wouldn’t know who that person is. All you need to know is that with that person’s strength, even the Starfall Holy Land’s Headmaster would have to bow to him and address him as ‘Milord.’”

“Although he is not a Chu Heavenly Clan’s Supreme Elder, both his status and strength are not inferior to that of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Supreme Elders,” that old man said.

“He’s actually that powerful? Heavens! I truly never would’ve imagined that I, Luo Dali, would be able to witness such a grand character in my lifetime. Even if I am to die after this, it would all have been worth it. I have not lived my life in vain,” Luo Dali was extremely excited. He did not notice that his family that were scared witless behind him.

At that moment, a single word was echoing through the minds of the people from the Luo Family.

‘Screwed, screwed, screwed.’

They felt that they were totally screwed.

They actually ended up provoking an Supreme Elder-level character of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

A person like that was truly someone capable of exercising magical powers in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, someone akin to a god. A single spit from a person like that would be able to drown them to death.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, light started to flicker within the two grand formations. Runes and symbols began to rush forth. Chu Feng had successfully set up his grand unsealing formation.

Chu Feng’s grand unsealing formation had surrounded the two grand formations. However, it did not seal anyone within it.

“Everyone, your life and death is unrelated to me.”

"I will offer you all a bit of advice. What I am going to do now will be very dangerous. If you all wish to survive, do not linger around here, and leave immediately," Chu Feng said.

Hearing what Chu Feng said, the people that were still inside the two grand formations hurriedly soared into the sky and fled far away with their fastest speed.

There were even people among them that did not even bother to turn around, and instead fled directly.

However, there were also people that stopped fleeing after distancing themselves from Chu Feng's grand formation. Furthermore, they even turned back to look.

They all wanted to know what Chu Feng planned to do.

They were no longer that scared for their lives.

After all, even without mentioning Chu Youyuan's strength, merely Chu Feng's strength was sufficient to provide them with a sense of safety.

Thus, they were no longer afraid of the Bandit Beasts. Instead, they wanted to know exactly why a grand character like Chu Feng had arrived at a place like that.

"Formation, activate!" Suddenly, Chu Feng shouted.

Rumbles began sounding nonstop.

As Chu Feng's grand formation was activated, the two energy-providing formations began to collapse, and even the ground started to cave in.

"Unseal!" Chu Feng shouted again.

This time around, the power of Chu Feng's grand formation grew even stronger. Not to mention the boundless aura of the grand formation, merely the intense light emitted by it caused many bystanders to be unable to open their eyes.

Seeing that, the people from the Luo Family saw a hope for survival. Without even looking back, they started fleeing from the hideout.

“Why are you all running away? Lord Benefactor saved us, are you all not planning to thank him?” Luo Dali ran after his family and started to berate them.

“Have you gone mad? We contradicted him like that earlier, so how could he possibly spare us when he finishes what he’s doing?”

“If we don’t flee now, when should we flee?” The people from the Luo Family spoke in unison.

“You all are truly looking down on our Lord Benefactor’s character. If he wanted to kill you all, he would’ve already done so when you contradicted him earlier. Why would he keep you all alive till now?” Luo Dali said.

Hearing what Luo Dali said, the eyes of the people from the Luo Family changed somewhat. They suddenly realized that what Luo Dali said was reasonable.

Since ancient times, experts would always directly unleash their attacks when they were angry. There was simply no reason for an expert to hold back.

As for Chu Feng, he seemed to not be angry with them from the very start. Even when they insulted him, he only smiled at their insults, and did not attempt to tidy them up.

Could it be that Chu Feng was such an open minded person that he did not possess the intention to bring harm upon them? If that was the case, wouldn’t the narrow-minded people be them instead?

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, a loud explosion was suddenly heard from the direction of the grand formation.

The crowd all turned their gazes there. They discovered that not only were the two grand formations filled with crystal stones completely destroyed by Chu Feng’s grand unsealing formation, but the earth below had also completely caved in, leaving behind an endless abyss.

At that moment, screams could be heard from deep within that abyss. The screams were so terrifying that they resembled demonic roars.

Hearing those screams, the crowd felt their hair stand on end, and began to shiver in fear.

Furthermore, the screams were growing louder and clearer.

This meant that some sort of frightening thing was approaching them.

Chapter 3039 - Swat To Death

What was happening greatly frightened the people present.

Seeing that the situation had taken a turn for the worse, there were people that immediately turned around and began to flee. They felt that Chu Feng had provoked some sort of frightening creature.

That said, there were still a lot of people that decided to stay. They were still looking in Chu Feng's direction.

They were the courageous ones. They all wanted to know exactly what sort of being was crawling out from the deep abyss.

There were also people that felt that the monster that would appear was Chu Feng's purpose for being there.

Before the crowd's focused gazes, a huge monster finally crawled out from the abyss, roaring the entire time.

Its entire body was dark red. Its appearance resembled an octopus. Its entire body was covered with tentacles, over ten thousand tentacles. Each one of those tentacles was over a hundred meters long.

That said, when compared to its body, those tentacles were still too short. The reason for that was because the body of that monster was over ten thousand meters long.

That monster was simply a giant red mountain emerging from the abyss.

That monster was truly enormous. It was so large that the crowd were all shaken by its size.

Even though there were a lot of people there, they were truly like ants when compared to that huge monster.

Furthermore, what caused the crowd to feel the most uneasy was not the size of that huge monster, but rather its appearance, and the aura it emitted.

The outward appearance of the huge monster was simply too frightening. Not only that, but it was also extremely disgusting. It seemed to not possess any bones, and resembled an enormous piece of flesh with countless tentacles growing out of it that were slowly crawling out from the abyss.

Apart from the countless tentacles, that enormous flesh was also covered with numerous eyes. It was extremely disgusting.

However, such an enormously disgusting creature was emitting an aura that was much more powerful than Chu Feng's aura.

"Martial Immortal, that monster's aura is that of a Martial Immortal!"

"Heavens! That's actually a Martial Immortal-level creature! Everyone, run away!!!"

That place was, after all, the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. Although the people there were quite weak, there were still experienced and knowledgeable individuals among them that had seen Martial Immortals before.

From the aura emitted by that giant monster, someone determined that it was a frightening creature with the cultivation of a Martial Immortal.

Once that person made such a declaration, the crowd started to panic even more.

What caused them to panic the most was that they discovered that, by the time they discovered how bad of a situation they were in and decided to escape, they were surprised to discover that they were no longer able to flee.

The reason for that was because that enormous monster had unleashed its oppressive might, covering the entire hideout. Currently, everyone was restricted by its oppressive might and unable to move at all, much less flee.

"Impudent humans! Instead of being this emperor's servants obediently, you all dared to disturb this emperor's rest. You all are truly seeking death."

Suddenly, that enormous monster started to speak. Its voice was very deep and powerful. It resembled a loud bell.

That said, its voice was also very strange and frightening. Merely by hearing that voice, the crowd started to tremble with fear.

That creature was truly a monster, truly a demon. No ordinary monstrous beast would let out such a frightening voice.

“It would appear that the treasury has revealed itself. Chu Feng, this old man will help you open the entrance to the treasury. You go in and check things out,” Right at that moment, Chu Youyuan spoke.

After that monster appeared, practically everyone present was deeply frightened by it.

Only Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan had joyous expressions on their faces.

“What did you say?!” Hearing what Chu Youyuan said, that giant monster turned its countless eyes toward Chu Youyuan and let out a voice filled with anger and killing intent.

Chu Youyuan’s words had provoked that monster.

“This old man will open a hole in your body,” Chu Youyuan said.

“Impudent! A mere Exalted-cloak World Spiritist dares think that he could contend against this emperor?!”

“This emperor will have you realize how small and powerless you are before me!”

That giant monster’s voice was filled with arrogance. It was as if it were truly an emperor standing high and above, overlooking the people below.

Furthermore, that giant monster was most definitely not boasting.

After it said those words, its body started to change. At the same time, the entire hideout was enveloped by its killing intent. The enormous aura emitted by that giant monster caused everyone to feel fatal danger to their lives. It was as if that monster was capable of shattering heaven and earth and killing all of them with a single thought.

At that moment, the people that did not know exactly how powerful Chu Youyuan was began to curse out at him in their hearts. 'What the hell is wrong with that old man?! Why the fuck is he provoking that monster?! Look at this, not only is he now going to die, but we're going to die too!'

However, at that moment, Chu Youyuan let out a faint smile. Then, he extended his palm. Like a blade aimed at that giant monster, his palm gently sliced through the air before him.

"Puu~~~"

The next moment, green blood erupted like magma. An opening was forcibly sliced open on that monster's body.

"Aooouuu~~~~"

The monster let out a miserable shriek. Its enormous body began to roll around on the ground. Even the earth was trembling violently. It was like an earthquake. *no ve-LB/In*

"....."

The crowd were all stunned upon seeing that scene. This was especially true for those that had cursed Chu Youyuan in their hearts. They were completely fear-stricken.

Even though he was facing such a monster, that old man did not even use any weapons, and merely waved his hand to leave behind such a shocking wound on that monster.

Was he still human?

"Roar~~~"

At that moment, the monster also realized that the situation was bad. It let out a roar, flipped over and began to flee toward the deep abyss.

"Since I've caught you, how could I allow you to continue to harm the human world? Today, you shall die here," As Chu Youyuan spoke, he aimed his palm downward and gently swatted the air before him.

"Boom~~~"

Once his palm strike landed, heaven and earth immediately started to shake violently. Formless power gave rise to an enormous commotion. It was as if the entire region was going to collapse.

Following a loud explosion, the enormous body of that giant monster changed shape. Green blood splattered everywhere.

The earth beneath its body had instantly caved in, turning into an enormous crater.

At that moment, the enormous monster lying in the deep crater went motionless. It was actually swatted to death by that effortless palm strike from Chu Youyuan.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 3040 - Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector? - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 3040 - Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector?

Chapter 3040 - Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector?

"That's simply too powerful! He actually managed to swat such a frightening monster to death from afar with an effortless wave of his hand?!"

"Heavens, a power that strong is simply capable of causing utter destruction to the world. Could he be an Exalted?"

After that enormous monster died, the crowd regained their freedom. However, no one attempted to leave. Instead, they were still standing there. That said, the expressions with which they looked to Chu Youyuan had completely changed.

It was only at that moment that they truly realized how powerful Chu Youyuan was.

It turned out that the frail-looking old man who would sway even when walking was not simply a Dragon Mark Exalted-cloak World Spiritist. He was also an Exalted-level martial cultivator.

The Exalted realm was the highest level of cultivation in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

The shock of an Exalted realm cultivator was far more astonishing than a Dragon Mark Exalted-cloak World Spiritist.

Thus, when the crowd realized that Chu Youyuan was very possibly an Exalted-level expert, the crowd all began to look at him with even greater reverence in their eyes.

"Chu Feng, go on ahead. However, you must also be careful. If something's amiss, leave immediately," Chu Youyuan said to Chu Feng.

"This junior understands," Chu Feng clasped his fist at Chu Youyuan. Then, his body shifted as he turned into a flash of light and bore into the body of that huge monster.

That giant monster's body was filled with green blood. Not only was it very filthy, but the blood was also emitting an unbearable stench. It was extremely disgusting.

Fortunately, Chu Feng was a world spiritist. After Chu Feng covered his body with a spirit formation, not only was he untainted by the blood, but he also isolated the disgusting smell.

After entering the monster's body, Chu Feng moved directly toward the monster's abdomen. The reason for that was because Chu Feng's perception informed him that the treasures should be hidden inside that giant monster's abdomen.

However, upon reaching the monster's abdomen, Chu Feng discovered that there were many unborn monstrous beasts inside it. Most importantly, even though those monstrous beasts were still connected to a placenta, they possessed a certain amount of cultivation already.

Those monstrous beasts were the Bandit Beasts.

"It turns out the Bandit Beasts are born from this monster."

"No, the so-called Bandit Beasts are merely puppets, this monster's puppets. So this monster is the main cause of all the disasters," Seeing the tens of thousands of Bandit Beast spawn inside the monster, Chu Feng gasped in admiration.

"No wonder the Bandit Beasts live in a hideout, a lair. This Queen was pondering earlier why a group of monstrous beasts would not live in a cave, but a lair instead."

"It turns out that the true owner of this lair is a giant disgusting bug."

"It is no wonder that rank three Heavenly Immortal Bandit Beast would make that sort of arrogant declaration before its death. It turned out that it's because he knew that their Bandit Beast race would never go extinct. After all, as long as that giant bug remained alive, their Bandit Beast race would reemerge."

"Haha, I truly never expected that the reason why the Bandit Beasts were able to continue to live 'til this day is because there was a giant bug that would continue to breed them," After carefully thinking about things, Her Lady Queen actually started to laugh. She found it very funny, because that rank three Heavenly Immortal Bandit Beast must've never imagined that their queen mother would die too.

The Bandit Beasts that had continued to exist for many years had died by Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan's hands.

"Eggy, that should be it," Suddenly, Chu Feng pointed to a circle of light ahead.

That circle of light was located in the center of the giant monster's abdomen. It was about ten meters in size, and oval in shape. While it looked like an item, it was actually a spirit formation gate.

"Woosh~~~"

As Chu Feng spoke, his body shifted, and he went through the gate. The next moment, Chu Feng discovered that he had entered an isolated space.

That place was extremely large. It was capable of containing several hundred thousand people.

However, there was not a lot of space for one to move around in that space. The reason for that was because that place was packed full.

That place was covered in all sorts of treasures.

There were materials for concocting medicines, materials for refining weapons, treasures that one could wear, and treasures that were purely for decorative purposes.

In short, there were all kinds of dazzling treasures there.

It was truly a wonder as to how many people the Bandit Beasts had killed over the years to gather all those treasures.

From a rough estimation, Chu Feng determined that there were over five thousand Immortal Armaments there. As for Incomplete Immortal Armaments, there were over a hundred thousand of them.

Although the great majority of the weapons were of only average quality, it was still an astonishing amount.

After all, when there were this many Immortal Armaments already, the amount of other treasures were even greater.

Unfortunately, while there were a lot of treasures gathered there, very few among them were high quality treasures.

In other words, of the numerous treasures there, only very few among them could be of use to Chu Feng.

Although they numbered extremely few, there were still treasures there that were of use to Chu Feng. At the very least, there was a bracelet there that caught Chu Feng's eyes.

The treasures in there were all casually thrown together. Even those better quality Immortal Armaments were thrown into a pile.

There was only a single treasure that was not thrown into a pile with the other treasures. It was a bracelet.

That bracelet was placed in the center of the entire treasury, and on top of a crystal stand.

Seemingly for the sake of revealing how precious it was, even the other treasures were kept very far away from it.

That said, whilst the bracelet was treated like a great treasure, it did not resemble any sort of precious treasure.

It resembled a copper bracelet. The only distinguishing aspect regarding it was that it was covered with rune-like symbols.

If one were to glance at the symbols, one would not notice anything unusual. However, should one inspect the symbols carefully, one would feel a sort of sensation, an ancient feeling.

“Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector?”

“But... why would it be a bracelet?” Her Lady Queen was very surprised upon seeing the bracelet.

She felt that the only item there that was capable of receiving such treatment should be the Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector. But... that was clearly a bracelet.

“Perhaps the rumors and the truth are different. However, that must be it. There’s no mistake,” As Chu Feng spoke, he picked up the bracelet from the crystal stand. Then, he wore it on his right wrist.

Upon putting the bracelet on his wrist, Chu Feng felt an enormous power flowing into his body. That power soon started to assimilate into his soul.

The next moment, the runes on the bracelet started to emit a blue radiance. However, the light soon disappeared, and the special feeling Chu Feng felt also disappeared.

“Is that it? Is it really the Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector?” Her Lady Queen was still skeptical.

Chapter 3041 - Unexpected Harvest

“I’ll know if it really is the Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector once I test it out,” As Chu Feng spoke, he casually picked up a random ax from the treasury. That ax was no ordinary ax. Instead, it was an Immortal Armament.

Although the quality of that Immortal Armament was very average, it was still an actual Immortal Armament. Unless one possessed the cultivation of Martial Immortal, it would normally be impossible for one to use an Immortal Armament.

In fact, when Chu Feng held the Immortal Armament with his left hand, he was indeed unable to unleash the power of that Immortal Armament.

In fact, when he tried to unleash the power of the Immortal Armament, he felt a power of rejection coming from the Immortal Armament.

It was as if the Immortal Armament was reminding Chu Feng that he could not use it.

However, when Chu Feng tossed the Immortal Armament to his right hand and attempted to unleash its power again, the copper bracelet on his wrist started to emit a blue light. To be precise, it was the symbols on that bracelet that were emitting the blue light.

Chu Feng was able to feel that an enormous power from within the bracelet was currently entering the Immortal Armament.

“Boom~~~”

Suddenly, the entire treasury started to tremble violently. An enormous power was unleashed from the ax.

At that moment, Chu Feng’s battle power increased. Even though he was clearly a rank four Heavenly Immortal, he now possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting one level of cultivation. In other words, the current Chu Feng was capable of contending against rank five Heavenly Immortals.

“Wow! It really is the Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector! You’ve picked up a treasure, you’ve truly picked up a treasure.”

“Haha. Chu Feng, oh Chu Feng, you did not allow yourself to receive a beating in vain. You also did not put forth a show in vain. To pick up such a treasure, you have truly profited enormously this time,” Her Lady Queen was wild with joy. Her smile was very sweet.

“The only pity is that I am only able to unleash the true power of the Immortal Armament, and incapable of making it recognize me as its master. It would appear that I will have to rely on my own power in order to make Immortal Armaments recognize me as their master,” Chu Feng said.

“That doesn’t matter. It’s enough that you’re able to use their power. Oh, that’s right. Chu Feng, since it is effective for an ordinary Immortal Armament, what about a high quality Immortal Armament? What sort of power will they give you?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“My dear Egg, we’re thinking the same thing. Let me give it a try,” Chu Feng smiled lightly, and then found a pretty decent quality Immortal Armament from the treasury.

However, upon trying it, Chu Feng felt depressed.

He was simply unable to use the power of that slightly better quality Immortal Armament.

After that, Chu Feng tried some more Immortal Armaments, and even tried the top quality Immortal Armaments he kept within his Cosmos Sack.

Unfortunately, the final result came as a disappointment to Chu Feng.

While it was true that the Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector was capable of allowing Chu Feng to use Immortal Armaments at the Heavenly Immortal realm and gain a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting one level of cultivation, he was only able to use ordinary Immortal Armaments, and was unable to use any Immortal Armament of even the slightest better quality, much less the Immortal Archery Bow and the Blackflame Ghost Sword, Immortal Armaments that were considered to be kings among Immortal Armaments.

“It’s alright. Being able to use Immortal Armaments and gain a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting one level of cultivation is sufficient,” Seeing Chu Feng feeling dispirited, Her Lady Queen began to comfort him.

“Mn, the reputation of that Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector is already well-justified. Having obtained this treasure, this trip has not been made in vain,” After saying those words, Chu Feng took out a Cosmos Sack and placed all of the treasures around him into it.

Although those treasures were not of much use to Chu Feng, they were still treasures of considerable value. Chu Feng would naturally gather them. Not only would he be able to sell them for decent prices, but they would also serve as decent gifts for his friends.

After Chu Feng gathered all of the treasures in the treasury, Chu Feng carefully inspected the treasury again. After determining that there were truly no other treasures left, Chu Feng left the treasury.

However, after Chu Feng left the treasury, Chu Feng discovered that the entrance of the treasury was changing. It began to decrease in size. Then, it turned into an oval stone.

That oval stone was no ordinary stone. Holding the oval stone in his hand, Chu Feng was actually able to sense the power of the entire hideout.

“Milady Queen, it would appear that I’ve picked up another treasure,” Chu Feng said as he looked at the oval stone in his hand.

“What sort of treasure? Are you talking about the stone that the treasury turned into?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“This stone is not simply something capable of storing treasures. It is also capable of controlling this entire hideout,” Chu Feng said.

“This hideout? In that case, that is truly a treasure,” Hearing what Chu Feng said, Her Lady Queen nodded in agreement.

The hideout was what truly protected the Bandit Beasts. It was so well concealed that not even an expert of Chu Youyuan’s cultivation was able to detect it.

Although it did not possess powerful offensive abilities, it was a definite refuge.

With such a treasure in hand, even if Chu Feng were to be under pursuit by people stronger than him, they would find it very difficult to capture him.

Afterwards, Chu Feng continued to carefully inspect the giant monster’s body. After confirming that there were no other treasures in the giant monster’s body, Chu Feng left it.

After Chu Feng walked out of the giant monster’s body, he discovered that Chu Youyuan, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi were standing in the sky above it.

“Seniors, your injuries?” Chu Feng hurriedly walked up to them. Seeing the rosy complexion on Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi’s faces, Chu Feng guessed that Chu Youyuan should’ve healed their injuries completely.

“Chu Feng, thanks to this lord, we are fine now. You don’t have to worry about us anymore,” Ying Mingchao had an extremely grateful tone as he said those words.

He knew very well that if it wasn’t for their relationship with Chu Feng, an expert like Chu Youyuan would not pay attention to them.

After all, in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, they were simply too weak.

“Lord Youyuan, thank you,” Chu Feng thanked Chu Youyuan.

“My, we are all family. Boy, if you continue to act like this, this old man will become unhappy,” Chu Youyuan said with a smile.

Chu Feng also smiled.

“How was it? How was your harvest?” Chu Youyuan asked.

“There are a lot of treasures. However, this is the most precious one,” Chu Feng raised his right hand.

“That is the Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector?” Chu Youyuan asked. The reason why he asked that was because Chu Feng was clearly wearing a bracelet.

“Lord Youyuan, I’ve already tried it out. This is indeed the Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector,” Chu Feng said.

“Good, very good. Boy, you are truly a man of great fortune. You’ve actually managed to obtain a treasure that has been lost for so many years,” Chu Youyuan was very happy.

Chapter 3042 - Being Wrongly Accused

“Lord Youyuan, since this wrist protector is of use to me, this junior decided to keep it. Here are the other treasures from the treasury. Lord Youyuan, please accept them,” As Chu Feng spoke, he took out a Cosmos Sack.

That Cosmos Sack contained all of the treasures Chu Feng had obtained from the treasury.

“Keep it. Those things are of no use to me,” Chu Youyuan waved his hand.

Seeing his response, Chu Feng did not try to be overly courteous, and put the Cosmos Sack away. He knew that those treasures were indeed even more useless to someone like Chu Youyuan.

“Lord Benefactor, Lord Benefactor.”

Right at that moment, a voice was heard. It was Luo Dali.

It was not only Luo Dali; the others from the Luo Family were also flying over. After approaching, they all landed on the ground and began to kowtow to Chu Feng.

Luo Dali had a grateful expression on his face. However, the others from the Luo Family had nervous and panicky expressions.

“I promised you that I would save your family. I kept my promise, no?” Chu Feng said with a smile on his face.

“Lord Benefactor’s promise is worth a thousand pounds of gold. This Luo Dali can’t thank Lord Benefactor enough,” Luo Dali said in a very grateful manner.

“Come on, get back up. There’s no need for all these formalities,” Chu Feng waved his sleeve, and a gentle power brought Luo Dali and the others from the Luo Family to their feet.

Luo Xiaofeng and the others from the Luo Family were all startled. They had not expected Chu Feng to bring them back up to their feet. In unison, they said, “Milord, we were blind, please punish us.”

“Punishment?” Chu Feng chuckled lightly. Then, he said, “I have come to save you, not to punish you.”

Hearing those words, the faces of Luo Xiaofeng and the others turned red.

It turned out that Chu Feng was truly a magnanimous person.

By comparison, they themselves were much more petty and narrow-minded. This caused them to feel extremely ashamed of themselves.

After he said those words, Chu Feng waved his hand and said, "There is no need to thank me. Instead, you all should leave this place quickly. If you do not leave, you all will end up being trapped here forever."

Hearing what Chu Feng said, the crowd realized that something was amiss. However, they still expressed their thanks to Chu Feng before turning around to leave.

After everyone left, Chu Feng left together with Chu Youyuan, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi.

After leaving the hideout, Chu Feng tightly held an oval-shaped stone in his hand. Immediately, light started to shine, and a colossus appeared behind the four of them.

It was an item that resembled a hideout. It was as large as a small mountain.

Then, with a thought from Chu Feng, the stone started to shine with light, and the hideout started to shrink.

Then, that colossus shrunk down to a body of light the size of a fingernail.

Furthermore, it just so happened that there was a gap on the stone. That gap was precisely the size of the hideout after it shrunk in size.

The body of light merged with the stone. It turned out that they were originally one.

"Chu Feng, you've actually obtained the method to control this hideout?" witnessing this scene, Chu Youyuan also revealed a joyous expression. He knew very well how amazing that hideout was. It could even be said that the hideout was as valuable as the Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector. This was truly an unexpected harvest.

"Actually, this item was located in that giant bug's stomach. As for those Bandit Beasts, they were merely puppets borne from that giant bug," Chu Feng said.

"No wonder the Bandit Beasts were so loyal. So they were all children borne of that ugly monster," Chu Youyuan lamented.

After hearing what Chu Youyuan said, Chu Feng started to feel slight sympathy for the Bandit Beasts.

Puppets and children were two completely different concepts.

Chu Feng declared those Bandit Beasts to be puppets because he knew that that giant bug simply did not care about the Bandit Beasts' lives. It was merely using them to capture slaves for it, slaves to provide energy to the two grand formations.

However, it was also true that the Bandit Beasts were born of that bug. Thus, it was completely reasonable to call them that bug's children.

However, if one were to view them as children, then the Bandit Beasts were truly pitiful.

"Who is it?! Get the hell out here!" Suddenly, Chu Feng turned around and looked far into the forest.

"Lord Chu Feng, please don't attack me. This old man holds no malice, no malice," Right at that moment, a panicky old man came out from the distant forest.

That old man was the same old man that had informed the people from the Luo Family who Chu Feng was in the hideout.

"What do you need?" Chu Feng asked. *nove-lb-In*

That old man looked to Chu Youyuan and asked, "Lord Chu Feng, if this old man guesses correctly, that person over there should be the Chu Heavenly Clan's Lord Chu Youyuan, right?"

"Precisely. How did you know about this?" Chu Feng asked.

Chu Youyuan was different from the other Chu Heavenly Clan's experts. He was someone who kept a very low profile.

Whilst the people of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm might all know about the Chu Heavenly Clan's Supreme Elders, very few people should know about Chu Youyuan.

"This old man was merely guessing. The reason for that was because there were rumors that you'd died in the Chu Heavenly Clan. Later on, there were rumors that the Chu Heavenly Clan's Lord Chu Youyuan disappeared."

"After that, rumors began to fill the entire Great Chilocosm Upper Realm. The great majority of people believed the words of the Chu Heavenly Clan, and felt that you were a despicable vile character who, for the sake of embezzling treasures, plotted against others from the Chu Heavenly Clan, and ended up suffering a backlash while embezzling the treasures and died in the Nine Moons Sacred Domain."

"However, there are also a small portion of people that feel that you are not like that. After all, your conduct and deeds have all shown you to be a loyal and righteous person."

"For someone like you, how could you do that sort of despicable thing for the sake of some treasures?"

"Thus, many people guessed that it was the Chu Heavenly Clan that harbored a grudge against what your father did back then, and decided to eradicate you for it. That was why they ended up making up such a lie."

"As for Lord Chu Youyuan, he wanted to protect you. That is why he was also eliminated by the Chu Heavenly Clan."

"As for this old man, I just so happened to be one of those people that believe in Lord Chu Feng's character."

"Thus, ever since I recognized you, this old man felt that person should be Lord Youyuan, who disappeared alongside you," That old man said.

"You're saying that the Chu Heavenly Clan is currently slandering Chu Feng's reputation?" Chu Youyuan asked.

"Milord, that is indeed the case. Furthermore, during this period of time, they have used a lot of tricks, and even forged a lot of false evidence. Right now, many people of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm have considered it to be the truth. They all feel Lord Chu Feng to be a despicable and vile man, that his righteous and loyal nature from before was merely a disguise."

"Right now, for many fools that do not know the truth, they will immediately voice their contempt the moment Lord Chu Feng's name is mentioned."

"Milord, you must definitely stand forth and demand justice for Lord Chu Feng," After saying those words, that old man actually kneeled to Chu Youyuan.

Chapter 3043 - Abyss Elf Clan

"Quickly, get up," however, right after that old man kneeled before him, Chu Youyuan immediately helped him up.

"Rest assured, Chu Feng is a member of our Chu Heavenly Clan. No one shall wrongly accuse him. This old man will get justice for him," Chu Youyuan said.

"This lowly one believes in Milord."

"In that case, this lowly one will leave now. I will definitely keep what has happened here today confidential," that old man bowed respectfully to Chu Youyuan. Then, he turned around and prepared to leave.

"Wait," right at that moment, Chu Youyuan waved his sleeve, and took out an Immortal Armament from his Cosmos Sack. With a gentle flick of his finger, that Immortal Armament floated over to the old man.

"This is your reward for being so considerate," Chu Youyuan said.

"Milord, this lowly one was most definitely not trying to flatter you by saying nor did I say all this in hopes of being rewarded. This lowly one truly believes that a genius like Lord Chu Feng should be protected by our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. Even if that isn't the case, he shouldn't be deliberately harmed by the people of our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm."

"Milord, farewell," surprisingly, that old man firmly refused Chu Youyuan's reward.

One should know that he was only a rank two True Immortal. To him, an Immortal Armament should be a priceless treasure.

However, after traveling for only a short distance, that old man suddenly turned around, clasped his fist and said to Chu Feng, "Lord Chu Feng, you must definitely take care of yourself. Our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm's future will all depend on you."

After he finished saying those words, that old man soared into the sky.

As he watched the old man leave, Chu Feng felt moved.

They were completely unrelated. In fact, he had never seen that old man before. Never did Chu Feng imagine that there would truly be someone who would speak up for him without seeking anything in return.

"If only our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm had more people like him, we would not have degenerated to our current state," compared to Chu Feng's feeling of being moved, Chu Youyuan let out a deep sigh.

"Chu Feng, what's your plan now?" Chu Youyuan asked Chu Feng.

"Milord, what do you have in mind? I will follow your arrangements," Chu Feng said to Chu Youyuan.

"I know that you want to return to the Chu Heavenly Clan immediately and retrieve justice from them. However, Chu Feng, that is actually not something to be impatient over. The reason for that is because increasing your cultivation is the most important thing for you."

"Even though you are the fully deserving number one person of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm's younger generation right now, even though you do not have to prove yourself, when compared to the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield, you will still have to increase your cultivation quite a bit," Chu Youyuan said.

"Milord, in that case, what do you have in mind?" Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng knew very well that he would have to rely on Chu Youyuan if he wanted to retrieve justice from those people of the Chu Heavenly Clan. If he were to return by himself, he would not even have a chance to speak. Furthermore, even if he did speak, no one would believe him.

Chu Feng knew very well how powerful the Chu Heavenly Clan was in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

They were truly capable of inverting black and white, right and wrong.

Thus, even if Chu Feng urgently wanted vengeance, he still had to wait for Chu Youyuan's approval.

Moreover, judging from Chu Youyuan's tone, it seemed that what he had decided upon was beneficial for Chu Feng. As such, Chu Feng would naturally listen to him.

"This old man heard the conversation between you, Mingchao and Xunyi from earlier."

"If this old man's guess is right, the ravine that Mingchao and Xunyi entered should be the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground," Chu Youyuan said.

"Elf Clan's Sacred Ground?"

Chu Feng, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi all revealed curious expressions upon hearing those words.

After all, merely from the Chu Youyuan's tone, they were able to tell that the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground should be a very remarkable place.

Afterwards, Chu Youyuan began to explain the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground to Chu Feng and the others.

Long long before the Chu Heavenly Clan arrived at the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, there was a power by the name of the Abyss Elf Clan in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

This Abyss Elf Clan was very powerful. Not only did they rule the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, but they even threatened the status of the Starfield Master Realm.

To put it simply, the Abyss Elf Clan had nearly become the overlords of the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield.

Even though they did not become the overlord of the Ancestral Martial Starfield, the Abyss Elf Clan was deemed to be a power on par with the Starfield Master Realm.

The Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm of that time was truly unboundedly impressive. Not only were the other Upper Realms filled with reverence and respect toward the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, but even the Starfall Master Realm was filled with fear of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

That time was most definitely the most impressive time for the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

Even the Chu Heavenly Clan that succeeded the Abyss Elf Clan did not gain the deterrence power of the Abyss Elf Clan when they ruled over the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

One day, the Abyss Elf Clan suddenly disappeared. No one knew why they suddenly disappeared.

In a single night, the Abyss Elf Clan and the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground that they lived in completely disappeared.

Since that day, the overlord of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm changed hands. Unfortunately, the new overlord of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm was simply incomparable to the Abyss Elf Clan.

Because of that, the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm received a sudden and devastating decline in status in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

In fact, the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm that had originally stood at the apex became one of the weakest Upper Realms in the entire Starfall Master Realm.

Later on, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Old Ancestor, Chu Yetianhong, led the Chu Heavenly Clan and arrived at the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm from the Lower Realms and campaigned all the way to becoming the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm's overlord. It was only after that that the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm's status gradually began to rise.

However, even during the most outstanding and strongest period of the Chu Heavenly Clan, the status of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm was still inferior to the time when it was ruled by the Abyss Elf Clan.

To this day, the disappearance of the Abyss Elf Clan remains a mystery of the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

However, after their disappearance, there would always be people that encountered the Elf Clan's Sacred Grounds appearing in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

Merely, the Elf Clan's Sacred Grounds became an ever-moving existence. Furthermore, even if one were to encounter it, they would not be able to enter it, as there was an invisible barrier that blocked them from entering it.

Over 10-1n

The Elf Clan's Sacred Ground was still as beautiful as before. Unfortunately, there was no sign of the Abyss Elf Clan at all.

Because of that, the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground became a mystery like the vanished Abyss Elf Clan.

"Milord, are you certain that ravine is the wandering Elf Clan's Sacred Ground?" Chu Feng asked.

After hearing what Chu Youyuan said, Chu Feng was filled with curiosity toward that Elf Clan's Sacred Ground. With how powerful the Abyss Elf Clan was, why would they suddenly disappear out of the blue?

The Elf Clan's Sacred Ground was likely the key to that mystery.

Chapter 3044 - Seeking The Sacred Ground

"According to the description provided by Mingchao and Xunyi, that place is indeed the location where the Abyss Elf Clan lived in the past, the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground. That said, while a lot of people have seen it before, no one has ever managed to enter it. I truly never expected that Mingchao and Xunyi would be able to enter it."

After saying those words, Chu Youyuan looked to Chu Feng, "Chu Feng, since you'd also been sucked into a vortex, did you not encounter anything?"

Chu Feng hesitated slightly. However, after thinking about all that Chu Youyuan had done for him, Chu Feng decided to trust Chu Youyuan and tell him the truth.

"This junior entered the Primal Sea Sacred Mountain," Chu Feng said.

"You actually entered the Primal Sea Sacred Mountain?" Chu Youyuan was very surprised upon hearing those words.

"However, as the Primal Sea Sacred Mountain was too dangerous, I left it," Chu Feng said.

“Unbelievable,” Chu Youyuan’s eyes were filled with surprise.

“I also have a close friend by the name of Wang Qiang. He is that person who has appeared in the Void Sacred Tree. He even carved words on the Void Sacred Tree,” Chu Feng said.

“There’s actually such a thing...” The astonishment in Chu Youyuan’s eyes grew even stronger upon hearing those words. Then, he started to contemplate.

After a short while, he slowly said, “Vortexes are generally very rarely seen in the Stairway to Heaven. Even if vortexes are to appear, they will not possess that sort of power.”

“The vortexes that you all encountered were most definitely no ordinary vortexes,” Chu Youyuan said with a very determined tone.

Actually, even without Chu Youyuan saying it, Chu Feng already guessed that to be the case.

He felt that it was possible that someone was helping them from the shadows. Otherwise, there wouldn’t be such a coincidence where all of them were sent to locations in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm where not even the Chu Heavenly Clansmen were able to enter

Merely, what sort of person would possess such power to know all of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm’s legendary remnants like the back of their hand? Furthermore, that person was even able to send people into those remnants at will.

One must know that those were things that not even the Chu Heavenly Clan was capable of doing.

After being silent for a while, Chu Youyuan asked Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi, “Do you two still remember the location of that ravine?”

“We do,” Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi said in unison.

“Let’s go there right away,” Chu Youyuan said.

Then, the four of them proceeded toward the location of the ravine according to Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi’s memories.

Actually, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi were very unfamiliar with the topography of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

However, Chu Youyuan knew the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm's topography very well. Thus, as long as they provided with him clues, Chu Youyuan was able to immediately determine the location they were talking about.

Thus, their journey there was very smooth.

Furthermore, with an expert like Chu Youyuan leading them, their speed was extremely fast.

In merely a short few days, they arrived at a plain.

It was a plain with no sign of human habitation. One could totally describe it as wild.

"Is this the place?" Chu Youyuan asked.

"This is it, this is the place," Ying Mingchao said with certainty.

Then, he pointed ahead, "When we left that place, we came out from there. Upon leaving, we were unable to find a way back. The reason for that is because there is simply no trace of the ravine there at all."

"It's only natural for you all to not be able to find it. After all, that's the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground we're talking about here," Chu Youyuan said.

"Chu Feng, let us search for it together. That said, do not have too much hope. After all, that Elf Clan's Sacred Ground is ever-moving to begin with."

"It might be possible that it is no longer on this plain now," Chu Youyuan said.

"Mn," Chu Feng nodded. Then, he activated his Heaven's Eyes and began to examine the plain.

Upon inspecting the area, Chu Feng's eyes immediately started shining. Under his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng was able to see a subtle change. n/-0VellB1n

"It's over there," Chu Feng suddenly turned around and pointed to a direction behind them.

At the same time as Chu Feng spoke, Chu Youyuan actually also spoke.

It would appear that Chu Youyuan, that Dragon Mark Exalted-cloak World Spiritist, possessed an extremely powerful observational ability as well. At the very least, it was not at all inferior to Chu Feng's current Heaven's Eyes.

Moreover, it was not only Chu Youyuan's observational ability that was strong; his speed was also much faster than Chu Feng's. At practically the very moment he discovered the abnormality, he immediately arrived at that location and began to set up a formation.

As for Chu Feng, he also arrived beside Chu Youyuan.

Seeing this, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi hurriedly rushed over.

However, compared to the joyous expressions on Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan's faces, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi were puzzled.

The reason for that was because what was before them was clearly a grassland. They simply saw no trace of the so-called Elf Clan's Sacred Ground.

"Buzz~~~"

Right at that moment, Chu Youyuan finished setting up his formation.

His formation was not very large. It resembled a mirror. Should one look through the mirror, one would discover that the location ahead had changed.

On the other side of the mirror was no longer an ordinary plain. Instead, it was a vast ravine.

The ravine was so vast that one simply could not see its borders. It looked like an isolated world.

Exotic plants filled the ravine. If the place they were at was the mortal world, then the ravine would be a paradise, a world of immortals.

"Sure enough, it is the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground!"

"If it wasn't for me witnessing it myself, even this old man would not dare to believe that the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground truly exists."

“Mingchao, Xunyi, this is all thanks to the two of you,” Chu Youyuan was very happy. He was extremely excited upon seeing the scene before him.

One had to know that this was the first time Chu Youyuan had seen the legendary Elf Clan’s Sacred Ground.

After that, Chu Youyuan extended his hand to attempt to enter the Elf Clan’s Sacred Ground.

However, as his hand approached the Elf Clan’s Sacred Ground, he was blocked by an invisible barrier.

“Sure enough, we can’t enter it,” Seeing this, Chu Feng and the others were slightly startled.

They were certain that it was not that easy to enter the Elf Clan’s Sacred Ground.

However, upon realizing this, they felt somewhat dispirited.

If they weren’t able to enter it, what use was there in finding it?

“It’s alright, let this old man have a try,” Right at that moment, Chu Youyuan waved his sleeve. Immediately, boundless spirit power burst out of his body.

Chu Youyuan was setting up a formation.

Chapter 3045 - Special Power

The formation that Chu Youyuan was setting up was a grand unsealing formation.

Chu Youyuan was trying to open a gap so that they could enter the Elf Clan’s Sacred Ground.

Unfortunately, after Chu Youyuan finished setting up his spirit formation, he was simply unable to open that incorporeal barrier.

However, he did not give up. He continued to set up multiple formations.

Unfortunately, no matter what sort of formation he set up, they were all unable to breach the Elf Clan’s Sacred Grounds’ barrier.

Faced with the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground, even a Dragon Mark Exalted-cloak World Spiritist like Chu Youyuan was powerless.

Feeling helpless, Chu Youyuan turned to ask Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi, "How did the two of you exit that Elf Clan's Sacred Ground?"

"Senior, the two of us were originally at the valley floor. The valley floor was very large. Furthermore, we were unable to fly and our powers were restricted. Thus, we traveled for a very long time before crawling out from the valley floor."

"After we crawled out of the valley floor, we began to proceed outward. We did not encounter any barrier or any special passage or tunnel."

"Merely, as we continued to walk, our surroundings started to change. We found ourselves on this plain. When we turned around, we were unable to see that ravine anymore."

"When we attempted to return to the ravine, we were also unable to do so," Ying Mingchao said.

"The two of you really shouldn't have come out," Chu Youyuan sighed, and felt pity for Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi.

The reason for that was because he knew that it was truly too difficult to enter the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground. Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi were so fortunate to have entered it. Yet, the two of them decided to come out on their own. This was truly a pity.

"Buzz~~~"

Right at that moment, Zi Xunyi passed through that mirror-like formation and began to walk toward the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground. Furthermore, she had managed to directly pass through that formless barrier. She had managed to enter the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground.

"Xunyi, how did you manage to do that?" Seeing this scene, Chu Youyuan's expression changed greatly.

It was not only Chu Youyuan; both Ying Mingchao and Chu Feng were also very surprised.

All those formations Chu Youyuan had set up had been ineffective. Thus, how did Zi Xunyi manage to enter it?

"I simply walked in," Zi Xunyi said.

"Simply walked in?" Hearing those words, Chu Youyuan and the others were surprised. They all felt this to be unbelievable. Then, they all revealed joyous expressions.

They thought to themselves, 'Perhaps Chu Youyuan's formations ended up being effective?'

"Senior, let me give it a try," Ying Mingchao walked over. He wanted to test out whether Chu Youyuan's formations had ended up being effective.

When he tried, he too managed to walk directly into the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground. He was not stopped by any power.

"Senior, it is effective! The formations you've set up are effective! You've managed to breach the barrier! We are able to enter now!" **novel-club.in**

"Senior, Chu Feng, quickly, come on in and enjoy how abundant the natural energies here are!" Ying Mingchao was extremely excited. He waved his hand at Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan to indicate to them to come in.

Seeing this, Chu Feng also revealed a joyous expression, and began to proceed toward Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi.

"Buzz~~~"

Chu Feng felt as if he had passed through a spirit formation gate. On one side of the spirit formation gate was the plain. On the other side of the spirit formation gate was the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground.

Chu Feng also managed to enter the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground.

"We're actually really able to enter it?" Seeing this, a smile covered Chu Youyuan's aged face. Not only was he happy, but he also had a slightly complacent expression on his face.

After all, the barrier that so many people had failed to breach was actually breached by him. With this, how could he not be proud of himself?

With the smile on his face, Chu Youyuan also began to walk toward the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground.

"Bang~~~"

However, when Chu Youyuan walked over, he reacted as if he had encountered a wall, and was knocked back.

"What is going on?" Seeing that Chu Youyuan was unable to enter the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground, Chu Feng, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi were all very puzzled. Chu Youyuan himself was also very confused.

Chu Youyuan attempted to enter the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground again. However, like before, he was still unable to pass through that formless barrier.

The place that Chu Feng, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi had easily passed through was actually impenetratable to Chu Youyuan.

"Mingchao, come out for a bit," Chu Youyuan said to Ying Mingchao.

Hearing that, Ying Mingchao immediately walked out.

"Try entering it again," Chu Youyuan said.

Ying Mingchao immediately turned around and began to walk toward the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground. He managed to smoothly enter the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground again.

"This..."

At that moment, all four of them were stunned. Confusion filling their eyes.

"It would appear that only this old man is unable to enter it," Chu Youyuan sighed.

"But... why would this be the case?"

"Even if the two seniors are able to enter, what about me? Why am I also able to enter?"

Chu Feng was very confused. Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi were able to enter that place to begin with. Thus, it was reasonable for them to be able to pass through the barrier.

However, this was the first time that Chu Feng had ever been to that place. Yet, he was also able to pass through the barrier. This was truly puzzling.

“It would appear that it is related to that Stairway to Heaven’s vortexes.”

“It’s as I expected. Over the years, many people have encountered the Elf Clan’s Sacred Ground, but were unable to enter it. Thus, how could you all be able to enter it so easily?” Chu Youyuan said with a faint smile on his face.

At that moment, Chu Feng, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi also understood what Chu Youyuan meant by that.

They were able to enter that place not because of Chu Youyuan’s formations. Chu Youyuan simply did not manage to breach the barrier. Else, he would not have been stopped by the barrier.

The reason why Chu Feng, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi were able to enter the Elf Clan’s Sacred Ground was because the three of them were special.

As for their special-ness, it was very likely because of the Stairway to Heaven’s vortexes. Those vortexes might have bestowed some sort of undetectable special power upon them.

It was because of that special power that the three of them were able to enter the Elf Clan’s Sacred Ground.

“Should we attempt some other methods?” Chu Feng said.

“No, forget about it. Over the years, people have attempted all sorts of methods. Yet, they were all unable to enter it. No matter how much I try, it will be useless in the end.”

“Chu Feng, do not worry about this old man. Since you’ve entered it, go and check the place out.”

“However, remember to place safety before everything else. If you discover anything amiss, come out immediately,” Chu Youyuan said.

“Okay. Senior, please wait a moment. This junior will come out quickly,” Chu Feng said.

Afterwards, Chu Feng, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi began to wander around the ravine.

The natural energies in the ravine were truly abundant. The scenery there was also very beautiful.

However, it did not resemble a place that a powerful race had lived in before.

The reason for that was because there were no signs of constructions or previous habitation anywhere. It simply did not resemble a place where humans had resided before, much less a place where an extremely powerful race like the Abyss Elf Clan resided before.

That said, the natural energies there were very abundant. Even Chu Feng was amazed by how abundant the natural energies here there. Unfortunately, for someone like Chu Feng, pure natural energies no longer provided much assistance in making progress in his cultivation.

Chapter 3046 - A Crack

The Elf Clan's Sacred Ground was as Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi had described, and possessed a special sort of restrictive power.

Being inside it, one would not only be unable to fly, but one's power would also be greatly restricted.

That said, Chu Feng was, after all, a Heavenly Immortal. Thus, while he was unable to fly, his body was still very robust.

Thus, even though he was facing an extremely deep ravine, Chu Feng landed at the bottom of the ravine with a mere leap.

"This feeling," upon landing at the bottom, Chu Feng's expression changed.

He actually noticed some abnormal behavior from a treasure within his Cosmos Sack.

Chu Feng immediately took out a bracelet from his Cosmos Sack.

The bracelet he took out was extremely shabby. It was simply akin to scrap metal.

Compared to that bracelet, the Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector on Chu Feng's right hand that resembled a copper bracelet looked much more exquisite.

n/.OVe1B1n

That said, the shabby bracelet possessed a very extraordinary name. It was called the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet.

That Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet was something that Chu Feng had obtained in the Grand Auction Assembly.

Reportedly, the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet possessed heaven-defying power, and contained a special mysteryrealm.

Should one enter the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet, even those with extremely lacking talent for martial cultivation would be granted martial cultivation and nurtured into powerful cultivators.

However, those were merely rumors. At the very least, the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet in Chu Feng's hand simply did not possess that sort of power.

That said, a subtle change was happening to the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet at that moment.

Seeing that Chu Feng immediately took out the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet and began to inspect it upon landing at the bottom of the ravine, Her Lady Queen asked in a confused manner, "Chu Feng, what are you doing? Why are you looking at that?"

"Eggy, it seems like a change is happening to my Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet."

"No, it's not that it seems like, it really is happening," Chu Feng said.

"Change? What sort of change?" Her Lady Queen asked.

"It's difficult to explain. However, it seems that this Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet is capable of guiding me," Chu Feng said.

"Guiding you?" Her Lady Queen's expression changed upon hearing those words. She then asked, "Could it be that your Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet is related to the Abyss Elf Clan?"

"I'm not sure about that. However, I feel that there should be something that is attracting the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet," Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, what’s wrong?” At that moment, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi also leaped down and arrived beside Chu Feng.

The two of them did not know about the conversation between Chu Feng and Her Lady Queen. They were only able to see Chu Feng holding a shabby bracelet in his hand and standing there motionlessly. As such, they thought something was wrong with Chu Feng.

“Seniors, I am fine. Merely, this place might not be as simple as we expected it to be.”

“It is best for the two of you to not enter far into the ravine. Just stay here and wait for me,” Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng was afraid of encountering dangers and being unable to protect Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi.

As Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi were experienced people, they understood Chu Feng’s intention and didn’t want to become a burden to him. Thus, they did not say anything and stayed there, allowing Chu Feng to move forward by himself.

Continuing onward, Chu Feng did not encounter anything special. Even the natural energies remained the same and without change.

However, the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet on Chu Feng’s hand was changing constantly.

Chu Feng felt as if there were some sort of thing calling for the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet. Furthermore, the deeper Chu Feng traveled, the closer he came to the thing that was calling to the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet.

Following the change to the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet was like following a pointer that was telling him to continue forward.

Finally, Chu Feng entered a remote forest.

Actually, instead of calling it remote, it would be more accurate to say that it was somewhat eerie.

Before entering the forest, it did not feel or look any different from all the other locations in the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground.

It was very beautiful, as all of the plants in the forest were very special. Even though those plants did not give off any splendorous light, their outward appearances were already extremely pleasing to look at.

This held true for the trees inside the forest too.

However, the moment Chu Feng entered the forest, an eerie aura immediately assaulted his senses and engulfed him completely.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt as if he was no longer in the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground, and had instead entered a different place. This sort of sensation made Chu Feng feel very uneasy.

However, Chu Feng did not mention anything to Her Lady Queen. Instead, he decided to endure the feeling of unease, this slightly stifling sensation, all by himself. The reason for that was because Chu Feng did not want Her Lady Queen to worry about him.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng, with his temperament, was determined to get to the bottom of this.

As Chu Feng went deeper into the forest, even the trees in the forest changed.

The trees in the forest grew thicker and thicker, and looked more and more sinister.

At a glance, they resembled demon faces.

In fact, Chu Feng even felt as if there were eyes looking at him.

However, no matter how much Chu Feng observed, no matter how much he sensed his surroundings, he was unable to detect any traces of life.

There was simply nothing in the vicinity at all.

Seeing that Chu Feng was looking around incessantly, and even seemed to be tense, Her Lady Queen was unable to contain her curiosity, and asked, "Chu Feng, what's wrong? Did you discover anything?"

"I'm fine. I'm merely feeling a bit lost. However, it's nothing serious," Chu Feng explained.

He was worried that Her Lady Queen would refuse to allow him to continue onward should he inform her of the uneasy, trifling and even strange feeling he was having in that forest.

"Chu Feng, why is it that I'm feeling this place to be somewhat amiss?" Her Lady Queen said.

"What's amiss about this place? It's very normal," Chu Feng said.

"It's difficult to explain. Regardless, I feel this place to be very strange. However, I am unable to explain what's strange about it. In short, you must be careful. Earlier, this Queen felt that the Abyss Elf Clan's disappearance must be because they'd decided to move. After all, there's no trace of them having lived in this place. Thus, they must've deliberately erased all traces of their existence here."

"However, I now suddenly feel that it is not that simple. In short, you must be careful. If you are to feel anything being amiss, you must stop proceeding onward, turn around and leave immediately," Her Lady Queen warned.

At that moment, Chu Feng gasped in his heart at how amazing Her Lady Queen was.

Even though she only shared his vision and hearing, and was unable to sense what he was feeling, Her Lady Queen's observational abilities had revealed to her that the forest was dangerous.

Dangerous, that place was naturally dangerous. Even though it did not give off a very obvious dangerous sensation, the strange sensation it gave off had signaled to Chu Feng how dangerous it was.

Afterwards, Chu Feng continued onward. Ultimately, he discovered a crack in the surface of the forest.

Chapter 3047 - The Treasure's Transformation

The crack appeared to have been created through someone piercing the ground with an enormous sword.

The size of the crack was not very large; it was only ten meters long, and around two meters at its widest.

However, the crack was extremely deep, bottomlessly deep.

Strangest of all, even when using his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng was unable to determine how deep the crack was. Nor was he able to determine where the crack lead.

The destination of the crack was an unknown place.

However, it just so happened that the power calling to the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet originated from none other than that crack.

Thus, even though the crack lead to an unknown location, Chu Feng had no choice but to enter it should he want to check it out.

"Woosh~~~"

Suddenly, Chu Feng waved his hand. Immediately, he sent forth a ray of martial power that entered the surroundings of the crack.

Chu Feng was trying to use his power to forcibly cut open the crack. As long as the crack increased in size, he would naturally be able to see what was in the crack more clearly.

Unfortunately, Chu Feng's attack did not have any effect on the crack.

"Strange. Why would the ground here be this tough? Even with your power, you were actually unable to cause the slightest bit of damage."

"Chu Feng, this place is definitely not an ordinary place. If you are to enter that crack to check things out, you will likely encounter shenanigans."

"You must remember to be careful at all costs. If the situation is to turn amiss, leave immediately," after discovering that the crack on the surface of the ground was extraordinary, Her Lady Queen became curious.

However, Her Lady Queen was still worried for Chu Feng's safety. That was why she reminded Chu Feng to leave immediately should the situation turn amiss.

At that moment, Chu Feng felt unspoken, bitter suffering. He actually wanted to tell Her Lady Queen that the surroundings had been amiss since long ago.
n/-o.(V)-E--l//b))1./n

However, Chu Feng could not tell her that. The reason for that was because he wanted to enter the crack and investigate things. Should he tell her what he was feeling, she would definitely not allow him to take such a risk.

Truth be told, being in such a forest and seeing such a crack in the ground, Chu Feng truly felt that it was not a crack, but rather the entrance to hell.

What awaited Chu Feng could very possibly be countless demons, ghosts and malicious spirits.

However, Chu Feng had no other choice. After all, it was as they said, profit could only be found within dangers.

Furthermore, Chu Feng firmly believed that opportunities and dangers coexisted.

Thus, Chu Feng did not hesitate, and entered the crack.

However, Chu Feng did not jump into the crack directly. The reason for that was because he was truly afraid. If there were really traps inside, Chu Feng would be throwing his life away should he jump into it.

Thus, Chu Feng was slowly climbing down by grabbing onto the walls.

Upon entering the crack, Chu Feng was no longer able to use his Heaven's Eyes and other world spirit techniques.

That place seemed capable of obstructing all sensing abilities.

Chu Feng could only go onward by relying on his own eyesight. Unfortunately, Chu Feng's field of vision was extremely limited; he was only able to see roughly thirty meters away.

Furthermore, after entering that place, that strange sensation grew even stronger.

Being in that place, Chu Feng felt as if there were countless eyes watching him. Furthermore, that sort of feeling was growing more and more intense.

However, there was clearly nothing in his surroundings at all. This caused Chu Feng to feel extremely uneasy.

With the situation being like that, and with his Heaven's Eyes being ineffective, Chu Feng was actually also feeling somewhat uncertain.

At that moment, Chu Feng was only able to make judgements from what he could see with his eyes.

However, his eyes could only see a short distance, and the feeling of being watched was very intense.

Gradually, Chu Feng felt that there were truly a lot of eyes watching him.

Furthermore, the further down he climbed, the larger the crack became.

That crack which had appeared to only be two meters wide at its widest and around ten meters long when looking from the outside, had become so wide that Chu Feng was no longer able to see the opposing wall. Furthermore, as it was bottomlessly deep, it simply resembled an actual abyss.

"This place is simply an abyss. It's too deep," Her Lady Queen gasped.

"Eggy, say, why do you think the Abyss Elf Clan is named the Abyss Elf Clan? Could it be that it's related to this abyss?" Chu Feng asked.

"It's very possible that this place is where the Abyss Elf Clan truly resided." Her Lady Queen said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng felt a chill. Even his hair began to stand on end.

That place simply felt like hell. If the Abyss Elf Clan originated from a place like that, they would either be a demonic race or a race of monstrous beasts.

However, according to Chu Youyuan, the Abyss Elf Clan was a very beautiful race with handsome men and beautiful women. Their bodies also emitted a special sort of temperament.

They innately give off a sort of immortal air.

What came to Chu Feng's mind upon hearing that description was the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm's Ancient Era's Elves.

However, a race like the Ancient Era's Elves was evidently different from a demonic race or a race of monstrous beasts. After all, their appearances were simply too pleasing, and they resembled beings from the world of immortals. As such, how could they be placed together with monstrous beasts or demons?

That said, Chu Feng had also asked Chu Youyuan about the origin of the Abyss Elf Clan.

The reason for that was because the 'Abyss' in their name represented being deep underground. This was a completely opposite concept from celestial fairies or elves that descended from the sky.

Unfortunately, the Abyss Elf Clan had existed way too long ago. As such, no one knew what the origin of the Abyss Elf Clan was.

Even during the time when the Abyss Elf Clan ruled over the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground was a forbidden area that no one was allowed to enter. Furthermore, the Abyss Elf Clan would never bring any of their guests into the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground.

Thus, practically no one had entered the Abyss Elf Clan's territory. At the very most, they would appreciate the beautiful scenery of the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground and feel the intense natural energy emitted by the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground from outside.

"Exactly what is the Abyss Elf Clan? Could it be that they're really a race that crawled out of this deep abyss?"

Chu Feng was growing more and more uneasy. His hair that was standing on end was unable to calm down.

After all, Chu Feng had seen quite a few beings that came from deep underground. For example, there was the Magma Emperor that had nearly destroyed the entire Ancestral Martial Lower Realm. He too was an existence that had come from deep underground.

There was also the Ancient Era's Ferocious Beasts that were sealed deep underground. Those were also murderous and cold-blooded beings.

Thus, the impression Chu Feng had toward existences from deep underground was not good at all.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng felt the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet in his hand start to tremble violently. Following that, Chu Feng was able to sense many strands of strange power flowing out from deep underground. They were being absorbed by the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet.

“Eggy, this Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet of mine is changing. Did you see that? There’s some sort of power here that it can absorb. I feel that my Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet seems to be awakening,” Chu Feng was wild with joy. Even the nervousness and unease he had felt earlier disappeared into thin air.

Chapter 3048 - Frightened

Holding the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet in his hand, Chu Feng was able to clearly sense the change that was occurring in it.

There was no need to mention how precious a treasure the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet was.

It was a most valuable treasure, a heaven-defying treasure that was capable of transforming a group of people that were extremely lacking in talent for martial cultivation into a group of cultivation experts. It was much more valuable than the Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector on Chu Feng’s right wrist.

It was truly a treasure that was capable of bringing forth a bloody war in the martial cultivation world.

Chu Feng was overjoyed. After all, if the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet was able to regain its power, it would be a truly joyous matter for Chu Feng.

Unfortunately, it seemed that the power within the abyss was limited.

At the very least, the power within the abyss at Chu Feng’s current location was limited. *nove.1b*-In

Thus, if Chu Feng wanted to have his Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet continue to absorb more of the abyss’s power, he must continue to descend.

Sure enough, as Chu Feng descended, the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet started to tremble again. Furthermore, its trembling this time around was much more intense than last time. This meant that as Chu Feng continued deeper into the abyss, the intensity of the power within the abyss also increased.

Chu Feng began to speed up his descent. The reason for that was because the power being absorbed by his Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet grew more concentrated the further down he went. In turn, the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet would awaken faster.

“Holy! What is that?!” However, after descending very far into the abyss, Chu Feng’s expression suddenly changed.

He was shocked to discover that there was a corpse floating nearby. That corpse was floating in midair just like that.

That corpse was wearing very grand clothing. However, its body had turned into bones. For martial cultivators that had reached a certain level of cultivation, their bones would be treasures even in death. Their bones would emit a faint brilliance. However, that pile of bones was completely dim and lightless.

Chu Feng had witnessed a scene like that before.

There was only one reason why a pile of bones would end up in such a state. That is, its source energy had been refined, sucked dry by someone.

That said, what was frightening about the pile of bones was most definitely not the fact that its source energies had been sucked dry.

The pile of bones was incomplete. It was lacking an arm and a leg.

Furthermore, there were visible scratch marks on the remains of the bones that were floating in midair.

This meant that the owner of the pile of bones had been tortured to death.

To encounter such a corpse in such an eerie place, how could Chu Feng not be frightened?

“Is that an Abyss Elf?” Her Lady Queen also noticed the corpse.

“I don’t know,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, do not continue downward. This place is extremely fishy,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Let me continue a bit longer. I do not wish to have journeyed here in vain.”

At that moment, Chu Feng’s Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet had stopped absorbing the abyss’s power.

If Chu Feng wanted the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet to continue to absorb power, he would have to descend further.

As such, Chu Feng continued his descent. However, as Chu Feng descended further, he saw more and more corpses.

Originally, Chu Feng was only able to see a single corpse. However, Chu Feng’s field of view was now filled with skeletal remains. Their numbers were so vast that one simply could not determine how many corpses there were.

Furthermore, those corpses were all wearing the same sort of outfit.

Furthermore, some corpses possessed title plates on them. On those title plates were the words: Abyss Elf Clan.

Their title plates verified their identity to Chu Feng. All those skeletal remains belonged to the Abyss Elves.

Chu Feng was unable to understand why they would be floating in the middle of the abyss after death.

However, that was not important. What Chu Feng wanted to know the most was how they had died, and who had killed them.

After all, they were a very powerful clan that even the Starfield Master Realm feared.

Exactly what sort of being was capable of massacring such a powerful race?

Furthermore, they’d done so using such a ruthless method.

“Turns out, the Abyss Elf Clan’s overnight disappearance from the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm was not because they left the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. Rather, they were completely massacred by someone.”

“Exactly who did they provoke? Exactly how enormous of a hatred was it for their enemy to kill them so ruthlessly?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“Clank, clank~~~”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng was able to faintly hear the sound of chains from the deep abyss.

“Chu Feng, why am I hearing the sounds of chains?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“I heard it too. It’s coming from the bottom of the abyss,” Chu Feng said.

“Huuu~~~”

Right after Chu Feng said those words, a boundless suction force emerged from the bottom of the abyss.

That suction power was so strong that all of the skeletal remains in Chu Feng’s field of view were sucked to the bottom of the abyss.

Even Chu Feng felt as if he were about to lose his grip on the wall.

“Chu Feng, this is strange, quick, you have to leave this place. There’s something at the bottom of this abyss. I can tell that thing is definitely not something good. Quickly, run away!” Even Her Lady Queen, who never feared anything, now shouted to Chu Feng nervously.

She was clearly unable to sense anything. Yet, she said that she was able to tell there was something malicious at the bottom. There could only be one explanation for that: intuition. It was Her Lady Queen’s intuition as an Asura World Spirit.

While Her Lady Queen had made her judgement of how dangerous that place was based on her intuition, Chu Feng felt that frightening aura.

After that suction power appeared, Chu Feng felt an extremely dangerous aura enveloping him.

Being enveloped by that aura, Chu Feng no longer felt as if he were in hell. Instead, he was simply actually in hell. Even breathing became very difficult.

With the situation being like that, how could Chu Feng possibly dare continue to hesitate? He immediately unleashed his full power and began to rapidly climb up the wall.

Fortunately, although that suction power was very strong, it was unable to drag Chu Feng down into the abyss. Furthermore, as Chu Feng continued to climb upward, the suction power started growing weaker.

In the end, Chu Feng managed to successfully climb out of the abyss.

At that moment, Chu Feng was dripping with sweat. He noticed that even his legs were shivering.

Very rarely would Chu Feng be scared to such a degree. This time around, he was truly scared.

Chu Feng turned around and discovered that the crack still looked the same as before.

Furthermore, now that he was on the surface, Chu Feng was no longer able to hear those chains, nor was he able to sense that fatal aura. It was as if nothing had ever happened.

However, Chu Feng knew that the danger in that crack was definitely real. There was definitely some sort of frightening existence at the bottom of this abyss.

“Chu Feng, quickly, we must get out of this place,” Her Lady Queen urged.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded.

Then, Chu Feng began to run toward the location where Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi were with his fastest speed.

After finding Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi, Chu Feng immediately brought them out of the ravine without explaining anything.

Chu Feng wanted to quickly find Chu Youyuan and explain what happened in the Elf Clan’s Sacred Ground to him.

“What is that?”

However, right after Chu Feng left the ravine, he was surprised to discover that the plain outside the Elf Clan’s Sacred Ground...

...had changed!!!

Chapter 3049 - True Calamity

What had changed was not the plain. Rather, it was the sky above the plain.

An enormous vortex had appeared in the blue sky, above the white clouds .

That vortex was so enormous that it actually covered half of the sky, making it impossible to not notice it.

Furthermore, that vortex was very strange; it was actually dark black. As the vortex spun, the surrounding space was being distorted. That dark black vortex seemed capable of engulfing everything.

At a glance, it was very frightening.

“Chu Feng, you’ve come out. How was it, did you make any discoveries inside?” Chu Youyuan noticed the return of Chu Feng, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi.

“Mn, Lord Youyuan, I’ve made an enormous discovery,” Chu Feng said.

“What sort of discovery?” Chu Youyuan asked.

“The Abyss Elf Clan were completely massacred,” Chu Feng said.

“They were massacred?” Hearing those words, Chu Youyuan’s expression changed.

“That’s right. I saw their remains. They died miserably. They were tortured to death.”

“However, what’s most important is that there is some sort of frightening being at the depths of the Elf Clan’s Sacred Ground. I am uncertain if that frightening being was the criminal behind the massacre of the Abyss Elf Clan.”

“However, I am certain that frightening being was emitting the Ancient Era’s aura. It’s very possible for that thing to be an existence from the Ancient Era,” Chu Feng said.

“There’s actually such a thing?” Upon hearing those words, Chu Youyuan frowned and started to ponder.

“Milord, we must leave this place quickly. I am uncertain if that thing will chase after us,” Chu Feng said.

“You don’t have to worry about that. The Elf Clan’s Sacred Ground has existed for such a long time, if there really is a frightening existence from the Ancient Era inside, it would’ve already come out and massacred the people of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm should it have wanted to. There’s no reason for it to have waited till now.”

“In other words, if it truly possessed the power to massacre the Abyss Elf Clan, you would not have been able to return alive. Even if we are to flee now, we would not be able to flee,” Chu Youyuan said.

Hearing Chu Youyuan’s words, Chu Feng felt that they were very reasonable.

If the being at the bottom of the abyss was truly the culprit behind the Abyss Elf Clan’s massacre, truly no one would be able to stop it should it want to unleash such a massacre again.

Unless... it too was powerless at present. In other words, even if it wanted to unleash a massacre, it would not be able to. After all... it was trapped.

Otherwise, why would there have been the sounds of chains?

Merely, who could possibly seal a being that powerful?

Chu Feng’s heart was filled with questions.

“Milord, in that case, what is going on here?” Suddenly, Chu Feng pointed at the enormous black vortex in the sky above.

“That... is likely a calamity to our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm,” Chu Youyuan’s frown grew even deeper as he looked to the sky.

“Calamity?”

“Milord, exactly what is going on?” Chu Feng grew even more worried.

For Chu Youyuan to describe that dark black vortex as a ‘calamity’ revealed how dangerous that vortex was.

“That vortex is called the Upper Realm Gate,” Chu Youyuan said.

“Upper Realm Gate?” This was the first time Chu Feng had heard of such a thing.

“The Upper Realm Gate is a giant gate that connects the various Upper Realms.”

“Reportedly, during the Ancient Era, every Upper Realm in the Ancestral Martial Starfield possessed multiple Upper Realm Gates, with each connected to a different Upper Realm.” *no ve-ℓb/1n*

“At that time, practically all of the Upper Realms in the Ancestral Martial Starfield were interconnected.”

“Later on, for some unknown reason, the Upper Realms Gates closed. Just like the Ancient Era, the closure of the Upper Realm Gates was a riddle to us.”

“That said, occasionally, Upper Realm Gates would open again. Furthermore, whenever a Upper Realm Gate opened, it would never disappear again,” Chu Youyuan said.

“In other words, that is a gate leading to another Upper Realm?” Chu Feng asked.

“That is correct,” Chu Youyuan nodded.

“In that case, why did you say that it’s a calamity?” Chu Feng asked.

“After the Ancient Era, the Upper Realm Gates rarely opened in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.”

“However, as long as an Upper Realm Gate opened, it would connect the two Upper Realms.”

“However... a single world can only tolerate a single overlord.”

“It would be one thing if the other side of this gate were an Upper Realm inferior to our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. However, if it’s an Upper Realm stronger than our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, then our Chu Heavenly Clan’s status as the overlord of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm might change hands,” Chu Youyuan said.

“There’s actually such a thing?” Chu Feng also started to frown upon hearing those words.

Although Chu Feng disliked a great majority of the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan, it remained that the Chu Heavenly Clan was his clan, his family. It was also his father and grandfather’s clan, their family.

The Chu Heavenly Clan was only able to achieve their current accomplishments thanks to their Old Ancestor, Chu Yetianhong.

If something were to truly happen to the Chu Heavenly Clan, it would definitely not be something that Chu Feng would wish to see. Furthermore, Chu Feng firmly believed that it would also not be something that his father and grandfather would want to see.

“But... is the ruler of the Ancestral Martial Starfield going to ignore this?”

“Are they really going to turn a blind eye and allow two Upper Realms to fight one another to the death?” Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng felt that, as the ruler, the overlord, of the entire Starfield, the so-called Starfield Master Realm should be responsible for the peace of the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

They should not allow the Ancestral Martial Starfield to enter troubled times where Upper Realms could campaign against other Upper Realms.

“On the surface, they will concern themselves with this sort of thing. However, they will actually turn a blind eye, and not really do anything about it.”

“Do not forget that battle is the nature of martial cultivators. If cultivators do not fight, and the world became peaceful, how many people would be willing to pursue strength?” Chu Youyuan said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng nodded. He was unable to refute those words.

“Milord, in that case, what should we do?” Chu Feng asked.

“We can only hope for the ruler of the other side of this Upper Realm Gate to be weaker than our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. Otherwise... this battle is likely inevitable,” Chu Youyuan said.

“Must we resign ourselves to fate?” Chu Feng greatly disliked resigning things to fate. Unfortunately, he was powerless to do anything in such a situation.

For an Upper Realm Gate to suddenly appear was simply the will of heaven.

As such, they could only resign themselves to fate as to whether or not the Upper Realm Gate would bring fortune or misfortune.

With the situation being like that, Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan could only gaze at the Upper Realm Gate before them.

They did not possess extravagant hopes that the Upper Realm Gate would bring good news after it opened. They merely hoped for it to not bring bad news.

“Chu Feng, do not worry too much about this. What if the other side of the Upper Realm Gate is an Upper Realm that is weaker than your Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm? If that’s the case, wouldn’t your Chu Heavenly Clan’s territory increase in size?” Her Lady Queen comforted Chu Feng. She was able to tell that Chu Feng was worried about the Chu Heavenly Clan’s safety.

“That’s also possible. Let’s hope that’s the case,” Chu Feng said.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, the central region of that dark black vortex started to change. It was no longer pitch black. A light was emerging from that place.

At that moment, Chu Feng and Chu Youyuan’s eyes became very stern.

They knew that the Upper Realm Gate was about to open completely.

They also knew that they would soon find out which Upper Realm was located on the other side of the Upper Realm Gate.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 3050 - Li Heavenly Clan - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 3050 - Li Heavenly Clan

Chapter 3050 - Li Heavenly Clan

The light in the center of the Upper Realm Gate was changing nonstop.

Originally, it was white. Gradually, it started to form an image. Like a mirror, it reflected an image.

However, the image reflected by the mirror was not the plain that Chu Feng and the others were standing on. Instead, it was someplace else.

"Could it be that... that is the other Upper Realm?" Chu Feng already had his guesses in mind. Merely, he was unable to be certain.

"It would appear that the heavens want to bring ruin upon our Chu Heavenly Clan," Compared to Chu Feng's uncertainty, Chu Youyuan's face turned pale upon seeing the image reflected by that mirror. Fear filled his face.

"Milord, could it be that you know which Upper Realm that is?" Chu Feng asked.

"That is the Great Li Upper Realm. It is the Upper Realm governed by the Li Heavenly Clan," Chu Youyuan said.

"Is the Li Heavenly Clan really powerful?" Chu Feng asked.

"The Li Heavenly Clan is one of the Ten Great Heavenly Clans in the Ancestral Martial Starfield. They are stronger than our Chu Heavenly Clan," Chu Youyuan said.

"This..." Hearing those words, Chu Feng started to frown.

Looking at Chu Youyuan's reaction, Chu Feng was able to guess that the Li Heavenly Clan should be very powerful.

Otherwise, Chu Youyuan would not be so nervous.

Merely, Chu Feng had not expected the Li Heavenly Clan to be one of the Ancestral Martial Starfield's Ten Great Heavenly Clans.

Furthermore, judging by Chu Youyuan's behavior, Chu Feng was able to guess that their Chu Heavenly Clan was likely not among the so-called Ten Great Heavenly Clans.

"Li Heavenly Clan?"

"Chu Feng, could that possibly be the Heavenly Clan that Li Yue'er belongs to?" Suddenly, Her Lady Queen's skeptical voice sounded from beside Chu Feng's ears.

"Li Yue'er, was it?" Chu Feng was surprised upon hearing Her Lady Queen's words.

He suddenly recalled the little beauty, the girl who had dressed up as a man in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm and proclaimed herself to be Young Master Li Ming.

Back then, Li Yue'er had declared that she would enter the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm to train.

However, after Chu Feng arrived in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, he had heard no news regarding Li Yue'er, nor did he hear any news regarding Young Master Li Ming.

There could only be two possible explanations. One, Li Yue'er had entered closed-door training after arriving in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

As for the other, it would be that she simply did not arrive in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

Otherwise, it would be impossible for someone of Li Yue'er's talent to not cause a sensation after arriving in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

That said, whether or not Li Yue'er arrived in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm was actually insignificant to Chu Feng. As long as she was safe, Chu Feng would be at ease.

After all, that girl Li Yue'er could be considered to have a friendly relationship with Chu Feng. In fact, when Chu Feng was suffering from the backlash of his Evil God Sword, it was that girl who had helped him, and saved him from his crisis.

As such, Li Yue'er could be considered to be Chu Feng's benefactor.

Furthermore, Li Yue'er's strength could not be underestimated either. Chu Feng felt that Li Yue'er's talent would not only shine in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. He felt that even if she were placed in the Upper Realms or the entire Starfield, she would still become everyone's focus.

That said, compared to Li Yue'er's personal talent, Chu Feng was also quite interested in her background.

After all, based on the various abilities and treasures that girl possessed, her background was definitely extraordinary.

That Li Heavenly Clan might very possibly be Li Yue'er's clan.

"Milord, I still wish to know exactly how powerful the Li Heavenly Clan is. How enormous of a disparity does our Chu Heavenly Clan have when compared to them?" Chu Feng asked.

As the saying goes, 'know yourself, know your enemy, and you will be ever-victorious.' Since the Li Heavenly Clan would very likely become their Chu Heavenly Clan's greatest enemy, Chu Feng must make certain of their strength.

"Being one of the Ten Great Heavenly Clans is already sufficient to prove how powerful the Li Heavenly Clan is. That said, we actually also do not know exactly how strong the Li Heavenly Clan's peak experts are right now."

"After all, they've been in closed-door training the entire time."

"That said, whilst our Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations are still competing with our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm as their stage, the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations are already demonstrating their extraordinary talent with the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield as their stage."

"Merely by the disparity in the younger generations' strength, you will be able to understand how vast a disparity exists between our Chu Heavenly Clan and the Li Heavenly Clan."

"Chu Feng, let's take you for example. With your current strength, you should be fully deserving of the title of being the strongest younger generation in our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm."

"However, if you are to be compared to the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations, you will still be significantly weaker."

"This is especially true for that Li Heavenly Clan's Li Ming. Back then, he was even deemed to be an existence capable of becoming the next Chu Xuanyuan," Chu Youyuan gasped with admiration.

"Li Ming?" Chu Feng's heart immediately moved upon hearing those words. Li Ming, wasn't that the name Li Yue'er had used in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?

Furthermore, during Chu Feng's previous conversation with Li Yue'er, he had noticed that the name Li Ming held great importance to her.

This meant that the person named Li Ming had a special significance to Li Yue'er.

"Lord Youyuan, has that Li Ming ever used the name Young Master Li Ming?" Chu Feng asked.

"Chu Feng, could it be that you know him?" Chu Youyuan's eyes immediately changed upon hearing Chu Feng's question.

"I don't know him," Chu Feng said.

"In that case, how did you know that Li Ming used the title Young Master Li Ming before? Logically, not many people should know about this matter," Chu Youyuan asked.

"I have a friend. She used the title Young Master Li Ming and proclaimed herself to be Li Ming," Chu Feng said.

"Your friend?" Hearing those words, Chu Youyuan's eyes started to shine even brighter.

"It's impossible for that friend of mine to really be Li Ming. After all, she is a woman, and her strength is nowhere as powerful as what Lord Youyuan has described Li Ming's strength to be," Chu Feng said.

"Oh, this old man remembers now. You're talking about that girl with some relationship to you in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, right?"

"This head of mine, I actually forgot about that," Chu Youyuan patted his forehead with an expression of sudden realization.

"Senior, you know about that girl?" Chu Feng asked.

"This old man deliberately investigated what you experienced in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Thus, I've also investigated that girl."

"That said, that girl has concealed her identity extremely well. However, she would not have used the title Young Master Li Ming without reason."

"If this old man has guessed right, she should be Li Ming's younger sister, Li Yue'er," Chu Youyuan said.

After hearing those words, Chu Feng's heart jolted. Hearing till this point, even the names fit one another. This had practically verified Li Yue'er's identity.

That said, Chu Feng wanted to make a final verification. Thus, he continued to ask, "In that case, that girl is also a member of the Li Heavenly Clan?"

"That's right. Since she's Li Ming's younger sister, she would naturally be a Li Heavenly Clansman," Chu Youyuan said.

After saying those words, Chu Youyuan sighed. He said, "Speaking of it, that girl is quite a pitiful person."

Chapter 3051 - Controlling Fate

"Pitiful person?"

"Milord, could it be that Li Yue'er experienced something in her past?"

"Might you be willing to inform this junior about it?" Chu Feng hurriedly asked concernedly upon hearing those words.

After all, Chu Feng and Li Yue'er were friends. Thus, Chu Feng would naturally be concerned about Li Yue'er.

"Not only does Li Yue'er possess a biological older brother called Li Ming, but she also possesses an older sister called Li Ruochu."

"Li Ruochu was the oldest of the three siblings, and Li Yue'er was the youngest."

“Unfortunately, on the day Li Yue’er was born, her parents ended up passing away.”

“Because of that, it was Li Ruochu who raised Li Ming and Li Yue’er.”

“The three siblings have an extremely good relationship. Reportedly, Li Ruochu left for another Upper Realm to train when Li Yue’er was five years old, and suddenly disappeared. From that point on, there has been no news from her at all. Because of that, people all say that she has died.”

“After their older sister disappeared, the two siblings no longer had any backing, and started receiving cold treatment from their clansmen.”

“Fortunately, Li Ming was a person with outstanding talent. Soon, he became a target for nurture by the Li Heavenly Clan. Li Ming did not fail to live up to the expectations placed upon him. Although he was very young, he became the Li Heavenly Clan’s number one person amongst the younger generations.”

“Unfortunately, heaven is jealous of heroic geniuses. In a training session, Li Ming unfortunately met his demise,” Chu Youyuan said.

“Li Ming died?” Chu Feng was very shocked. He did not expect for Li Ming to have died.

“That’s right. Compared to Li Ruochu who had disappeared, Li Ming had truly died.”

“Li Ming’s death came as a massive shock to Li Yue’er. Like the final straw, his death overwhelmed her.”

“Reportedly, she has attempted suicide so as to be together with her older sister and brother multiple times,” Chu Youyuan said.

“If that’s the case, that girl Li Yue’er is truly pitiful,” Her Lady Queen sighed.

“That’s right,” after knowing about Li Yue’er’s history, Chu Feng also felt very pained for her.

Compared to Li Yue’er, Chu Feng felt that he was extremely fortunate.

Although Chu Feng was also not raised by his biological parents, his parents were, at the very least, still alive. n)-OvElbln

Yet, Li Yue'er's parents died right after she was born. Furthermore, her older sister and older brother that she had relied on after her parents' deaths also died in succession.

Moreover, a powerful clan like the Li Heavenly Clan most definitely had many factions. Likely, very few people in the clan truly considered Li Yue'er to be their relative.

Since Li Yue'er was raised by her older sister and older brother, it meant that Li Yue'er did not possess any actual close relatives in the Li Heavenly Clan. Otherwise, there would be no reason for her older siblings to be the ones raising her.

It was no wonder that Li Yue'er would not be able to endure the shock of her older siblings' deaths, and decided to attempt suicide.

"Buzz~~~"

Right at that moment, the rotation speed of the Upper Realm Gate started to slow down. Gradually, that Upper Realm Gate began to open.

"The Li Heavenly Clan is not an enemy our Chu Heavenly Clan can defeat. This is truly a calamity for our clan."

Chu Youyuan turned his eyes upward again. Seeing the Upper Realm Gate that was soon to open, he sighed. His eyes were filled with melancholy and unease.

Then, he actually turned his eyes to Chu Feng and said, "Chu Feng, perhaps the fate of our clan will lie in your hands."

"Me?" Chu Feng was startled upon hearing those words. Then, he asked, "Lord Youyuan, what could I possibly do?"

"Reportedly, the Upper Realm Gate's opening happens gradually."

"During the initial stages of its opening, only the younger generation below a hundred years of age will be able to pass through it. Following that will be thousand year-old experts and then ten thousand year-old elderly cultivators."

“Thus, after that gate opens, you will be able to enter it.”

“Reportedly, there is a formation inside the Upper Realm Gate. If one can destroy that formation, one will be able to slow down the Upper Realm Gate’s opening speed.”

“Although it will not be able to completely close the Upper Realm Gate, it will at least provide our Chu Heavenly Clan time to prepare.”

“Unfortunately, it seems to be the will of the heavens. The other side of the Upper Realm Gate is within the Li Heavenly Clan’s territory. I believe the Li Heavenly Clan will soon notice the Upper Realm Gate.”

“The Li Heavenly Clan also knows about the Upper Realm Gates very well. Likely, they will immediately dispatch their younger generations into the Upper Realm Gate. As for the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations, they are most definitely not people that our Great Chilocosm Upper Realm’s younger generations could possibly compare against.”

“Thus, if you are to enter it, it would be extremely dangerous.”

“Chu Feng, are you willing to enter it?”

“If you are not, this old man will definitely not force you,” Chu Youyuan said to Chu Feng.

“Lord Youyuan, this junior is willing,” Chu Feng said.

Chu Youyuan’s eyes became fixed upon hearing Chu Feng’s answer. He was surprised.

Evidently, he had not expected Chu Feng to agree to it so frankly. He simply had no hesitation at all.

After all, their Chu Heavenly Clan had been extremely unfriendly toward Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, with the Chu Heavenly Clan’s treatment towards you, you’re still willing to brave dangers for the Chu Heavenly Clan?” Chu Youyuan asked.

“My father once said to me that no matter what, we still belong to the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“It is only a small portion of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s clansmen that hold hostility towards my father and I. It is not the Chu Heavenly Clan itself.”

“Moreover, there are also people that truly care for me in the Chu Heavenly Clan. For example, there’s senior Chu Xuanzhengfa and you, Lord Youyuan.”

“Thus, even if it’s not for my own sake, for your sake, Lord Youyuan, for senior Chu Xuanzhengfa’s sake, and for Chu Lingxi’s sake, I, Chu Feng, will enter that Upper Realm Gate today,” Chu Feng said.

After hearing what Chu Feng said, Chu Youyuan became emotional.

“To be able to distinguish between gratitude and grudges, you are a man of character.”

“Chu Feng, please accept this old man’s respect,” suddenly, Chu Youyuan knelt on the ground.

That person who was comparable to the Supreme Elders in the Chu Heavenly Clan was actually kowtowing to Chu Feng.

“Lord Youyuan, you must not do this. Please, quickly get up,” Chu Feng hurriedly stepped forward. He wanted to pull Chu Youyuan back up.

Unfortunately, with a thought from Chu Youyuan, a barrier appeared before Chu Feng. Chu Feng was simply unable to approach Chu Youyuan, much less help him up.

Chapter 3052 - The Other Side Of The Gate

“Chu Feng, you are like your father, you are both actual heroes of our clan.”

“This bow of respect is not something that this old man is doing for himself.”

“Rather, this old man is representing the Chu Heavenly Clan and bowing to you.”

“You must accept this.”

After saying those words, Chu Youyuan began to kowtow to Chu Feng repeatedly.

After a series of kowtows, Chu Youyuan got back up.

“Lord Youyuan, this...”

At that moment, Chu Feng was at a loss as for what to do.

If it were someone else kowtowing to him, Chu Feng would not say anything, and would even accept it.

However, Chu Youyuan did not owe him anything. On the contrary, Chu Youyuan was Chu Feng’s benefactor.

Chu Feng was truly incapable of accepting kowtows from someone like Chu Youyuan.

That said, whilst Chu Feng had an ashamed expression on his face, Chu Youyuan had a very worry-free expression.

“Chu Feng, bring this with you. At crucial moments, it will be able to protect your life,” Chu Youyuan handed a talisman to Chu Feng.

That talisman was formed with world spirit power. Judging by its appearance, the talisman paper seemed to be quite ancient. It was most definitely not something created by an ordinary world spiritist.

Furthermore, the talisman was extremely powerful. It was a protective talisman, and was capable of protecting Chu Feng’s life. Chu Feng felt that if he were to use the talisman, no one below the Martial Immortal realm would be able to cause him any harm.

With such a talisman in hand, even if Chu Feng were to encounter younger generations of the Li Heavenly Clan who were stronger than him inside the Upper Realm Gate, they would not be able to injure him either.

While Chu Feng believed that his strength was still very lacking, he also firmly believed that the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations, regardless of how powerful they might be, would definitely not possess the cultivation of Martial Immortals.

“Milord, if what you’ve said is true, this Chu Feng will definitely complete his mission,” Chu Feng received the talisman and made a promise to Chu Youyuan.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, a small gap opened at the center of the Upper Realm Gate.

That gap was very small. It was only large enough for a single person to pass through. However, that gap was slowly expanding in size. Judging by the current speed of expansion, that gap would expand to a size capable of allowing ten people to pass through in an hour.

“Senior, if I am to encounter the Li Heavenly Clansmen inside, how should I respond?” Chu Feng asked.

“Although there are no conflicts between our clan and the Li Heavenly Clan, with the appearance of this gate, our two clans will inevitably battle one another.”

“If you are to encounter the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations, it would be best if you could reach a peaceful settlement. However, if you cannot, then your own safety is the number one priority. As for them, try your best to not kill them. However, if you are faced with no other choice, you can go ahead and kill them,” Chu Youyuan said.

“This junior understands,” after saying those words, Chu Feng soared into the sky and flew toward the Upper Realm Gate.

The moment Chu Feng passed through the Upper Realm Gate, Chu Feng was able to tell that the Upper Realm Gate truly possessed a formless power that was sealing the gate.

Likely, that power should be the age restriction that Chu Youyuan had spoken of.

Chu Feng was a person of the younger generation within a hundred years of age. Thus, that power was unable to stop him. However, for people like Chu Youyuan and Ying Mingchao, they would most likely be stopped by that formless power.

“Upper Realm Gate?”

“How powerful of an expert does one need to be to create such a grand formation?”

Chu Feng was surprised. When looking from outside the Upper Realm Gate, one would feel the Li Heavenly Clan's Upper Realm to be extremely close to them.

However, upon entering the Upper Realm Gate, what appeared before Chu Feng was a deep formation tunnel.

That tunnel was very deep. One could not see its end at all. Chu Feng felt that, even with his speed, he would have to travel for quite some time to reach the other end of the tunnel.

That place greatly resembled the Heavenly Road connecting the Eastern Sea Region to the Holy Land of Martialism.

However, its scale and power was a day and night difference.

The Heavenly Road was merely a path through a formation border.

As for the Upper Realm Gate, it connected two Upper Realms in the vast starry sky.

The Upper Realm Gate was extremely powerful. That was the reason why Chu Feng would gasp with admiration after entering it.

That said, whilst he was feeling admiration, Chu Feng knew very well what his mission there was. His mission concerned the continued existence of their Chu Heavenly Clan.

Thus, upon entering the Upper Realm Gate, Chu Feng immediately started flying deep into the tunnel.

Furthermore, Chu Feng had unleashed his sensing abilities, and was also using his world spirit techniques to observe his surroundings.

Chu Feng was trying to find the main formation of the Upper Realm Gate.

The Upper Realm Gate's main formation was actually not that hard to find.

Not long after traveling inside the Upper Realm Gate, Chu Feng determined the location of the main formation through the flow of power within the Upper Realm Gate.

It was likely located at the center of the Upper Realm Gate.

Thus, Chu Feng immediately unleashed his full strength and began flying deep into the Upper Realm Gate.

Sure enough, Chu Feng discovered a grand formation in the center of the tunnel.

That was the main formation of the Upper Realm Gate.

Through his Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng quickly determined the method to destroy the main formation and slow down the operation of the Upper Realm Gate.

However, Chu Feng did not immediately set up that spirit formation. Instead, he took several medicinal pellets and then began to set up another spirit formation.

The medicinal pellets Chu Feng took out were capable of strengthening his spirit power.

The effect of those medicinal pellets were very fierce. It was no different from taking Forbidden Medicines, as those medicinal pellets would give him a backlash.

However, Chu Feng had no other choice. He believed that the Li Heavenly Clan must've discovered the Upper Realm Gate already.

Soon, the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations would enter the Upper Realm Gate.

Because of that, Chu Feng was in a race against time.

Meanwhile, a lot of people were gathered on the other side of the Upper Realm Gate.

Those people were all members of the Li Heavenly Clan.

Chapter 3053 - Li Heavenly Clan's Argument

Chu Youyuan was simply unable to see the Li Heavenly Clan's army gathered on the other side of the Upper Realm Gate.

Likewise, even though Chu Youyuan, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi were standing on the plain, the people from the Li Heavenly Clan were only able to see the plain, and not Chu Youyuan and the others.

It turned out that the image shown by the Upper Realm Gate was only there to inform both sides of where the other side of the Upper Realm Gate was connected to. It did not show images of anyone on the other side.

At that moment, more and more people were gathering on the Li Heavenly Clan's side. It was not only the younger generations; the majority of them were actually people of the older generation.

Leading them were a man and a woman, both elderly.

Both of them were extremely old, so old that all of their teeth had fallen out of their mouths. Their skin was filled with so many folds that it was scary to look at. Not only were they unable to stand straight, but the amount of hair on their heads was also extremely sparse.

Their appearance simply resembled dying people that had walked out of their tombs.

That said, the two of them possessed extremely robust auras. Their auras were much stronger than Chu Youyuan and the Chu Heavenly Clan's Supreme Elders.

"Milord and Milady, Lord Clan Chief is currently still in closed-door training. How should we handle this matter?"

"Milord, Milady, this matter concerns our Li Heavenly Clan's continued existence. Please make a decision."

Suddenly, the people behind the old man and the old woman all kneeled uniformly on the ground.

They were not people of the younger generation or people with ordinary status. Instead, they were all the Li Heavenly Clan's elders. They were people that possessed both strength and status.

However, at that moment, they were extremely worried, so worried that they began to question the two elderly people.

“What’s there to be nervous about? No matter what, our Li Heavenly Clan is one of the Ancestral Martial Starfield’s Ten Great Heavenly Clans.”

“It is merely the opening of an Upper Realm Gate, how could you all be this scared of it?”

“What a disgrace!”

The old lady coldly berated the crowd behind her. Her shout caused the surrounding space to tremble.

After being berated by the old lady, everyone from the Li Heavenly Clan immediately shut their mouths.

It turned out that the Li Heavenly Clan still had no idea which Upper Realm was on the other side of the Upper Realm Gate.

Because of that, they were also worrying, worrying that the other side of the Upper Realm Gate would be a power stronger than their Li Heavenly Clan. Should that happen, the opening of the Upper Realm Gate would be extremely detrimental to them.

At that moment, the old man and the old woman were both holding a scroll in their hands. Contained within those scrolls was a formation. Following the movement of their eyes, the scrolls began to change. Gradually, one could tell that they were maps.

Suddenly, the old man put the scroll in his hand away, looked at the Upper Realm Gate above and said, “It’s determined, that is the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm ruled by the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

Following that, the old lady also put her scroll away and said, “Indeed, that is the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.”

Different from the old man, when that old lady determined the other side of the Upper Realm Gate to be the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, the corners of her mouth lifted into a smile.

It was not merely a smile of ease. Rather, it was a smile of joy.

Upon hearing what the two Supreme Elders said, everyone from the Li Heavenly Clan, regardless of whether they were old or young, all revealed ecstatic expressions.

Their mouths were blooming with the same sort of smile as that old lady.

“The Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, it’s actually the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm ruled by the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“The heavens are helping us, truly the heavens are helping us. The heavens want our Li Heavenly Clan to expand our territory.”

Overjoyed, many people started laughing and began to make arrogant declarations. It was as if the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm was already theirs.

At that moment, several of the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations asked, “Milords, in that case, we don’t need to enter the Upper Realm Gate and alter the main formation inside, right?” n..0V**eIb1n**

They were eight people, five men and three women.

The men all possessed impressive and handsome appearances. As for the women, they were all beauties.

As for their cultivations, they were even more outstanding. They were all Heavenly Immortals.

They had gathered there for the same purpose as Chu Feng. If it was determined that the other side of the Upper Realm Gate was an Upper Realm that their Li Heavenly Clan was no match for, they would immediately dispatch those eight people of the younger generation and have them find and destroy the Upper Realm Gate’s main formation so as to slow down the operation of the Upper Realm Gate, giving them time to prepare for the invasion.

But now that they’d discovered the other side of the Upper Realm Gate to be a power inferior to their Li Heavenly Clan, those younger generations felt that there was no need for them to enter it anymore.

“You all must still enter the Upper Realm Gate. As we have discovered the Upper Realm Gate, it is also possible for the Chu Heavenly Clan to have discovered the Upper Realm Gate.”

“The legends regarding the Upper Realm Gates are not only known to our Li Heavenly Clan; the Chu Heavenly Clan also knows about it.”

“If they have determined that the Upper Realm connected to their Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm is our Li Heavenly Clan’s, they will definitely dispatch their younger generations to destroy the main formation,” That Li Heavenly Clan’s old lady said.

“In that case, Lady Supreme Elder, should we enter right now?” The younger generations asked.

“Is there even a need to ask? Quickly, enter immediately,” That old lady ordered.

Hearing those words, the eight people of the younger generation immediately prepared themselves to enter the Upper Realm Gate.

“Wait,” However, right at this moment, the old man waved his hand and said, “Although our Li Heavenly Clan and the Chu Heavenly Clan do not possess a very friendly relationship, we have no conflict with one another either.”

“Although the opening of the Upper Realm Gate means that our Li Heavenly Clan is destined to be neighbors with the Chu Heavenly Clan, it does not mean that we must necessarily seize the Chu Heavenly Clan’s territory by force.”

“Thus, we should let nature take its course.”

“Let nature take its course?” Hearing those words, the old lady’s mouth turned crooked. She said, “Are we to miss out on such a great opportunity?”

“Great opportunity? What sort of great opportunity are you speaking of?” That old man asked.

“It would naturally be the opportunity to occupy the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm and expand our Li Heavenly Clan’s territory,” That old woman said.

“Why must we expand our territory?”

“We are two different Upper Realms, two different planets. What’s wrong with us each doing our own things? Must we absolutely determine the victor and loser?” The old man asked.

“Us each doing our own things? Your way of thinking is truly optimistic.”

“Let me ask, if the other side of the Upper Realm Gate were not the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, but instead an Upper Realm stronger than our Li Heavenly Clan’s Upper Realm, would they be willing to let us each do our own thing?! Would they be willing to let us go?!” The old lady asked loudly.

Chapter 3054 - Li Ruochu

“What others will do is their business. It does not mean that our Li Heavenly Clan should act like others,” That old man said.

“Humph, you are truly soft-hearted,” The old lady was extremely displeased. She then turned to those eight people of the younger generation, “What are you all standing there for? Quickly, enter it.”

Right after that old lady said those words, that old man said, “Wait! Since when has this old man allowed you all to enter?”

At that moment, the old lady grew furious. She shouted at the old man, “Exactly what are you trying to do?!”

“Even if the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations are to enter it and destroy the main formation, they will only be able to slow the opening of the Upper Realm Gate, and will be unable to close it. Thus, the two Upper Realms becoming connected is inevitable. No one will be able to change it.”

“Thus, you having them enter it is simply superfluous.”

“Furthermore, we will have to wait for Lord Clan Chief to decide if we will actually wage war against the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. You do not have the authority to decide this matter,” The old man said.

“If we are to miss the opportunity to invade the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, are you capable of taking responsibility?” The old lady asked.

“This old man will take responsibility,” The old man said.

“Bullshit, you are incapable of taking responsibility,” The old lady actually cursed out loud. It would appear that she was truly enraged by the old man.

Then, she looked to the eight people of the younger generation again. She said, "I've said it already, go in there and prevent the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations from destroying the Upper Realm Gate's main formation! Are you all deaf or what?!"

"This..." At that moment, those eight people of the younger generation looked to that old man and revealed difficult expressions on their faces.

After all, both the old lady and the old man were their Li Heavenly Clan's Supreme Elders. They were both people that they did not wish to offend.

"Let us not make things difficult for the children. Since we are unable to make a decision on this matter, let us have all the elders vote on the decision."

"Those who agree to enter the Upper Realm Gate shall step forward. The decision shall go with the majority," The old man seemed to not want to place those eight people of the younger generation in a difficult situation, and thus came to such a decision.

After saying those words, ninety percent of the elders that were kneeling behind him and the old lady actually took a step forward.

It turned out that only ten percent of the elders felt that they should not enter the Upper Realm Gate.

"Haha, what else do you have to say now?" Seeing this, the old lady was immediately overjoyed.

As for the old man, he revealed a displeased expression. Sighing very helplessly, he said, "You all, you're truly foolish."

"Lady Supreme Elder, if we are to encounter the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations, how shall we handle them?"

At that moment, the man with the strongest strength among the eight people of the younger generation turned to ask the old lady.

"Battle is imminent. There is no need to be lenient. If you are to encounter the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations, kill them," The old lady said.

"Don't," The old man said.

"Follow my order!" The old lady shouted.

“Yes, Milady.” The eight people of the younger generations clasped their fists and answered in unison.

After those elders made their opinions regarding the matter clear, the eight people of the younger generation all unilaterally decided to listen to the old lady’s orders when faced with a decision between the two Supreme Elders’ orders.

“You all... you’re all fools,” Seeing this, the old man became extremely displeased.

The eight people of the younger generation hesitated no more. One by one, they leapt into the air and flew toward the Upper Realm Gate.

“If you all are to encounter the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations, beating them back is enough. Do not kill them.”

Right at that moment, a female voice suddenly sounded from nearby.

Looking toward the voice, the crowd saw that a woman was standing nearby.

That woman was wearing a long red skirt. She had a head of long black hair. Her hair was so long that it reached the end of her skirt, and was fluttering in the air together with her skirt.

That woman was extremely beautiful. Before her, all of the other beauties present lost their splendor.

If one were to pay close attention, one would notice that this woman’s appearance resembled Li Yue’er’s.

“Li Ruochu, who are you to disobey my order?!” Seeing the woman standing in the air, the old lady spoke in a very displeased manner.

It turned out that that woman was Li Yue’er’s older sister, Li Ruochu.

“Senior, this junior would not dare to go against your order. Merely, I wish to urge you to reconsider.”

“Although the two Upper Realms will be connected soon, it is still uncertain as to whether we will become friends or enemies with the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“If you decide to have our clan’s younger generation kill the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations from the very start, wouldn’t that indicate to them that we are determined to wage war against their Chu Heavenly Clan?” Li Ruochu said.

“So what if we are to wage war against them? How could our Li Heavenly Clan possibly fear their Chu Heavenly Clan?” The old lady spoke with contempt.

“Senior, how could you be so certain that our Li Heavenly Clan would be able to defeat the Chu Heavenly Clan?”

“Not mentioning the fact that Chu Hanxian has merely disappeared, and that it is still undetermined whether he has died or not, that Chu Xuanyuan should still be alive, no?” Li Ruochu said.

Once Li Ruochu said those words, the expressions of the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations did not change. However, the elders present all revealed, to a greater or lesser degree, fear on their faces.

Chu Hanxian and Chu Xuanyuan were not only renowned in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm; they were also renowned for their might in the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield.

At that moment, the old man added, “Actually, what this old man is worried about are precisely those two people.”

“Humph, how could you all fear a person who has died for many years, and some trash that has been expelled and imprisoned by the Chu Heavenly Clan?” The old lady spoke with contempt.

“Senior, this junior has already reminded you all. As for the decision of what to do, you still have the final say,” Li Ruochu spoke with a light smile on her face.

Hearing those words, the old lady revealed a very displeased expression. However, in the end, she waved her sleeve and said, “Forget about it. If you all are to encounter the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations, beating them back would suffice. They can go back and report to their Chu Heavenly Clan that they cannot match our Li Heavenly Clan.”

“Yes, Milady,” The eight people of the younger generation answered in unison. Then, they continued to fly toward the Upper Realm Gate.

Chapter 3055 - The Man Inside The Gate

After the eight members of the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generation entered the Upper Realm Gate, they quickly started flying deeper into it.

"Why would that Li Ruochu have such great speaking rights?"

"Not only did she look for Li Yue'er and bring her back into the clan after she returned, but she even sent Li Yue'er into our Li Heavenly Clan's Grand Training Formation that would open once every thirty years."

"One must know that only a single person can enter that Grand Training Formation. Furthermore, it is something that people can only fight over once every thirty years."

"Yet, that Li Ruochu managed to obtain that opportunity to train in the Grand Training Formation for Li Yue'er that easily. It's simply too unconvincing!"

"And now, she actually managed to change even an Supreme Elder's intention with a single sentence."

"If this is to continue, how could there ever be a day for us to shine?" A woman among the eight Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations spoke in a very displeased manner.

It would appear that even though they all realized that the old lady was feeling very displeased when she changed her order, she had only changed her order because of Li Ruochu.

"You're worried that Li Yue'er will retaliate against you after she rises in power, right?"

"You can't blame anyone for that. After all, you decided to bully Li Yue'er so ruthlessly after Li Ming died," the man leading the group of eight said with a laugh.

"That's not what I'm worried about. I am merely unable to understand why that Li Ruochu, a mere person of the younger generation before the Supreme Elders, would possess such capabilities in our Li Heavenly Clan," that woman spoke with indignation.

“It’s for no other reason than the fact that she’s Li Ruochu, our Li Heavenly Clan’s strongest genius.”

“She is not even two hundred years old right now. However, she’s already a rank two Exalted. Is that not enough to prove her strength?”

“If you were to have her strength at her age, you too would be able to gain such speaking rights in our clan,” the man leading the group said.

“Humph,” the woman snorted. She said, “Regardless of how talented she might be, she will, sooner or later, be surpassed by big brother Li Anzhi.”

“Of course. After all, big brother Li Anzhi is one of the Ancestral Martial Decastars.”

“One must know that the Ancestral Martial Decastars are the ten strongest people of the younger generation in the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield.”

“With his talent, surpassing Li Ruochu is only a matter of time.”

Once that woman said those words, she immediately gained endorsements from the others present.

“All of you, it’s best for you to not forget that, before Li Ming’s death, our Li Heavenly Clan’s strongest person of the younger generation was Li Ming, not Li Anzhi.”

“Furthermore, Li Ruochu also held the title of being one of the Ancestral Martial Decastars in her youth. Furthermore, at that time, she was the strongest among them,” the leading man said.

“Big brother Youbin, you are demoralizing yourself. How do you know that big brother Li Anzhi will not become the strongest of the Ancestral Martial Decastars in the future? How do you know that big brother Li Anzhi will not surpass Li Ruochu in the future?” The woman who had spoken earlier said in a very unconvinced manner.

“That’s right. Big brother Youbin, you speak of us bullying Li Yue’er as if you yourself haven’t bullied Li Yue’er. If Li Yue’er is to emerge in power, it will not be a good thing for you either. Why are you only speaking for those sisters?” The other six people also voiced their concerns.

"I naturally know that Li Yue'er and Li Ruochu are our enemies, that little brother Anzhi is our hope."

"However, we must still discuss things on their own merit. We cannot indulge in fantasy. And if we are to discuss things on their own merits, then Li Ming's talent back then was indeed stronger than little brother Anzhi's talent."

"To be precise, Li Yue'er is also frighteningly talented. That is also the reason why I was so against her, and why I tried so hard to refuse to let her grow in our clan."

"However, not only is that Li Ruochu still alive, but she even returned to our clan. With her return, Li Yue'er now has a backer again. It is inevitable that she will rise in power. It is just like how our Li Heavenly Clan is destined to annex the Chu Heavenly Clan now that the Upper Realm Gate had opened."

"Thus, I will urge you all thusly: rather than continuing to be Li Yue'er's enemy, it is better to quickly reconcile with her," the man leading the group said.

"No wonder big brother Youbin has continuously sought for Li Yue'er and Li Ruochu and intentionally tried to appease those sisters ever since Li Ruochu returned."

"Merely, big brother Youbin, you're overrating them too much, no?"

"Don't you know that your manner of conduct has already caused big brother Li Anzhi to become very displeased?"

"If you are to continue to act like this, big brother Li Anzhi will definitely fall out with you."

"That's right. Big brother Youbin, no matter how powerful those sisters might be, how could they be more powerful than big brother Li Anzhi?"

"After all, standing behind big brother Li Anzhi is..."

"The way I see it, the one that should fend for themselves is you, and not us."

The other seven people of the younger generation present were all disapproving of their leader's words, and began to advise him instead.

Faced with the crowd's disapproval, the man laughed lightly. Then, he said, "I've already said all that I should. You all can make your decisions as to what to do yourselves."

Suddenly, that man's expression changed. He pointed ahead and shouted, "There's someone ahead!"

At that moment, all of the other Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations started to look ahead seriously. It was only then that they discovered that there was a grand formation ahead of them. That should be the Upper Realm Gate's main formation.

However, there was currently a person next to the main formation. That person was currently walking toward them.

"That is... a Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generation?" At that moment, the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations all started to ponder who that person was.

"Who are you?!" Suddenly, the leader of the Li Heavenly Clan's group shouted loudly.

Compared to his mild temper when talking with the other Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations, the leader of the group's tone had turned very arrogant and overbearing.

Faced with that threat-filled shout from the Li Heavenly Clan's group leader, the incoming individual suddenly stopped. Then, he waved his sleeve, and spirit power began to fly toward those Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations.

Seeing that spirit power, the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations all revealed a change in expression. They had not expected their opponent to directly attack them.

That said, they soon realized that it was not an attack. Besides, even if it was an attack, it would not be able to injure them.

Finally, the spirit power came to a stop. It actually formed a horizontal border before them.

"He... what is he trying to do?"

Seeing the border before them, the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations were all puzzled. They all looked to their leader, Li Youbin.

At that moment, Li Youbin had a furious expression on his face. He shouted, "I am asking you a question, are you deaf or what?!"

Faced with those words, the man on the other side lightly chuckled. He said, "Who I am is not important. Merely, I wish to tell you all this. Do not cross that line. Otherwise... do not blame me for being impolite."

The person who had said those words was none other than Chu Feng.

Chapter 3056 - Divine Level Lightning Mark

"Who I am is not important. I merely wish to inform you all to not cross that line. Otherwise... do not blame me for being impolite."

Chu Feng was extremely calm when he said those words. However, his tone was filled with arrogance.

It was a sort of tone stating that 'those that obey me shall live, and those that disobey me shall die.'

At that moment, the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations were no longer capable of tolerating Chu Feng. One by one, they narrowed their brows and revealed displeased expressions.

They were, after all, the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations. Never had they ever received such treatment before.

"Brat, exactly who are you?! You dare to speak to us in such a manner, do you even know who we are?!" A person from the Li Heavenly Clan's group of eight asked while pointing at Chu Feng.

That Li Heavenly Clansman spoke those words with an extremely arrogant attitude. It was as if he were a ruler speaking down at an ordinary commoner.

"I naturally know who you all are," Chu Feng said whilst looking at the title plates on the Li Heavenly Clansmen's waists.

However, when he said those words, the corners of his mouth were raised upward. It was as if even though he knew who they were, he still did not place them in his eyes.

“You dare to act this presumptuously even after knowing who we are? Are you truly tired of living?” The Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations grew even more displeased.

Suddenly, one of the Li Heavenly Clan’s female clansmen pointed in the direction of the Upper Realm Gate’s main formation and shouted, “Big brother Youbin, look over there! That brat is destroying the main formation!”

It was only at that moment that the other Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations noticed that there was actually a gathering of surging power behind the main formation. It was currently unleashing destruction upon the main formation.

Witnessing that scene, the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations came to a sudden realization that Chu Feng was actually stalling for time. His goal was to destroy the Upper Realm Gate’s main formation.

One of the Li Heavenly Clan’s group of younger generations shouted, “So you’re a member of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generation. You are truly courting death!” Following that, he unleashed his boundless aura.

Rank one Heavenly Immortal. That man was a rank one Heavenly Immortal.

After he unleashed his aura, he took a step forward. “Bang!” Like an imposing dragon, he rushed toward Chu Feng.

“Eeaahhh~~~”

However, that man only flew for a short distance before letting out a scream. Following that, he who was flying toward Chu Feng started flying back. In the end, he fell back to the location where the other Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations were standing, and was caught by his fellows.

“This...”

At that moment, the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations were all greatly alarmed. The reason for that was because that man was not only knocked back, but he was also vomiting blood. Furthermore, a bloody hole was present in his chest.

One must know that he was a rank one Heavenly Immortal.

“I’ve said it already, do not cross that line,” right at that moment, Chu Feng’s voice sounded again.

“It’s him?” After Chu Feng said those words, the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations suddenly recalled that, being there, the only person that could attack them would be that unknown fellow.

However, why was it that they were unable to even sense his aura after he attacked?

“Arrogant bastard, I shall see exactly how powerful you are!” Right at that moment, a rank two Heavenly Immortal-level member of the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generation shouted.

Then, like an arrow shot from a bow, he flew straight for Chu Feng.

Toward his curse of rage, Chu Feng originally did not even pay attention to it. Chu Feng was very nonchalant. It was as if he did not even hear him at all.

However, the moment that man crossed the line Chu Feng had drawn, Chu Feng’s expression immediately changed. Chu Feng waved his sleeve, and boundless martial power began to fly toward that man with extreme speed. Chu Feng’s martial power directly struck that man back to where he came from.

“It really is him!”

Last time around, the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations did not notice Chu Feng’s action. However, this time around, they saw Chu Feng’s movements clearly.

Indeed, it was Chu Feng who had attacked and beaten back those two men.

However, why was it that even though they could clearly see Chu Feng unleashing his attack, they were unable to detect Chu Feng’s cultivation?

At that moment, fear appeared on the faces of the previously overwhelmingly arrogant Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations. They no longer dared to rashly move forward.

This was especially true for the three women, who actually all moved behind the men out of fear that Chu Feng would attack them.

At the same time as they were afraid of Chu Feng, the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations all turned their eyes to that man by the name of Li Youbin.

Although Li Youbin was not the strongest person of the younger generation in their Li Heavenly Clan, he was the strongest among those present.

With a thought from Li Youbin, his clothes started to flutter.

At that moment, a mysterious change was happening to their entire surroundings.

It was Li Youbin. He had unleashed his aura. He was trying to use his aura to test out Chu Feng's strength.

That Li Youbin was no ordinary character. He actually possessed the cultivation of a rank three Heavenly Immortal.

His level of cultivation was more than sufficient to overlook all of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm's younger generations. noVe(ℓB-In

That said, even though Chu Feng was able to clearly sense Li Youbin's cultivation, Chu Feng's expression remained unchanged.

Not only that, but he even spoke in an indifferent manner, "You all are no match for me. I also do not wish to harm you. Thus, it is best for you to do as I say. Else..."

Chu Feng looked to the two men that had stepped over the line he had created and were beaten back by him, "... you will all end up like the two of them."

"Humph," hearing those words, Li Youbing let out a cold snort. Then, he flipped his palm, and a blue spear appeared in his hand. It was an Incomplete Immortal Armament, a top quality Incomplete Immortal Armament.

Once he took out that Incomplete Immortal Armament, Li Youbin's battle power immediately increased greatly.

However, Li Youbin was not stopping with just that. With a thought, the word 'Heaven' appeared on his forehead. It was a Heaven level Lightning Mark.

After his Heaven level Lightning Mark appeared, Li Youbin's aura increased from rank three Heavenly Immortal to rank four Heavenly Immortal.

Pointing his spear at Chu Feng, Li Youbin said, "Kneel and beg for forgiveness and I will spare your dog life."

"If you are to kneel and beg me for forgiveness right now, I will let you leave safely. Otherwise... even if you do not cross this line of mine, I will still teach you a lesson," Chu Feng said.

"Impudent!" Li Youbin grew furious upon hearing those words. He tightened his grasp on his Incomplete Immortal Armament and began to fly toward Chu Feng.

However, at the moment when Li Youbin approached Chu Feng, lightning suddenly surged around Chu Feng with a single thought. The next moment, like the two Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations before him, Li Youbin was also knocked flying back.

When he was caught by the other Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations, Li Youbin was also vomiting blood like the two other men before him. His aura became extremely weak. He was seriously injured. Furthermore, his injury was even more serious than the two men before him.

At that moment, the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations looked to Chu Feng again. Their expressions had changed greatly.

The reason for that was because not only was Chu Feng's entire body covered with lightning, but a character formed by the gathering of lightning had also appeared on his forehead.

It was the character 'Divine.'

Chapter 3057 - The Li Clan's Ancestral Formation

"What is that?"

"That Lightning Mark on his forehead, it's actually the character 'Divine?'"

"His cultivation is rank five Heavenly Immortal?! Could it be... his actual cultivation is rank four Heavenly Immortal?"

“No, what’s important is not his cultivation. Instead, it’s the ‘Divine’ character on his forehead. He is a possessor of a Heavenly Bloodline. Yet, why would he have a Lightning Mark with the character ‘Divine?’ Could it be... that he has trained in the legendary Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique?”

At that moment, the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations were looking at Chu Feng with more and more concentrated fear in their eyes.

The Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique was something that existed only in legends.

Yet, they were actually witnessing someone who had trained in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. With this, how could they not be startled, how could they not fear?

“To have trained in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, you must not be someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan. Exactly who are you?” Li Youbin asked.

He seemed to have determined that Chu Feng was not someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan the moment he was defeated by Chu Feng. The reason for that was because he did not believe that a Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generation would be able to beat him back.

“Who told you I’m not a member of the Chu Heavenly Clan?” Chu Feng smiled lightly and asked instead of answering.

“Are you saying that you are a member of the Chu Heavenly Clan?” Li Youbin asked.

Li Youbin had a very astonished expression on his face. It was not only him; the other Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations also had such an expression.

According to what they’d heard, the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations should be extremely weak, so weak that there wasn’t even a Heavenly Immortal-level expert among them. *no ve-LB*/In

Thus, how could a rank four Heavenly Immortal fellow who had also trained in the legendary Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique appear all of a sudden?

Could it be that the rumors that they'd heard were false?

Suddenly, Li Youbin asked, "Are you Chu Qing?"

Based on what he knew, the strongest member of the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generation should be a man by the name of Chu Qing.

Although he had never met Chu Qing, and didn't even know what Chu Qing looked like, according to what he knew, it shouldn't be possible for that Chu Qing to be a rank four Heavenly Immortal.

"Don't bother with it. I don't wish to tell you all who I am. Thus, I will not say my name."

"Go ahead and return. Take advantage of the fact that I don't wish to kill you all right now and leave immediately."

Chu Feng waved his hand at the Li Heavenly Clan's eight younger generations. Then, he turned around and began to walk toward the main formation.

Chu Feng's attitude was no longer one of not placing the eight people of the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generation in his eyes anymore. Instead, he was acting as if he already held their lives in his hand, and could determine their fate at any time.

"You..." Seeing Chu Feng acting like that, the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations felt extremely displeased.

As geniuses among the Ten Great Heavenly Clans' younger generations, they had never been treated in such a way by others, much less someone from the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm that they looked down on.

But, even though they were feeling extremely displeased, even though their hearts were raging with anger, they still didn't say anything.

They knew very well that their opponent was stronger than them.

Furthermore, even though that fellow clearly knew who they were, he still dared to attack them so recklessly and ruthlessly. They could not afford to provoke a guy like him.

If they were to truly provoke him, he might really end up killing them.

Because of that, the eight people of the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generation did not say anything, turned around and began to fly toward the direction they had come from.

At that moment, the Li Heavenly Clansmen were all gathered outside beneath the Upper Realm Gate. Furthermore, more and more people were gathering there.

In fact, another old man had arrived..

Not only did he have a head of white hair, but he was also wearing a white gown.

His long hair, beard and even his white gown were all whiter than snow, and untainted by even a speck of dust.

Furthermore, the old man's aura was extremely extraordinary. It was as if he had descended from the heavens. Even though he seemed very amiable, he still caused all the other people here to treat him with endless reverence.

After that white-haired old man appeared, even that old man and that old lady, the two Supreme Elders of the Li Heavenly Clan, revealed respectful expressions on their faces, and voluntarily stood behind him.

Even among Supreme Elders, there were disparities in strength and status.

The white-haired old man had a nickname, Berserker Li.

Not only was he renowned throughout the Li Heavenly Clan, but he was also a top-rated character in the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield.

It could be said that, apart from the Li Heavenly Clan's current Clan Chief, he was the strongest person in the Li Heavenly Clan.

The status he possessed in the Li Heavenly Clan was akin to the status that Chu Hanpeng held in the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Furthermore, whilst the white-haired old man appeared to be very amiable, he was famed for his violent temper.

Thus, not only were the Li Heavenly Clan's clansmen afraid of him, but even the two Supreme Elders present were afraid of him.

However, there was a single person present that was an exception to the case. That person was Li Ruochu.

At that moment, even the two Supreme Elders were standing behind Berserker Li. Yet, Li Ruochu was standing beside Berserker Li.

From this, one could tell how much this Li Heavenly Clan's second strongest individual valued Li Ruochu.

"Ruochu, that girl Yue'er has adapted to our Li Clan's Ancestral Formation. Her training is going very smoothly. You can rest assured," Berserker Li said to Li Ruochu.

The Yue'er that he spoke of was naturally Li Ruochu's younger sister, Li Yue'er.

"Thank you senior," hearing those words, Li Ruochu revealed a joyous look, and respectfully expressed her thanks to Berserker Li.

Li Ruochu had entered the Li Clan's Ancestral Formation to train before. She knew very well how powerful that formation was.

It was a formation left behind by their Li Heavenly Clan's Old Ancestor, and the strongest training formation in their Li Heavenly Clan. It was also the training formation that all the people of the younger generation yearned to enter.

However, due to the fact that the Li Clan's Ancestral Formation had to store up power, it would only open once every thirty years. Furthermore, only a single person was allowed to enter it and train every time it opened.

That person had to be the most outstanding person of their Li Heavenly Clan's younger generation.

However, her younger sister Li Yue'er was currently not the most outstanding person in their Li Heavenly Clan's younger generation.

Yet, she was allowed to enter their Li Clan's Ancestral Formation to train. The reason why her younger sister was allowed to enter the Li Clan's Ancestral Formation was all thanks to that Berserker Li. As such, how could Li Ruochu not thank him?

Li Yue'er had entered the Li Clan's Ancestral Formation to train quite a while ago. Thus, Li Ruochu was naturally not feeling joyous because her younger sister had entered the Li Clan's Ancestral Formation to train. Rather, it was because Berserker Li had told her that Li Yue'er had adapted to the conditions inside.

As Li Ruochu had been in the Li Clan's Ancestral Formation before, she knew very well that it possessed enormous power. Ordinary people would simply be incapable of withstanding the power. However, should one be able to adapt to the power of the formation, one's cultivation would be able to advance by leaps and bounds.

Back then, it was only because she managed to withstand the power of the Li Clan's Ancestral Formation that she obtained a true transformation.

The lesser the time one needed to adapt to the power of the Li Clan's Ancestral Formation, the more one would be able to acquire from the Li Clan's Ancestral Formation. As for Li Yue'er, she had adapted to the Li Clan's Ancestral Formation much faster than she, Li Ruochu, did.

This meant that what Li Yue'er would obtain would be even greater than what she had obtained back then.

As such, how could Li Ruochu not feel joyous?

Chapter 3058 - Li Tianyou

"There's no need for thanks, those are merely things that this old man should do."

"Your parents died fighting for our Li Heavenly Clan. It is this old man's responsibility to take care of you siblings."

"Back then, because this old man was in closed-door training, I actually allowed that girl Li Yue'er to be bullied by others. She even left our clan because of that. That was this old man's failure in duty. That Li Clan's Ancestral Formation is merely this old man making up for his failure."

"Rest assured. As long as this old man is here, no one in the Li Heavenly Clan will dare bully you sisters again," Berserker Li spoke those words very loudly.

He was saying those words for everyone present to hear.

The people from the Li Heavenly Clan also knew that those words were meant for them. Thus, they all lowered their heads silently.

Indeed, after Li Ming died, none of them had upheld their responsibility to look after Li Yue'er. Because of that, they, to a greater or lesser degree, felt ashamed of themselves.

Of course, there were also a lot of people that were not ashamed of their behavior. Instead, they were purely afraid that Berserker Li would make trouble for them.

Berserker Li had already made trouble for many people after he left his closed-door training. He had done so just to appease Li Ruochu.

Suddenly, Berserker Li turned to ask Li Ruochu, "Ruochu, do you think the opening of this Upper Realm Gate is a good thing or a bad thing for our Li Heavenly Clan?"

"If this Upper Realm Gate is connected to another Upper Realm, it would naturally be a good thing."

"However, as it is connected to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, Ruochu is also uncertain as to whether it is actually a good thing or not," Li Ruochu said.

"Girl, there are hidden implications behind your words," Berserker Li said with a laugh.

"Ruochu wouldn't dare," Li Ruochu clasped her fist and lowered her head.

"I know that you're worried about Chu Hanxian and his son Chu Xuanyuan."

"This old man must admit that Chu Hanxian and Chu Xuanyuan are indeed rare geniuses of our Ancestral Martial Starfield."

"However, Chu Hanxian has disappeared for many years. It is likely that he has already died." *no ve-LB/In*

"As for Chu Xuanyuan, his strength was naturally not something to look down on. However, as far as I know, their Chu Heavenly Clan's Ancestral Martial Lower Realm's forbidden area has a sort of power. That power would weaken one's strength."

"Back then, Chu Xuanyuan offended the Starfield Master Realm. For the sake of protecting their Chu Heavenly Clan's safety, he reached a compromise and allowed himself to be imprisoned in their Chu Heavenly Clan's forbidden area in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm."

"Even if he is still alive now, his cultivation should've decreased greatly. Thus, this old man feels that the current Chu Heavenly Clan is no longer one that we need to fear," Berserker Li said.

"But senior, that Chu Xuanyuan doesn't seem to be such a foolish person, no?"

"How could he really ruin his own future prospects for the Chu Heavenly Clan's safety?" Li Ruochu asked.

"Humph. Li Ruochu, could it be that you're feeling that you know Chu Xuanyuan even better than Lord Berserker?"

Right at that moment, a voice filled with discontent was suddenly heard.

Turning to look, the person who spoke was someone that was less than a hundred years old, a person of the younger generation.

That man had the appearance of a young man. That said, while he had the appearance of a young man, he had a very imposing look, was very handsome, and even his aura was something that Li Youbin and the others could not compare to. Between his eyes, he gave off the domineering aura of a ruler.

His cultivation was that of a rank four Heavenly Immortal, an entire level of cultivation above Li Youbin.

This man was called Li Tianyou. Apart from Li Yue'er, he was the youngest genius of the Li Heavenly Clan.

He was also known to be one of the Li Heavenly Clan's two geniuses with the greatest potential.

The other genius that shared the same reputation as him was his biological older brother, Li Anzhi.

Originally, Li Tianyou and his older brother Li Anzhi were the most optimal candidates to enter the Li Clan's Ancestral Formation.

It was due to Li Ruochu's return that Li Yue'er obtained what should originally have gone to one of them.

Because of this, Li Tianyou was extremely displeased with Li Ruochu. In fact, he was filled with hatred for her, extremely hostile toward her and would always oppose her.

"And here I was wondering who it was that had spoken this forcefully, so it was little brother Tianyou."

"Little brother Tianyou, are you still angry at me for being unable to enter the Li Clan's Ancestral Formation?"

"Actually, I feel that you are doing more than is required. After all, the reason you were unable to enter the Li Clan's Ancestral Formation is because your talent is inferior to Yue'er's. It has nothing to do with me," Li Ruochu said with a smile on her face.

"Bullshit! How could I be less talented than Li Yue'er?!" Li Tianyou was immediately furious upon hearing those words. He pointed at Li Ruochu and cursed loudly.

"Impudent!" Right after Li Tianyou said those words, Berserker Li immediately shouted him down and took a stern glance at him.

Seeing that glance, Li Tianyou's expression immediately changed. He had an expression as if he had fallen in hell.

"This old man was the one who directed the talent test that day. For you to be dissatisfied with the result, are you indicating that this old man discriminated in Li Yue'er's favor?!" Berserker Li asked angrily.

"Lord Berserker, that is most definitely not Tianyou's intention. Tianyou would not dare question your test," Li Tianyou hurriedly half-knelt in midair.

Actually, Li Tianyou knew very well that Berserker Li was discriminating in favor of Li Yue'er. The reason for that was because that test was extremely unfair. Basically, whoever Berserker Li declared to be the strongest was deemed the strongest.

That said, even if he was unable to accept the result and dared to go seek out Li Ruochu and vent his anger at her, he would not dare to do the same toward Berserker Li.

"You shouldn't be apologizing to this old man. Instead, you should be apologizing to your older sister Ruochu," Berserker Li pointed to Li Ruochu.

However, hearing those words, Li Tianyou immediately revealed a difficult expression.

He was a very unyielding person, someone with high integrity. While he was afraid of Berserker Li, he detested Li Ruochu. He would apologize to Berserker Li without any hesitation. However, if he was asked to apologize to Li Ruochu, he would find it very difficult to do.

"They're out," right at that moment, the expressions of the crowd present all changed.

They had noticed that the people of the younger generation that had entered the Upper Realm Gate had come out.

However, they who originally had joyous expressions on their faces now revealed a change in expression.

The reason for that was because they had noticed that there were three people among their Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations that had just exited the Upper Realm Gate who were injured. Furthermore, one among them was the strongest of the eight, Li Youbin.

"Lord Supreme Elder, please uphold justice for us," after Li Youbin and the other seven exited the Upper Realm Gate, they immediately saw Berserker Li and reacted as if they have discovered their backer.

With no concern for their injuries, they hurriedly half-knelt in mid-air with grievance-filled expressions.

Chapter 3059 - Seriously Injured

"What's going on here? Who injured you all?" Berserker Li asked.

"Lord Berserker, there is a brat in the Upper Realm Gate. He was already inside by the time we entered the Upper Realm Gate."

"That man is extremely tyrannical. Not only was he destroying the Upper Realm Gate's main core, but he also created a line that he refused to allow us to pass. As long as we crossed that line, he would attack us."

"Our injuries were all caused by him," Li Youbin said.

"You're saying that you all were beaten back by a person of the younger generation from the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm?" Berserker Li asked.

"Eh..." Li Youbin and the others did not know how to answer that question.

That said, even if they were unwilling to answer, the people from the Li Heavenly Clan still knew what had happened.

Currently, only the people of the younger generation within a hundred years of age could enter the Upper Realm. Thus, apart from a person of the younger generation from the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, there could be no other person that could defeat and beat back Li Youbin and the others.

"Truly useless, you all actually failed to even take care of a person of the younger generation from the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. You all have truly disgraced our Li Heavenly Clan," Berserker Li was feeling extremely displeased. *no ve-ℓb/1n*

"Lord Berserker, that brat is no ordinary person of the younger generation. Not only is he a rank four Heavenly Immortal, but he has even trained in the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique," Li Youbin had no choice but to tell the truth.

"Rank four Heavenly Immortal, Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique?"

Hearing those words, the expressions of everyone present changed. Even Berserker Li revealed a pensive and complicated look.

"Since when did the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm have such a powerful person of the younger generation?"

"Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, could he be a clansman of the Chu Heavenly Clan? But... I've never heard of such a powerful person from the younger generation in the Chu Heavenly Clan."

Soon, the elders of the Li Heavenly Clan began to look to one another, seemingly seeking an answer to their question. However, no one present knew the answer.

Right at that moment, Li Tianyou clasped his hand and said to Berserker Li, "Lord Berserker, let Tianyou enter the Upper Realm Gate. Regardless of who that person might be, Tianyou will be able to take care of him."

"Go ahead. You must absolutely prevent the destruction of the Upper Realm Gate's main formation," Berserker Li said.

"Lord Berserker, please rest assured. Tianyou will definitely not disappoint you," after saying those words, Li Tianyou stood up, soared into the sky and flew toward the Upper Realm Gate.

He knew that this was a rare opportunity he must grasp. If he was able to grasp this opportunity, he could very possibly change the status he held in Berserker Li's heart.

Only by becoming valued by Berserker Li would he have a chance to defeat the sisters Li Ruochu and Li Yue'er.

"Little brother Tianyou, be careful. Your opponent is someone trained in the legendary Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique," Li Youbin warned Li Tianyou when he passed by him. Furthermore, he said those words through a voice transmission.

However, Li Tianyou reacted in a very disapproving manner upon hearing those words. He said, "Big brother Youbin, you should not think everyone to be as incompetent as yourself. To be defeated by a member of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm's younger generation, a thing so disgraceful, is impossible to occur to me, Li Tianyou."

Compared to Li Youbin's voice transmission, Li Tianyou's words were spoken very loudly. Everyone present was capable of hearing his words.

Hearing those words, Li Youbin's expression turned ugly.

Originally, his relationship with the brothers Li Anzhi and Li Tianyou was very good.

His relationship with them only soured because he tried to befriend Li Ruochu after she returned.

That said, whilst it was true that their relationship had soured, what Li Tianyou said at that moment, to everyone present, was truly excessive.

After all, their relationship was so good in the past. For Li Tianyou to insult Li Youbin like that was indeed inappropriate.

However, not only did Li Tianyou not feel what he did to be inappropriate, but he even had a satisfied expression on his face after saying those words. Then, his body shifted, and he flew into the Upper Realm Gate.

Even though Li Tianyou had entered the Upper Realm Gate, the Li Heavenly Clansmen gathered below the Upper Realm Gate all had very stern expressions on their faces.

“Lord Berserker, who do you think that person of the younger generation that defeated Youbin and the others to be?” That old lady who was also an Supreme Elder asked Berserker Li.

“He’s most likely not someone from the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm,” Berserker Li said.

Hearing those words, many people nodded. They all approved of Berserker Li’s opinion.

“Lord Berserker, although that brat did not explicitly state that he was someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan, he seemed to have implied through his words that he was someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan,” Li Youbin said.

“He’s someone from the Chu Heavenly Clan?”

“Are you certain of that?” That old lady asked.

“Milady, while I do not dare to be certain of my claim, that is indeed what he was implying,” Li Youbin said.

“But... how could such a powerful person of the younger generation suddenly emerge from the Chu Heavenly Clan?”

“That is simply something that we’ve never heard of before. Could it be... the Chu Heavenly Clan deliberately concealed such a genius, and was secretly nurturing him?”

“If that were truly the case, then that Chu Heavenly Clan is truly a scheming bunch.”

“It would appear that we cannot underestimate the Chu Heavenly Clan too much.”

The Li Heavenly Clan’s elders were all unable to contain themselves, and burst into an uproar.

The reason for that was because such news was most definitely not good news.

At that moment, they all began to ponder exactly who that Chu Heavenly Clan’s genius was.

They even began to have a whole new opinion of the Chu Heavenly Clan that they’d previously looked down on.

They suddenly felt that the Chu Heavenly Clan didn’t seem as simple as they’d imagined them to be.

“Wuuuahh~~~”

Right at that moment, a scream was heard from the direction of the Upper Realm Gate.

Looking toward the sound, a figure was seen flying out. It was Li Tianyou, who had just entered the Upper Realm Gate.

Merely, Li Tianyou no longer had the graceful demeanor he had had when he first entered the Upper Realm Gate. Not only were his clothes completely tattered, but he was also covered in blood. He was seriously injured, even more seriously injured than Li Youbin.

“This... even Tianyou has been defeated?”

Seeing this scene, the Li Heavenly Clan’s elders all revealed an uneasy expression.

Although Li Tianyou was not the strongest person of their Li Heavenly Clan's younger generation, he was extremely talented.

With a cultivation of rank four Heavenly Immortal, he was practically unmatched.

However, he was actually defeated. This meant that the person inside the Upper Realm Gate possessed both talent and strength that surpassed Li Tianyou.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 3060 - First Battle: Defeat - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 3060 - First Battle: Defeat

Chapter 3060 - First Battle: Defeat

"Little brother Tianyou, are you alright?"

Li Youbin was the one who caught Li Tianyou. Seeing how seriously injured Li Tianyou was, the anger in Li Youbin's heart had already disappeared, and was replaced with deep concern.

The reason for that was because their relationship was extremely good in the past, and he had truly considered Li Tianyou his younger brother.

"Scram. Enough of your crocodile tears," however, Li Tianyou did not appreciate Li Youbin's concern at all. Instead, he forcibly pushed Li Youbin aside.

Li Tianyou then turned around, looked to the Upper Realm Gate and spoke fiercely, "You remember this! Regardless of who you might be, my big brother will definitely avenge me!"

After Li Tianyou said those words, the Li Heavenly Clansmen's expressions turned even more complicated.

Evidently, Li Tianyou also did not manage to scout out his opponent's identity.

"Buzz~~~"

Right at that moment, the previously rotating Upper Realm Gate seemed to have stopped.

If one were to pay close attention, one would notice that the Upper Realm Gate did not stop spinning.

However, its rotation speed had become extremely slow. It was so slow that if one did not look at it carefully, its movement would be unnoticeable.

“The Upper Realm Gate’s main formation has been destroyed. The Upper Realm Gate’s opening speed has decreased.”

“We’ve actually lost in the first confrontation against the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm?”

At that moment, the Li Heavenly Clan’s elders all looked to the slowly rotating Upper Realm Gate with greatly upset hearts.

“Useless!” Berserker Li snorted coldly. Then, with a wave of his sleeve, he disappeared.

Although he had disappeared, his anger was still present in the air..

While the elders were still fine, Li Tianyou, Li Youbin and the other seven members of the younger generation there felt enormous pressure.

After all, they were the cause of their defeat in the first battle against the Chu Heavenly Clan.

As such, how could they not feel enormous pressure?

.....

At the moment when the people from the Li Heavenly Clan were feeling extremely dispirited, Chu Youyuan was overjoyed.

“Success! Chu Feng succeeded! Mingchao, Xunyi, do you see that? The opening speed of that Upper Realm Gate has slowed down.”

“Chu Feng has succeeded. He had successfully destroyed that Upper Realm Gate’s main formation.”

Chu Youyuan was simply wild with joy. He who had always kept his calm was actually unable to contain the feeling of joy in his heart.

“That boy Chu Feng has never let anyone down,” Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi also had proud and pleased expressions on their faces.

Although there was an enormous difference in age between them, the two of them considered Chu Feng their own younger brother.

Thus, even though they were not members of the Chu Heavenly Clan, and the continued existence of the Chu Heavenly Clan was not much of their concern, the joy that was present on their faces was not at all inferior to Chu Youyuan’s.

The reason for that was because they felt proud of Chu Feng.

“Lord Youyuan, I’ve succeeded.”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng flew out of the Upper Realm Gate and arrived before Chu Youyuan.

“Chu Feng, how was it? Did everything go smoothly?”

“Did you encounter the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations?” Chu Youyuan asked with great concern.

Even though Chu Feng was completely unscathed, Chu Youyuan still wanted to know exactly what had happened inside.

Chu Feng did not try to conceal anything, and told Chu Youyuan about everything that had happened inside.

“Chu Feng, although you’ve defeated nine of the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations, you must still not let your guard down.”

“The Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations are definitely not as simple as you imagine them to be. Right now... although the Li Heavenly Clan’s experts are unable to pass through the Upper Realm Gate and enter our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, their younger generations are capable of it.”

“The way I see it, they will definitely not tolerate their defeat. They could come and seek trouble for you at any time.”

“If the ones that come are truly the Li Heavenly Clan’s peak geniuses, then we of the older generation would find it unsuitable to do anything.”

“Firstly, our status would not allow us to bully the young. Furthermore, if we really end up killing the Li Heavenly Clan’s peak geniuses, even without this Upper Realm Gate, the Li Heavenly Clan would still dispatch their army through the vast starry sky, come to our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm and seek revenge for their geniuses.”

“Thus, you must prepare yourself to take them on,” Chu Youyuan spoke to Chu Feng in a very serious manner.

His intention was very clear. The Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations would not give up with just this. Furthermore, as it would be a battle among the people of the younger generation, Chu Youyuan would not involve himself in it. As such, Chu Feng must handle the matter himself.

“Lord Youyuan, please rest assured. The current me is no longer the me from back then.”

“I was already lenient with them during our encounter. If those fellows from the Li Heavenly Clan dare to seek out trouble, I, Chu Feng, will accompany them,” as Chu Feng spoke, he took out the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet.

At that moment, the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet had still not opened. As such, Chu Feng was unable to ascertain whether the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet was that legendary Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet.

However, the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet was no longer the same as before. It no longer looked like junk.

A layer of light had appeared on the bracelet. That light was slowly rotating around the bracelet. If one were to look clearly, one would see that the light was actually covered in strange runes and symbols. The runes and symbols were shining like stars. The ray of light that surrounded the bracelet simply resembled a river of stars.

“Is that the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet you bought from the Grand Auction Assembly? Martial comprehension actually appeared on it?”

“Could it be... you actually really managed to purchase a treasure; that bracelet was actually really the legendary Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet?”

“Oh how enormous of a fortune would this be?”

Chu Youyuan revealed an astonished expression as he saw the bracelet in Chu Feng's hand.

“Right now, I still cannot be certain if this is the legendary Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet.”

“However, after I entered the Elf Clan's Sacred Ground, this Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet started to change. When I entered that abyss, it started to absorb a formless power. That is why it appears like this right now.”

“Unfortunately, there's a frightening existence inside that abyss. As such, I do not dare to enter deeper into the abyss. Otherwise... the change to this bracelet would definitely not be limited to this,” Chu Feng said.

“It's not of concern. This change is already extremely good. At the very least, it proved it to be an actual treasure.”

“Furthermore, while the martial comprehension in the bracelet is not very strong, It should still be helpful for the current you,” Chu Youyuan said.

Chapter 3061 - Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition

“That is also what this junior is thinking. Thus, this junior has decided to first make a breakthrough in cultivation. After I become a rank five Heavenly Immortal, I will then properly comprehend the martial comprehension in this bracelet.”

“I will see if I'm able to obtain enough comprehension from this bracelet to breakthrough to rank six Heavenly Immortal.”

“If this junior is capable of making a breakthrough to rank six Heavenly Immortal, even if the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations are to come after me, this junior will not fear them.”

“Merely, if I am to do that, I'm afraid that I might not be able to make it in time for the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition,” Chu Feng said.

“You might as well. The outcome of the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition is simply of no importance to the current you.”

“After all, none of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm’s younger generations possess the qualifications to contend against you. Right now, your true opponents are the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations,” Chu Youyuan said.

“Mn,” Chu Feng nodded.

Chu Feng also knew that participation in the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition was already meaningless. The reason for that was because his cultivation was obvious. As long as someone saw his cultivation, they would immediately know that he was stronger than all of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm’s younger generations. n)-OvElbIn

Moreover, the reason why Chu Feng wanted to participate in the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition back then was because he had wanted to prove himself to the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Right now, Chu Feng no longer needed to prove himself through the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition. Instead, what he needed to do was to obtain justice from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Chu Feng needed to increase his cultivation not only for the sake of taking on the Li Heavenly Clan, but also to take on the Chu Heavenly Clan.

If his cultivation was truly capable of reaching rank six Heavenly Immortal, the Chu Heavenly Clan would have to earnestly consider if they wanted to really make things difficult for him.

After all, a talent like that should be nurtured, not strangled.

Afterwards, Chu Feng entered closed-door training.

He had already comprehended sufficient comprehension to make a breakthrough to rank five Heavenly Immortal.

Furthermore, although the power of the Divine Tribulation was very powerful, Chu Feng had gradually adapted to it. Thus, Chu Feng quickly reached a breakthrough from rank four Heavenly Immortal to rank five Heavenly Immortal.

After that, Chu Feng started to comprehend the martial comprehension on the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet.

The martial comprehension on the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet was something that one needed to spend time comprehending. Furthermore, it was very difficult to comprehend. Thus, it took Chu Feng some time to comprehend it.

That being said, Chu Feng still managed to successfully comprehend a portion of the martial comprehension. However, merely that portion of martial comprehension was sufficient to allow Chu Feng to successfully make a breakthrough from rank five Heavenly Immortal to rank six Heavenly Immortal.

That said, Chu Feng was not satisfied with only this. The reason for that was because he had only comprehended a portion of the martial comprehension contained in the bracelet. Contained within the flickering lights of the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet was more martial comprehension. If Chu Feng could continue to comprehend it, he would be able to make another breakthrough in cultivation.

Unfortunately, Chu Feng's wish was not fulfilled this time.

The martial comprehension within the Metamorphosis Mysteryrealm Bracelet was now even more difficult to comprehend. Chu Feng spent ten days attempting to comprehend the remaining martial comprehension to no avail. In the end, Chu Feng decided to give up.

Chu Feng decided to proceed for the Chu Heavenly Clan and retrieve justice for himself.

"Seniors, our journey this time will be very dangerous. If you two insist on traveling with us, you should enter the hideout," Chu Feng took out the Bandit Beasts' hideout.

Chu Feng had gained control over the hideout. In essence, Chu Feng was carrying a little world with him now.

As for Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi, they had learned of what had happened to Chu Feng, and were determined to journey together with him.

Fearing accidents, Chu Feng wanted Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi to hide in the hideout for their own safety.

"Chu Feng, if you are to do this, you'll be looking down on me, your big brother."

“Does your big brother and big sister Xunyi look like people that fear death?” Ying Mingchao revealed a somewhat displeased expression toward Chu Feng’s proposal.

He naturally knew that Chu Feng was considering his safety. However, who was Ying Mingchao?

Although his current cultivation might be among the bottom tier in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, he remained the hero of an era.

Contained within Ying Mingchao’s bones was toughness and unyieldingness that ordinary people did not possess.

He had decided to journey together with Chu Feng precisely because he wanted to share Chu Feng’s trials and tribulations.

It would naturally be best if Chu Feng could obtain justice. However, if he could not, Ying Mingchao was determined to curse out the Chu Heavenly Clan and die together with Chu Feng.

“Senior, that was not my intention. I merely...” Chu Feng still wanted to persuade Ying Mingchao. He truly did not want Ying Mingchao to encounter dangers because of him.

However, right at that moment, Chu Youyuan waved his hand and said to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, there’s no need for you to act like this. On this journey, not only will I obtain justice for you, but I will also guarantee your safety.”

Chu Youyuan had a faint smile on his face when he said those words.

Seeing that smile, Chu Feng’s heart moved. He felt that it was not an ordinary smile. Instead, it was a smile of absolute confidence.

Chu Youyuan was confident in himself.

At that moment, Chu Feng no longer attempted to say anything anymore. He retrieved the Bandit Beasts’ hideout and put it back in his Cosmos Sack.

Then, he smiled lightly and said, “Actually, it is also my wish for the four of us to journey together.”

“Haha, that’s more like it. It’s more interesting for us to journey together,” Ying Mingchao laughed heartily.

Then, Chu Feng and the others proceeded toward the Chu Heavenly Clan.

When Chu Feng and the others arrived at the Chu Heavenly Clan's entrance, they discovered that the Chu Heavenly Clan's entrance was covered with martial cultivators, filling both the sky and the ground. It was bustling with even greater noise and excitement than before.

Furthermore, people from the Starfall Holy Land, the Paradise Valley, the Dao Imperial Palace, the Ghost Sect Hall and the various other major powers were all present.

"It would appear that the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition has been postponed for some reason."

"Chu Feng, we have arrived at the perfect timing. We managed to catch up to the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition."

"This is the perfect opportunity. Today, this old man will obtain justice for you before all of the heroes of our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm," Chu Youyuan said to Chu Feng.

"I will have to trouble senior then," Chu Feng clasped his fist toward Chu Youyuan.

"Let's go. It's time for them to pay the price," as Chu Youyuan spoke, he brought Chu Feng, Ying Mingchao and Zi Xunyi and proceeded to fly toward the direction where the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition was being held.

An island was currently floating in the sky. That island was a formation. It was the location where the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition was being held.

On the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition's main viewing platform, practically all of the Chu Heavenly Clan's experts, with the exception of their Clan Chief, were present.

Naturally, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Supreme Elders were also present.

Both Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Haoyan's grandfather were present on the stage. Those two despicable men currently had joyous smiles on their faces. It seemed that their moods were extremely good.

The Starfall Holy Land's Holy Ruler, the Paradise Valley's Valley Master and the Ghost Sect Hall's Hall Master were also present on the main viewing platform. Although the Dao Imperial Palace's Palace Master was not present, the Dao Imperial Palace's many experts were all present.

It could be said that the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm's peak experts were all gathered on the main viewing platform. It was truly a spectacular sight, something one could boast of for the rest of one's life should one be able to see it.

However, even though all those grand characters were present, none of them were sitting in the master seat.

Sitting in the master seat was an unfamiliar face.

Chapter 3062 - Saintly Stellar Monk

That person was a monk. That monk had a very long beard; it was actually three meters long, longer than even his height. However, that monk's beard did not reach the ground. Instead, it seemed to be naturally floating in midair.

Furthermore, if one were to look closely, one would see that the monk was emitting flickering starlight from his body. It was as if there were a myriad of stars spinning around his body.

Anyone with knowledge knew who that monk was. He was no ordinary character. Instead, he was a grand character throughout the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield.

That monk had a nickname: Saintly Stellar Monk.

This Saintly Stellar Monk was one of the most powerful World Spiritists in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

Furthermore, he had sparred against many people with world spirit techniques, and never once lost. It seemed that no one other than Grandmaster Liangqiu would be able to rival him.

Thus, there were people that believed the Saintly Stellar Monk to be the most powerful world spiritist in the Ancestral Martial Starfield apart from Grandmaster Liangqiu.

They believed him to be the second most powerful world spiritist in the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield.

That said, the Saintly Stellar Monk's strength was most definitely not limited to only his world spirit techniques.

As a martial cultivator, his cultivation was also very powerful. At the very least, his cultivation was stronger than everyone present. Even the Chu Heavenly Clan's Supreme Elders, including Chu Hanpeng, were no match for him.

With such a noble guest present, the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm's experts would naturally have to yield the master seat to him.

At that moment, a stone case was placed on the table before the Saintly Stellar Monk.

Although that stone case looked very ordinary, no one was able to see through it. Placed inside that stone case was a gift.

It was a gift that the Saintly Stellar Monk brought with him. That gift would go to the final victor of the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition.

That said, even though there were so many people present, the crowd's eyes were not gathered on the main viewing platform. Instead, their eyes were focused on the battle stage.

There were two people on the battle stage.

One was Chu Zhiyuan, and the other was Chu Qing.

Chu Qing was already past the younger generation's age, and should not have appeared on the battle stage.

The reason why he had appeared on the battle stage at that moment was because Chu Zhiyuan had issued a challenge against him.

Chu Zhiyuan challenged Chu Qing after defeating all of the younger generations that came to participate in the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition.

At that moment, Chu Qing was defeated. The reason for that was because, no matter how powerful Chu Qing might be, he was still only a peak True Immortal.

However, when Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Qing were fighting, Chu Zhiyuan had revealed the strength of a Heavenly Immortal. Chu Zhiyuan was currently a rank one Heavenly Immortal.

“Amazing! That Chu Zhiyuan is actually a Heavenly Immortal. No wonder he defeated all of the younger generations so effortlessly.”

“So powerful. That Chu Zhiyuan is truly a well-concealed talent. Heavenly Immortal, a person of the younger generation actually managed to reach the Heavenly Immortal realm. He is truly deserving of the title of being the number one individual amongst the younger generations of our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.”

“No one other than him is worthy of the title of genius. Even if that despicable Chu Feng, who plotted against his own clansmen, were still alive, he would definitely not be Chu Zhiyuan’s match.”

“Chu Feng? Not to mention that he has died already, even if he were still alive, he would still not be qualified to fight against Chu Zhiyuan. After all, he could not even defeat Chu Ruoshi and the others.”

“That’s right. Although Chu Feng was extremely talented and was definitely a demon-level genius, he was still very young. His cultivation was still too weak. Even if he were still alive, he would not be a match for Chu Zhiyuan.”

“Alas, for our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm to have a person of the younger generation like Chu Zhiyuan, we will definitely rise in power in the future. Who in the Ancestral Martial Starfield will dare look down on our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm again?”

Upon witnessing Chu Zhiyuan’s cultivation, the people on the viewing platform, regardless of whether they were from the Chu Heavenly Clan or other powers, all began to praise Chu Zhiyuan nonstop.

Chu Zhiyuan had concealed his strength the entire time. It was only when the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition began that he revealed his ability. Thus, to the crowd, Chu Zhiyuan was definitely a dark horse in the competition.

Watching the competition, Chu Zhiyuan had presented an enormous amount of pleasant surprises to the crowd. And now, Chu Zhiyuan had reached an irreplaceable level in the hearts of the crowd.

Not to mention that the crowd felt that Chu Feng had already died and his name was blackened, even if Chu Feng were still alive, they still felt that he would be far inferior to Chu Zhiyuan.

“Brother Zhiyuan, congratulations on reaching the Heavenly Immortal realm,” although Chu Qing was defeated and seriously injured, he did not possess any trace of complaint. Instead, he had a smile on his face as he congratulated Chu Zhiyuan.

However, Chu Zhiyuan only smiled disdainfully at Chu Qing’s congratulations. He did not appreciate it at all.

Chu Qing seemed to have anticipated this. Thus, he did not have much of a reaction, and dragged his seriously injured body off the battle stage.

Had it been before, an attitude like that from Chu Zhiyuan would bring about the crowd’s disgust.

However, it was different now. Chu Zhiyuan had become the fully-deserving heavenly-beloved genius of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

A genius of the younger generation like him had the qualifications to look down upon everything.

“Everyone, there is one thing that I must inform everyone of.”

“This matter concerns the life and death of our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. Thus, everyone, please quiet down and listen to this old man.”

Right at that moment, the number two expert of the Chu Heavenly Clan, Chu Hanpeng, suddenly stood up.

Chu Hanpeng currently had a very serious expression on his face.

His expression and the words he spoke made the crowd realize that what he was about to say was very serious.

“I believe everyone has heard of the Upper Realm Gate.”

“Currently, an Upper Realm Gate has opened in our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. Unfortunately, the other side of the Upper Realm Gate is the Great Li Upper Realm controlled by the Li Heavenly Clan,” Chu Hanpeng said.

“What?! The Upper Realm Gate opened on our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm?! The other side is the Li Heavenly Clan?!”

“Heavens! How could this be?! Could it be that the heavens want to bring ruin upon our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm?”

Upon finding out that the Upper Realm Gate had opened, all of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm’s experts were no longer capable of sitting tight. When they heard that the other side of the Upper Realm Gate was one of the Ancestral Martial Starfield’s Ten Great Heavenly Clans, the Li Heavenly Clan, their expressions immediately turned ashen.

In fact, there were even people among them that were shivering in fear and sweating cold sweat.

They all felt that a great catastrophe was about to befall their Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

“Although the opening of the Upper Realm Gate that connects to the Li Heavenly Clan is very detrimental for our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, everyone need not worry too much.”

“The reason for that is because the Li Heavenly Clan’s experts are still incapable of entering our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm right now,” Chu Hanpeng said.

“Still incapable of entering our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm? What is going on?”

Upon hearing what Chu Hanpeng said, the crowd all revealed curious expressions. They all wanted to know what had happened.

“As everyone knows, there is a main formation inside the Upper Realm Gate. If one is able to find that main formation and destroy it, the opening speed of the Upper Realm Gate will slow down considerably.”

“The Upper Realm Gate’s main formation has been destroyed. Right now, the opening of the Upper Realm Gate has slowed down considerably. This has given us the time to communicate with the Li Heavenly Clan. We might be able to resolve this crisis,” Chu Hanpeng said.

“There’s actually someone that destroyed the main formation? This is truly great!”

Hearing those words, the pale expressions that the crowd wore improved greatly. To them, this was an enormous blessing in an extremely unfortunate situation.

Suddenly, someone from among the crowd asked, “Milord, who is it that destroyed the Upper Realm Gate’s main formation?”

Once those words were said, the crowd all revealed curious expressions.

To be able to destroy the main formation and slow the opening speed of the Upper Realm Gate was simply akin to a heroic act for the people of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

At that moment, Chu Hanpeng smiled lightly. He said, “Actually, everyone already knows the person.”

“He is our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm’s number one person of the younger generation, Chu Zhiyuan.”

Chu Hanpeng pointed his finger toward Chu Zhiyuan, who was standing on the battle stage.

Chapter 3063 - A Grand Gift

“What? It was actually Chu Zhiyuan?!”

“Chu Zhiyuan was the one to destroy the Upper Realm Gate’s main formation and slow its opening speed?!”

“That’s right, it should be him, it was most definitely him. Apart from him, who else among the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm’s younger generations could possibly accomplish such a feat?”

After hearing what Chu Hanpeng said, the crowd present immediately burst into an uproar.

Not to mention the others, even the Starfall Holy Land’s Holy Ruler, the Paradise Valley’s Valley Master and the other grand characters of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm revealed a change in their expressions as they looked to Chu Zhiyuan.

Not only that, but they even hurriedly stood up and began to clasp their fists respectfully toward him.

“Little friend Zhiyuan is truly our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm’s hero. Please accept this old man’s respect.”

“Young hero Zhiyuan, please accept this old man’s respect.”

At that moment, those grand experts of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm actually all began to bow respectfully to Chu Zhiyuan.

This scene was very stunning. At least, it stunned the people of the younger generation present.

The people of the younger generation that were capable of being there were all extraordinary individuals.

However, as they looked to Chu Zhiyuan on the battle stage, they felt a feeling of distance.

They knew that the disparity between them and Chu Zhiyuan was already a day and night difference. If they were specks of stars in the starry sky, then Chu Zhiyuan would be the bright moon.

With the bright moon shining gloriously, the stars in the sky were destined to lose their splendor.

At that moment, even though there were countless grand characters present, the person that was shining the brightest was none other than Chu Zhiyuan.

“Seniors, please sit back down.”

“What I, Chu Zhiyuan, did was only what I’m supposed to do.”

“After all, I am not only a person from the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, I am also a member of the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“Although I am still very young and very weak, I will go through water and tread on fire without any hesitation to protect our Chu Heavenly Clan,” Chu Zhiyuan clasped his fist.

“Well spoken! Truly a heroic young man, truly a heroic young man!”

Chu Zhiyuan was immediately met with applause after saying those words.

“Milord, you’re truly blessed with a great grandson,” many people even began to congratulate Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather.

With the situation being like that, that Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather’s aged face was smiling like a steamed stuffed bun. All of his wrinkles were creased together. His eyes were so narrowed that they resembled two lines.

He was truly overjoyed.

“Old fellow, it is all thanks to me that your grandson was able to enjoy such a glorious day. How are you going to thank me?”

Right at that moment, a voice transmission entered Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather’s ears.

It was Chu Haoyan’s grandfather.

It turned out that Chu Haoyan’s grandfather was the first person in the Chu Heavenly Clan that discovered the appearance of the Upper Realm Gate.

When he saw the Upper Realm Gate, the speed of the Upper Realm Gate’s opening had already slowed down.

It was not the first time he had seen an Upper Realm Gate. Thus, he knew that the slow speed of the Upper Realm Gate was abnormal.

However, he had no idea that the Upper Realm Gate’s main formation was destroyed.

Thus, their claim of the Upper Realm Gate’s main formation being destroyed was merely a fabricated lie.

As Chu Haoyan’s grandfather felt that he was the first person to witness the Upper Realm Gate in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, he possessed absolute speaking authority, and could thus say whatever he wanted.

And currently, the opening speed of the Upper Realm Gate was indeed very slow. As such, it was a great opportunity for them.

Originally, Chu Haoyan’s grandfather wanted to present this honor to his grandson, Chu Haoyan.

However, he felt that Chu Zhiyuan, with his inevitable rise in power, might consider his grandson a threat should he present such an honor to his grandson.

Even though Chu Haoyan's grandfather and Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather were accomplices, there was no such thing as an eternal enemy or an eternal friend.

For their own benefits, it was inevitable that they would oppose each other one day. Thus, after considering things, Chu Haoyan's grandfather felt that it would be very dangerous should Chu Haoyan become Chu Zhiyuan's enemy based on the sort of character Chu Zhiyuan was.

As such, he decided to do a favor for Chu Zhiyuan and give the honor of saving the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm to Chu Zhiyuan.

"Rest assured, I will definitely not let you down," Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather replied to Chu Haoyan's grandfather through voice transmission.

"You will naturally have to thank me properly. Originally, you were against this, thinking there might be a mishap. It is only because I persuaded you that you agreed to it. See all this, you know who's correct now, no?" Chu Haoyan's grandfather said.

"Enough of your cutting remarks. After all, the Upper Realm Gate's speed will not slow down for no reason at all. I was worried that someone had truly destroyed the main formation. If Zhiyuan is to stand forth and declare that it was done by him only to have the person who actually destroyed the main formation stand forth later, the situation will become very bad. That is the reason why I did not agree to it," Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather said.

"How could that possibly be the case? I was the first one to discover that Upper Realm Gate. Granted, even if I wasn't, which person of the younger generation would dare to enter it? Even if a person of the younger generation dared to enter it, who could possibly find the main formation?"

"Are you to say that the main formation was destroyed by the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations? Perhaps the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations possess such capability." n..0V**eIb1n**

“However, the opening of the Upper Realm Gate is an enormous opportunity for them. How could they destroy the Upper Realm Gate’s main formation, something so detrimental to them?”

“Thus, the way I see it, you were worrying for nothing and overthinking things.”

“Look... even with the announcement, no one is questioning Chu Zhiyuan. Everyone believes that the slowing of the Upper Realm Gate’s opening speed was done by Chu Zhiyuan,” Chu Haoyan’s grandfather said.

“Haha. Right, right, right. I was overthinking things earlier. It is all thanks to you. Rest assured, I will definitely repay you,” Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather replied with a laugh.

The others present were naturally unable to hear the conversation between those two old codgers.

In fact, only three people knew of Chu Zhiyuan’s fabrication in destroying the Upper Realm Gate’s main formation. They were Chu Haoyan’s grandfather, Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather and Chu Zhiyuan himself.

Apart from the three of them, even Chu Haoyan and Chu Zhiyuan’s fiancée Chu Ruoshi did not know about the matter.

Of course, Chu Hanpeng, who had announced it earlier, also did not know the truth.

They all thought that the slowing of the Upper Realm Gate’s opening was truly Chu Zhiyuan’s contribution.

“A heroic young man, little friend Chu Zhiyuan is truly worthy of being the most heavenly-beloved genius of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.”

Right at that moment, the Saintly Stellar Monk stood up.

Once he stood up, everyone’s gaze shifted from Chu Zhiyuan to him.

After all, the Saintly Stellar Monk was the number two world spiritist in the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield.

To the entire Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, he was a truly noble and honored guest.

“This old man has come with a gift.”

As the Saintly Stellar Monk spoke, he waved his sleeve. Then, the stone case on the table immediately opened.

After the stone case opened, an item floated out from it.

It was a sphere. The sphere was transparent. That sphere was a formation. It did not appear to be special at all.

However, inside that sphere was another item, a suit of armor.

That armor was fiery-red. The grain of the armor resembled scales as they interwove with one another in an orderly fashion. There were even surging flames. It was very beautiful. The armor looked as if it were composed of flames, and as if it were extremely extraordinary.

Chapter 3064 - Li Clan's War Chariot

“This... could it be the Fire Qilin Armor?”

Upon seeing the red armor, the crowd's eyes all started to shine. Even Chu Hanpeng revealed an astonished expression.

The Fire Qilin Armor was an extremely precious treasure.

All of the people in the Ancestral Martial Starfield that had experience and knowledge had all heard of the Fire Qilin Armor.

Wearing the Fire Qilin Armor, no one apart from experts at the Heavenly Immortal realm or above would be able to bring harm upon the wearer.

Furthermore, it was said that the Fire Qilin Armor also possessed intelligence. If one were able to make the Fire Qilin Armor recognize them as its master, the Fire Qilin Armor would fuse with them.

At that time, not to mention experts below Heavenly Immortal cultivation, even Heavenly Immortal-level experts would not be able to cause any harm to the Fire Qilin Armor's master. In fact, even when fighting against Martial Immortals, the Fire Qilin Armor would still be able to protect its master's life.

But that was just a rumor. The Fire Qilin Armor had passed through multiple hands. However, not a single person was able to make the Fire Qilin Armor recognize them as its master.

That said, the most amazing aspect regarding the Fire Qilin Armor would be its reputation.

Wearing it would serve as a sort of status symbol. Thus, one could totally neglect its actual usage.

“This armor is the Fire Qilin Armor.”

“Today, I will present this Fire Qilin Armor to little friend Chu Zhiyuan,” the Saintly Stellar Monk said while looking at Chu Zhiyuan.

“Senior, you must not. That Fire Qilin Armor is too precious,” although that was what Chu Zhiyuan was saying, his eyes were fixed on the Fire Qilin Armor.

Actually, the Fire Qilin Armor did not have much use for him.

However, as the Fire Qilin Armor was a treasure that even many Exalted-level experts wanted to wear, what sort of honor would he, a Heavenly Immortal-level expert of the younger generation, possess should he be able to wear it?

“Little friend Chu Zhiyuan, you need not be so modest. This gift of mine is something that this old man had prepared for the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm’s number one heavenly-beloved genius. As for you, you are qualified to accept this gift of mine,” as the Saintly Stellar Monk spoke, he waved his arm lightly, and the Fire Qilin Armor broke through the sphere and began to float toward Chu Zhiyuan.

“Thank you Milord,” Chu Zhiyuan began to admire the Fire Qilin Armor after receiving it.

“Let’s see you put it on,” the Saintly Stellar Monk said.

“Sure,” Chu Zhiyuan hurriedly put on the Fire Qilin Armor.

It must be said that the Fire Qilin Armor’s reputation was not in vain.

Chu Zhiyuan had an extraordinary air to begin with. Merely, he was lacking a bit of the airs of a ruler.

However, after wearing the Fire Qilin Armor, the aura he emitted immediately soared. Standing there, he resembled a god of war, a true ruler.

Before wearing the Fire Qilin Armor, Chu Zhiyuan was, no matter how powerful, only a person of the younger generation.

However, after he wore the Fire Qilin Armor, even many of the older generation's experts present were eclipsed by him.

That was all due to the Fire Qilin Armor.

As the saying goes, humans will be judged by their clothing just like horses were judged by their saddle.

A good suit of armor was capable of altering the aura that one gave off completely.

"The Fire Qilin Armor's reputation is truly well-justified. Chu Zhiyuan thanks senior."

Overjoyed by the enormous gift, Chu Zhiyuan kowtowed to the Saintly Stellar Monk.

No one felt what Chu Zhiyuan was doing to be inappropriate. Firstly, the Saintly Stellar Monk was someone who was qualified to receive such an enormous act of respect.

Secondly, the Fire Qilin Armor was a priceless treasure. For the Saintly Stellar Monk to present such a gift to Chu Zhiyuan, it was only natural for Chu Zhiyuan to express his thanks.

"Get back up, get back up," with a smile on his face, the Saintly Stellar Monk gently waved his arm, and a gentle power brought Chu Zhiyuan back to his feet.

Suddenly, the Saintly Stellar Monk turned to ask Chu Hanpeng, "Brother Hanpeng, which one is Mingyuan's daughter?"

Hearing those words, Chu Hanpeng's expression immediately changed. A slightly displeased expression appeared in his eyes. n//OVerl&In

They all knew who that Mingyuan the Saintly Stellar Monk spoke of was. Gu Mingyuan was Chu Lingxi's mother. The Saintly Stellar Monk was asking for Chu Lingxi.

"Lingxi has left to train in the Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan. She did not participate in the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition this time around," Chu Hanpeng said. [1. Ancient = Gu.]

"Oh? Wasn't it said that that girl was not fond of the Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan, and refused to go there to train?" the Saintly Stellar Monk asked.

"People will inevitably change. While Lingxi was insensible in her youth, she has grown sensible now," Chu Hanpeng said.

"Good, good," the Saintly Stellar Monk smiled. He seemed to be very pleased with this outcome.

Actually, those that knew about the Saintly Stellar Monk all knew that Chu Lingxi's mother had once learned world spirit techniques under the Saintly Stellar Monk. Thus, the Saintly Stellar Monk could be considered to be a partial master of Chu Lingxi's mother.

That was the reason why he was so concerned for Chu Lingxi.

However, hearing that dialogue, Chu Xuanzhengfa, who stood among the crowd, had a subtle change in expression. Unable to contain himself, he glanced to Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi.

Chu Xuanzhengfa knew very well why Chu Lingxi continued to stay by his side even though she knew very well that her cultivation would increase faster following her mother. The reason why Chu Lingxi didn't follow her mother was because she was not fond of the Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan. She also held a grudge toward her mother.

The reason for that was because Gu Mingyuan was not very approving of Chu Xuanzhengfa.

As for Chu Lingxi's decision to go to the Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan, it was actually because of Chu Feng.

What had happened to Chu Feng came as an enormous shock to Chu Lingxi. That was why she decided to go to the Ten Thousand Provinces Ancient Clan and train beside her mother.

Chu Lingxi wanted to avenge Chu Feng with her own strength. She wanted to obtain justice for Chu Feng.

At that moment, the gaze with which Chu Xuanzhengfa was looking at Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi contained some sympathy.

The reason for that was because he knew that, regardless of how powerful Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi might be now, they would one day be defeated by Chu Lingxi.

The two of them would definitely not be able to win against someone personally taught by Gu Mingyuan.

Suddenly, the Saintly Stellar Monk asked again, “Oh, that’s right. I’ve heard that Chu Xuanyuan’s son didn’t die, and has returned to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. However, why is it that I didn’t see him in the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition?”

“Eh...” When he mentioned Chu Feng, Chu Hanpeng found it difficult to speak.

“What’s wrong?” the Saintly Stellar Monk asked.

“Chu Feng has died,” Chu Hanpeng said.

“Died? How did he die? Wasn’t it said that he was still alive, and had returned to your Chu Heavenly Clan?” the Saintly Stellar Monk asked.

“He indeed returned. However, he has died in our clan,” Chu Hanpeng said.

“Died in your Chu Heavenly Clan?” the Saintly Stellar Monk asked.

“Senior, that Chu Feng has indeed died in our Chu Heavenly Clan. However, his death was well-deserved,” right at that moment, Chu Zhiyuan suddenly interrupted.

“His death was well-deserved? What do you mean by that?” the Saintly Stellar Monk asked.

Afterwards, Chu Zhiyuan began to, before all the people present, mention what had happened with Chu Feng, and how he had died. He narrated everything with fervor and passion. When speaking of the crucial parts, he would even appear to be completely enraged.

Of course, all that he was saying were merely lies. He was slandering Chu Feng's reputation.

Merely, the people present had no idea. Many among them even believed it to be true.

"Saintly Monk, that Chu Feng was a hypocrite. His death was well-deserved."

"That's right. Saintly Monk, compared to that Chu Feng, little friend Chu Zhiyuan is the true hero."

"That's right. For the sake of his own interests, that Chu Feng went as far as killing his own clansmen."

"As for little friend Chu Zhiyuan, he braved dangers with no hesitation, and entered the Upper Realm Gate by himself to destroy the main formation, all for our Great Chilocosm Upper Realm. He is truly a righteous person, truly a heavenly-beloved genius."

After Chu Zhiyuan made his claims, not only did the people present believe him, but they even began to slander Chu Feng and praise Chu Zhiyuan.

However, the Saintly Stellar Monk had a very undisturbed expression. Without saying anything, he silently sat back in the main seat.

Actually, he had already heard about Chu Feng. After all, many people were insulting Chu Feng from the very beginning of the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition. How could someone like him possibly not be able to hear those mockeries and insults?

He had asked about Chu Feng deliberately. He wanted to verify things for himself.

"Huu, huu~~~"

Right at that moment, surging wind appeared in the distant sky. It was like the arrival of an abnormal sign.

“What is that?”

That scene immediately caught the crowd’s attention, causing them to all to turn their eyes toward it.

Upon looking over, they discovered that it was a war chariot. That war chariot was flying in the sky. Surrounding the war chariot were surging black clouds. It was as if the war chariot was the ruler of the sky, and even the clouds would have to serve it.

The crowd’s attention was originally captured by the war chariot. However, they soon discovered a banner on the war chariot.

That banner was drifting in the wind. Written on the banner were the large characters: Li Heavenly Clan.

“Li Heavenly Clan?!!!”

The crowd’s hearts all tightened upon seeing those characters.

They already knew about the opening of the Upper Realm Gate. As for the other side of the Upper Realm Gate, it was precisely the Li Heavenly Clan.

They knew very well what sort of existence the Li Heavenly Clan was. That was the reason why they all started to panic in fear, as if a calamity had descended upon them, after finding out that the other side of the Upper Realm Gate was the Li Heavenly Clan.

And at that moment, the war chariot of the Li Heavenly Clan had actually arrived at the Chu Heavenly Clan’s front door. With this, how could the crowd not be frightened?

Chapter 3065 - Came For Revenge

“It’s the Li Heavenly Clan. It really is the Li Heavenly Clan.”

“Milord, what’s going on here? Wasn’t it said that the Upper Realm Gate’s opening has been slowed down? Why would the Li Heavenly Clan appear here so quickly?”

At this moment, many of the people present were panicking. Even the grand characters present were panicking.

They were unable to see through that Li Heavenly Clan's war chariot. As such, they did not know what sort of expert was inside, and became worried because of that.

After all, if the Li Heavenly Clan's Supreme Elders were inside the war chariot, a battle would be unavoidable. It would not only be the Chu Heavenly Clan that would end up suffering, even they would be implicated.

At the moment when the crowd was panicking, the Saintly Stellar Monk spoke, "Don't panic, they're merely people of the younger generation."

While others were unable to see through that war chariot, the war chariot was unable to hide its occupants from the Saintly Stellar Monk's eyes.

"Younger generation?" The crowd were all surprised after hearing those words.

Soon, that war chariot arrived before the crowd.

At that moment, everyone's gaze was focused on the war chariot.

Finally, the spirit formation gate on the war chariot started to squirm. Following that, people began to walk out of the war chariot.

There were a total of fifteen people, six women and nine men, all people of the younger generation.

All of them had imposing appearances. One could tell with a single glance that they were extraordinary individuals.

Even though their auras were deliberately concealed through the use of special treasures, one could still tell that they were very powerful.

When those fifteen people appeared, practically all of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm's younger generations were eclipsed by them.

"They really are people of the younger generation."

"Why would a bunch of people from the younger generation come here?"

"That Li Heavenly Clan is looking down on us too much, no? They've actually dispatched a group of their younger generations?"

After verifying that the people inside the war chariot were indeed a group of younger men and women, the people of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm were all confused as to what the Li Heavenly Clan was thinking.

“Lord Saintly Monk, you’re also here?”

Right at that moment, a man in white walked out and respectfully greeted the Saintly Stellar Monk.

Not only were Li Youbin and the other seven people of the younger generation that had entered the Upper Realm Gate present among the fifteen, but even Li Anzhi’s younger brother Li Tianyou was present.

However, the leader among them was a man in white.

That man in white had a youthful look to his face. While he was not particularly handsome, he gave off a very extraordinary air. He had very fair skin, and was holding a folding fan. As he clasped his fist to respectfully greet the Saintly Stellar Monk, he looked very refined.

“Little friend Li Yan, it has been some time since we last met. Your cultivation has increased again,” the Saintly Stellar Monk replied with a smile on his face.

The Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations had all concealed their cultivation through the use of treasures. Even experts like Li Hanpeng were unable to determine their cultivation.

However, the Saintly Stellar Monk was able to see through their cultivation. He knew very well that that man by the name of Li Yan was actually a rank five Heavenly Immortal.

Such a cultivation was actually not particularly powerful when placed in the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield.

However, when compared to the younger generations of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, Li Yan would be an existence that they could only look up to.

“Senior is flattering me,” Li Yan clasped his fist in response.

“Li Yan, he is that Li Yan?”

“Reportedly, he was deemed to be one of the Li Heavenly Clan’s three great geniuses with Li Ming and Li Anzhi during his youth.”

“Even though his later progress did not match up to Li Anzhi and Li Ming, he can still be counted as the Li Heavenly Clan’s number two genius ever since Li Ming died.”

“I’d heard that he was a rank four Heavenly Immortal.”

“What? He’s a rank four Heavenly Immortal at such a young age? This is simply too powerful, no? Is that the disparity between our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm and the Li Heavenly Clan?”

There were people present among the crowd that had heard of Li Yan and knew of his reputation. At that moment, they immediately began to spiritedly discuss what they had heard of him.

Right at that moment, Chu Hanpeng asked, “Little friends, what might have brought you all to our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm?”

“Senior, we have come here today seeking an individual,” Li Yan clasped his fist.

Even though Li Yan knew that they would become enemies in the future, he was acting very courteously, and was displaying the modesty that a person of the younger generation should possess.

“Who might you be seeking?” Chu Hanpeng asked.

“He should be someone from your Chu Heavenly Clan. However, I do not know exactly what his name is. I hope that he can come forward on his own,” as Li Yan spoke, he deliberately cast his gaze upon the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations present.

“Why are you seeking him?” Chu Hanpeng asked.

“He has injured the brothers of my clan in the Upper Realm Gate. I have not come here today for the sake of obtaining justice for them. I merely want him to know that our Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations are not as weak as he imagined,” Li Yan said.

“This...”

At that moment, the crowd all involuntarily turned their gazes to Chu Zhiyuan.

To have entered the Upper Realm Gate and defeated the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations, there should be no one other than Chu Zhiyuan that could have done that. After all, Chu Zhiyuan was the only person among the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations that could possibly defeat the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations.

Furthermore, it was known that Chu Zhiyuan had entered the Upper Realm Gate and destroyed the main formation.

At that moment, the people of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm began to look at Chu Zhiyuan with even more reverence in their eyes.

They only knew that Chu Zhiyuan had entered the Upper Realm Gate and destroyed the main formation, and didn't know that he had clashed with the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations.

When thinking of how Chu Zhiyuan fought against the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations for the sake of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm's safety, how could they not feel admiration for him? $n - \frac{1}{O(V(e))} I - \frac{1}{n} \cdot I(n)$

However, they had no idea that Chu Zhiyuan was completely stunned upon hearing what Li Yan said.

After all, he did not enter the Upper Realm Gate, much less fight against the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations.

"What's wrong? You dared injure us back then, yet do not dare to admit to it now?"

"So the strongest person of the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations is actually a coward," seeing that Chu Feng was nowhere to be seen, Li Tianyou started to mock him.

"Who told you that I, Chu Zhiyuan, am a coward?" Right at that moment, Chu Zhiyuan suddenly spoke.

He had no choice but to speak up. After all, everyone knew that he was the strongest member of the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generation.

"You are not qualified to speak to me. Go and call the strongest member of your Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generation out," Li Tianyou said.

“I am the strongest,” Chu Zhiyuan said.

“You?”

Hearing Chu Zhiyuan’s words, Li Tianyou laughed mockingly. He took a disdainful glance at Chu Zhiyuan. His eyes were filled with contempt.

Although Chu Zhiyuan was also a Heavenly Immortal, he was only a rank one Heavenly Immortal. That level of cultivation was simply not something that Li Tianyou would place in his eyes.

Right at that moment, someone from the crowd said, “Little friend, perhaps you might not know about it, but little friend Chu Zhiyuan is the strongest person of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm’s younger generation.”

“Oh?” Hearing those words, the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations all carefully looked to Chu Zhiyuan.

“The person that I’m calling for is the one that destroyed the main formation in the Upper Realm Gate,” Li Tianyou emphasized.

“There’s no mistake then, that formation was destroyed by none other than little friend Chu Zhiyuan,” this time, more people spoke at the same time.

“It’s not him,” Li Tianyou said.

“How could it not be him? Little friend, you should have your clan’s younger generations that were injured by him come and recognize little friend Chu Zhiyuan,” the crowd said.

“I said it’s not him so it’s not him! Younger generations that were injured by him?! This young master is also a person of the younger generation that was injured by him!” Right at that moment, Li Tianyou yelled furiously.

Li Tianyou felt that the people of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm were deliberately insulting him. That was why he became so furious.

However, upon hearing what he said, the people of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm were all confused.

It was clearly Chu Zhiyuan who had destroyed the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm’s main formation. Why would the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations say that it was not him?

Right at that moment, Li Yan said, "Seniors, the one who injured our clansmen is this person."

As he spoke, he flipped his palm, and a picture scroll floated out from his hand toward the sky. Once that scroll opened, it immediately increased in size.

Everyone present was able to clearly see the image on that scroll.

"This..."

When the people of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm saw the image on the scroll, they were all stunned; their expressions changed enormously.

The reason for that was because the image on that scroll was Chu Feng.

Chapter 3066 - Extremely Ridiculous

"Chu Feng, isn't that Chu Feng?"

Upon seeing the image of Chu Feng, the crowd were all astonished. After all, Chu Feng was an existence known to everyone in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

Merely, Chu Feng had already died. As such, how could he appear in the Upper Realm Gate and defeat the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations?

Not to mention being dead already, even if he were still alive, he wouldn't be able to accomplish that. In the crowd's knowledge of Chu Feng, no matter how powerful Chu Feng might be, he would still not be a match for the current Chu Zhiyuan.

The Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations were surprised by the astonished reactions from the people of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. It was Li Youbin who managed to react first. With a low voice, he said, "Chu Feng, that's a familiar-sounding name."

"Didn't Chu Xuanyuan have a son called Chu Feng?"

"That's right, Chu Xuanyuan does have a son by the name of Chu Feng. However, wasn't it said that his son had been imprisoned in the Chu Heavenly Clan's forbidden area together with him and died because he was unable to withstand the power of the forbidden area?"

“That’s right, I’ve also heard that Chu Xuanyuan’s son had already died. Moreover, even if that really is Chu Xuanyuan’s son, wasn’t his son labelled as trash incapable of cultivating? How could he possibly defeat us?”

At that moment, the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations were unable to contain themselves, and began to talk among themselves.

After all, Chu Xuanyuan was simply too grand of an existence. Thus, Chu Xuanyuan’s son was an existence the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield had paid attention to.

After discussing it among themselves, the strongest among them, Li Yan, stood forth. He pointed to Chu Feng’s portrait and asked Chu Hanpeng, “Senior, is that man Chu Xuanyuan’s son?”

“He is indeed Chu Xuanyuan’s son,” Chu Hanpeng said.

“It really is Chu Xuanyuan’s son?!” The Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations were all astonished upon finding out about this. After all, they had heard rumors of Chu Xuanyuan’s son before.

According to what they knew, not only was Chu Feng already dead, but he was even someone incapable of cultivating when he was still alive.

If the one that defeated them was truly Chu Xuanyuan’s son, it would be an extremely serious situation.

At the very least, it would mean that Chu Xuanyuan’s son was not a nobody.

“However, for you to say that it is him who defeated you all, it is very unlikely for that to be the case,” Chu Hanpeng said.

“Unlikely? Why would it be unlikely? It was clearly him who made things difficult for us inside the Upper Realm Gate. That is something that we have personally witnessed. Are you implying that we’ve mistaken him for someone else?” Li Tianyou said.

“The reason for that is because Chu Feng is already dead,” Chu Hanpeng said.

“Senior, my brothers can verify that the one that injured them in the Upper Realm Gate was indeed that Chu Feng.”

“This matter is absolutely true. Yet, you’re using the pretext of Chu Feng being dead to shield him. I feel that you’re looking down on us too much here, no?”

“Senior, could it be that you’re really considering us as fools?” Li Yan asked.

He simply did not believe that Chu Feng had died. Thus, he only felt what Chu Hanpeng said to be an excuse from their Chu Heavenly Clan to protect Chu Feng.

“Strange, wasn’t little friend Chu Zhiyuan the one who entered the Upper Realm Gate? Why would the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations insist on saying that it was Chu Feng, and not little friend Chu Zhiyuan?”

“Could it be that Chu Feng really didn’t die, and that it is Chu Zhiyuan that’s lying?”

At that moment, faced with the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations sticking to their statement, many people of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm began to suspect Chu Zhiyuan.

“Chu Feng has died. This matter is absolutely certain. Moreover, the one who destroyed the Upper Realm Gate’s main formation is someone else. Thus, we are not shielding Chu Feng. Rather, little friends, you all are deliberately stirring up trouble without cause,” Chu Hanpeng said.

“We are deliberately stirring up trouble without cause? The way I see it, it is you all that are deliberately stirring up trouble without cause.”

“What did you all say earlier? That the Upper Realm Gate’s main formation was destroyed by that guy? In other words, you’re saying it’s him who defeated us?”

“How could someone like him even be qualified to defeat us?” Li Tianyou pointed to Chu Zhiyuan. His words were filled with contempt.

At that moment, everyone turned their gazes to Chu Zhiyuan.

Even though they all knew that Chu Feng had died, they were unable to help but suspect if Chu Zhiyuan had really entered the Upper Realm Gate based on the attitude of the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations.

At that moment, Chu Zhiyuan was placed in a very difficult situation, and was feeling an enormous headache.

Ignoring the question of Chu Feng being alive, merely the question of who it actually was that destroyed the Upper Realm Gate's main formation was already an enormous worry to him.

However, there was nothing he could do about it. He could not admit before all these people that he had not entered the Upper Realm Gate, that the main formation was not destroyed by him.

If he were to admit that, it would not only be a question of humiliation, all of his credit would be ruined, and he would become the laughingstock of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

At that moment, Chu Zhiyuan was no longer capable of stopping midway. He could only force himself to cling to his claims.

Otherwise, his illustrious name would be completely destroyed.

Chu Zhiyuan pointed at the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations and loudly shouted, "Enough of your endless pestering. I am the one who destroyed the main formation in the Upper Realm Gate. Furthermore, when I entered the Upper Realm Gate, I simply did not see you there at all, much less injure any of you."

"For you all to inexplicably appear here now and declare that the one who destroyed the main formation was a dead person, exactly what is your intention? Even if you're looking for trouble, you should've found a better justification than that."

"Do not use such an absurd excuse to justify your trouble-seeking!"

Chu Zhiyuan was truly a person who had endured humiliation for many years for the sake of his goal. In terms of putting on a show, he was truly proficient.

Thus, he was not only speaking with righteousness, but he was also speaking with a very reprimanding tone. It was as if the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations were truly lying and there to seek trouble.

"What's this? You're truly capable of speaking."

“Please, do not plaster gold all over your face. Why don’t you look at your own strength first. How could someone like you possibly dare to declare themselves to be the one to destroy the Upper Realm Gate’s main formation?”

“That’s right, stand the hell aside. You should go and find a mirror to look properly at yourself, and judge exactly what you’re capable of.”

Chu Zhiyuan’s words were immediately met with ridicule from the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations.

After all, they were not lying. What they had said was the truth.

Thus, to them, what Chu Zhiyuan said was simply a joke, an extremely ridiculous and funny joke.

Chapter 3067 - Confrontation Between Two Clans

“What utter shamelessness. We have clearly never confronted one another; yet you all dare to look down on me like this,” Chu Zhiyuan was very furious. His anger was not a pretense. Instead, he was truly angered by the contempt from the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations.

After all, Chu Zhiyuan was no longer the same Chu Zhiyuan who would silently endure humiliation from others.

He had revealed his true capabilities. Not only had he defeated all of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm’s younger generations, but he had also defeated Chu Qing.

His cultivation was that of a rank one Heavenly Immortal now, a cultivation surpassing all other younger generations. He was truly deserving of the title of being the number one genius in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

With such glory, how could he possibly endure humiliation from others again?

If he were to endure their humiliation, it would not only be his own humiliation, it would instead be a humiliation to the entire Chu Heavenly Clan.

Furious, Chu Zhiyuan actually turned to clasp his fist at Chu Hanpeng. He said, “Milord, the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations are simply being excessively rude. They are not only not placing this junior in their eyes, but they are not placing our Chu Heavenly Clan in their eyes.”

“This junior requests to be allowed to spar against them. I wish to let them know that our Chu Heavenly Clan is absolutely not something that they can insult like this.”

Once Chu Zhiyuan said those words, the expressions of many people changed. It was not only the bystanders, even Chu Hanpeng and Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather’s expressions changed to that of a frown.

All those with knowledge knew that the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations were definitely stronger than the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations.

Even though Chu Zhiyuan was a rank one Heavenly Immortal now, he would still not have great odds of victory against the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations.

Chu Zhiyuan’s action could be said to be impulsive.

However, if he were to allow them to insult him without fighting back, it would also become a matter of ridicule for others once it spread.

Thus, Chu Hanpeng did not answer Chu Zhiyuan. Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather also did not attempt to advise his grandson. The reason for that was because not even they knew whether they should have Chu Zhiyuan fight against the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations.

“Very well, I accept your challenge. Merely, for someone of your strength, you are not qualified to fight against our Li Heavenly Clan’s men. Allow this young lady to spar against you,” right at this moment, a woman from the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations stood forth.

Once she stood forth, the people from the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm began to feel with even greater conviction that the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations had come to seek trouble.

They felt that the declaration of Chu Feng destroying the main formation and injuring them should be a made-up justification.

Their true purpose in coming was to look for trouble.

After all, with the opening of the Upper Realm Gate, the Li Heavenly Clan and the Chu Heavenly Clan were destined to battle one another.

Now that the main formation of the Upper Realm Gate had been destroyed by the Chu Heavenly Clan, and the Upper Realm Gate's opening speed had slowed, the Li Heavenly Clan's army would not be able to arrive in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm immediately. As such, the Li Heavenly Clan would naturally harbor hard feelings. n/-o.(V)-E--l//b))1./n

That was the reason why they immediately dispatched those younger generations of theirs to come and provoke the Chu Heavenly Clan.

They even made up an excuse of being injured by a Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generation and sought out Chu Feng, a dead man, to be the culprit.

Although their excuse might appear to be absurd, it was actually very brilliant.

After all, since Chu Feng had already died, it would be impossible for him to appear and explain everything. Thus, they could say whatever they wanted.

When thinking of this, the people of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm all felt that they had seen through the Li Heavenly Clan's plot. Because of that, they felt with even greater conviction that it was Chu Zhiyuan who had destroyed the Upper Realm Gate's main formation, and that it was the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations that were lying.

"Forget about it, you are a woman, it's better to have a man come and fight me. Otherwise, it would make it appear as if I am bullying you," Chu Zhiyuan said.

"It is not that I am looking down on you. However, with your cultivation, you are only qualified to fight against me. After all, everyone else is stronger than me," as the woman spoke, a formless power was released from her body.

At that moment, the crowd's expressions all changed. The reason for that was because that woman's cultivation was that of a rank one Heavenly Immortal, the same cultivation as Chu Zhiyuan.

That woman declared that all of the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations present were stronger than her. Wouldn't this mean that all of the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations apart from her were stronger than Chu Zhiyuan?

"In that case, you all are truly planning to send a woman to spar against me?" Chu Zhiyuan's gaze turned to Li Yan and the others.

“Enough of your superfluous words. I am more than sufficient to handle you,” that woman’s attitude was very unyielding. At the same time, she had revealed her contempt toward Chu Zhiyuan.

“In that case, you shouldn’t say that I, Chu Zhiyuan, am bullying you when you lose,” Chu Zhiyuan said.

Chu Zhiyuan was saying all this deliberately. He had already realized that the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations must have people stronger than him.

Thus, he had only planned to spar against that woman. If he won against her, he was planning to refuse all further challenges.

That was the reason why Chu Zhiyuan asked those things. Those words would become his excuse in refusing the further challenges from the other Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations.

As for the woman before him, Chu Zhiyuan was actually not worried about her at all. As fellow rank one Heavenly Immortals, Chu Zhiyuan possessed absolute certainty in being able to defeat her.

“I’ve already told you to not bother with your superfluous words. Why are you so naggy? If you want to spar, then accept it. If you are afraid, then scam immediately, and call that Chu Feng out instead of wasting everyone’s time,” at that moment, that woman actually revealed a displeased expression.

“Very well, since that’s the case, I, Chu Zhiyuan, shall experience the strength of a Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generation today.”

“Merely, if you are defeated, I hope you do not look for excuses for your defeat,” Chu Zhiyuan said.

“This young lady should be the one to say those words.”

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, the woman’s body shifted. She flew down from the war chariot and arrived on the battle stage.

When she arrived on the battle stage, not only was she holding an Incomplete Immortal Armament in her hand, but a Heaven level Lightning Mark was also present on her forehead.

That woman had actually trained in the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique.

Once the Heaven level Lightning Mark appeared, her cultivation immediately increased from rank one Heavenly Immortal to rank two Heavenly Immortal. Furthermore, with her Incomplete Immortal Armament in hand, her battle power had reached that of peak rank two Heavenly Immortal.

Moreover, that woman did not have the slightest hesitation upon landing on the battle stage. She immediately started attacking Chu Zhiyuan.

With the situation being like that, how could Chu Zhiyuan possibly dare to hesitate? He also immediately unleashed his Heaven level Lightning Mark, and revealed his own Incomplete Immortal Armament.

In the blink of an eye, the two of them collided with one another.

Chapter 3068 - Extremely Disgraced

“That Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generation is truly powerful.”

Seeing that the two fighters were locked in battle with victory undetermined, the people from the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm started to frown.

After all, Chu Zhiyuan was the strongest member of their Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm’s younger generation, whereas that woman was the weakest among the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations present.

Even though this was merely a match between two people of the younger generation, it would, nevertheless, illustrate the disparity between the Li Heavenly Clan and the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Even though it was already obvious that the Li Heavenly Clan was much stronger than the Chu Heavenly Clan, the people from the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm were still astonished to personally witness this. At the same time, they started feeling much more uneasy.

Although the Upper Realm Gate’s opening speed had decreased, it would still one day open completely.

If the Li Heavenly Clan was determined to attack their Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, they would still be unable to escape this calamity.

“Rumble~~~”

Right at that moment, a loud explosion was suddenly heard. Powerful energy ripples began to scatter about in all directions like massive waves.

It was Chu Zhiyuan and that Li Heavenly Clan’s woman. The two of them had an intense confrontation.

Turning their eyes toward the two fighters, the expressions of the older generation’s experts present all changed.

They were able to see through the ripples that Chu Zhiyuan was lying on the ground. Furthermore, that woman had arrived before Chu Zhiyuan, and was stepping on Chu Zhiyuan’s head with her foot.

Chu Zhiyuan was actually defeated in their match.

Chu Zhiyuan, the number one genius of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, was actually defeated by a woman of the Li Heavenly Clan.

“Woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, the woman waved her sleeve, and the vast amount of energy ripples that covered the battle stage immediately dispersed.

After the energy ripples dispersed, the image of the woman and Chu Zhiyuan were both present before the crowd.

Earlier, it was only the experts of the older generation that knew what had happened on the battle stage.

Those from the younger generation were simply unable to see through the energy ripples and, had no idea that Chu Zhiyuan had already been defeated.

However, everything was now clear to their eyes. Seeing this, those people of the younger generation all revealed a massive change in expression.

“Heavens, this!!!”

All of the people from the younger generation were stunned. They simply did not dare to believe their eyes.

The strongest member of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm's younger generation was not only fallen to the ground, but his head was also being stepped on by a woman. This scene was simply too difficult to accept.

The reason for that was because this not only meant Chu Zhiyuan's defeat and humiliation, but it was also their entire Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm's defeat and humiliation.

"Trash. With this bit of strength, you have the nerve to say that you were the one who destroyed the Upper Realm Gate's main formation?"

"You should go and call that man by the name of Chu Feng out here, for you are not even qualified for this young lady to go all-out against."

Not only was that woman from the Li Heavenly Clan stepping on Chu Zhiyuan's head, but she was also ridiculing him.

Hearing those words, Chu Zhiyuan was immediately furious. If that woman were to use anyone else to insult him, he would be able to tolerate it.

However, that woman actually used Chu Feng to insult him; this was simply intolerable in Chu Zhiyuan's eyes.

Overwhelmed with rage, the expression in Chu Zhiyuan's eyes started to change. It turned into one of extreme ruthlessness. It was simply not a gaze that ordinary humans should emit.

Soon, Chu Zhiyuan's eyes started to change. His eyes turned crimson.

It was not only his eyes; crimson symbols also appeared on his body. The symbols were flickering with light that shone through his clothing.

Even though he was wearing clothes, one could still clearly see the crimson symbols that covered his body.

At the same time, a powerful aura was being emitted from Chu Zhiyuan's body.

The power was so strong that it directly beat back the woman who was stepping on Chu Zhiyuan's head.

"This guy?"

Looking to Chu Zhiyuan again, it was not only that woman from the Li Heavenly Clan that revealed a greatly alarmed expression; practically everyone present was greatly alarmed.

At that moment, Chu Zhiyuan was emitting a crimson gaseous aura from his body.

Being enveloped by the crimson gaseous flames, Chu Zhiyuan's body, which was seriously injured by that woman, was actually healed instantly. Moreover, his body enlarged ten-fold. Chu Zhiyuan now resembled a small giant.

Looking like that, Chu Zhiyuan simply no longer resembled a human. Rather, he resembled a demonic being.

Most importantly, Chu Zhiyuan's aura had increased again. Accompanying the appearance of the crimson runes, Chu Zhiyuan obtained a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting a single level of cultivation.

"This is... a demonic technique?"

At that moment, the expressions of everyone present changed. They were all able to sense the aura that Chu Zhiyuan was currently emitting. It was no ordinary aura, but was filled with evil tendencies. It was a demonic technique, something that had been cultivated using countless lives.

Chu Zhiyuan was enraged by that woman and lost his reasoning. He simply no longer cared about the crowd's opinion of him. At that moment, he was determined to kill that woman.

"Damn bitch, your daddy will rip apart that mouth of yours!"

As Chu Zhiyuan spoke, he began to walk toward that woman.

Seeing that the situation was bad, the woman planned to escape. However, she was astonished to discover that she was unable to move a single step.

It was Chu Zhiyuan. Chu Zhiyuan had used his power to restrict that woman's ability to move.

Earlier, under the same level of cultivation, Chu Zhiyuan was indeed inferior to that woman, and ended up being defeated by her.

However, at this moment, Chu Zhiyuan had unleashed his Bloodcurse Demonic Technique and obtained heaven-defying battle power. That woman was simply no match for him now. In fact, just by using his oppressive might, Chu Zhiyuan managed to restrict that woman's movements.

At that moment, Chu Zhiyuan was emitting frightening killing intent from all over his body.

Seeing such a Chu Zhiyuan walking toward her, that woman was extremely scared. She did not doubt Chu Zhiyuan's claim of ripping her mouth apart at all. Furthermore, she felt that Chu Zhiyuan would even take her life.

Seeing that the situation was amiss, the woman planned to speak out and call for help from her fellow clansmen.

However, before she could even say anything, a figure landed before her.

It was Li Youbin. Li Youbin was a rank three Heavenly Immortal. At that moment, he had also unleashed his Heaven level Lightning Mark, and thus increased his cultivation to rank four Heavenly Immortal.

With a single thought from Li Youbin, boundless oppressive might descended from the sky.

Before this oppressive might, Chu Zhiyuan immediately crashed onto the battle stage. Like a dying dog, he was suppressed to a state of being unable to move at all.

"He's actually a rank three Heavenly Immortal! That's too powerful, no?"

The majority of the people present had only heard about how powerful the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations were. When they witnessed exactly how powerful the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations were, they were immediately tongue-tied with shock.

"Is this the strongest member of your Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generation?"

"Turns out, the strongest member of your Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generation is actually someone that increased his cultivation through slaughtering innocents to train in his demonic technique."

“From this, it is obvious as to exactly what sort of Heavenly Clan your Chu Heavenly Clan is,” Li Youbin mocked.

At that moment, not to mention the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan, even those of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm felt extremely disgraced.

Chapter 3069 - Unleash A Massacre

The reason for that was because Chu Zhiyuan was simply too much of a disgrace.

Not to mention a rank one Heavenly Immortal, even if it was a rank nine Heavenly Immortal, no one would respect them should they obtain their cultivation through slaughtering innocent lives.

At that moment, it was not only the people from the Li Heavenly Clan that looked down on Chu Zhiyuan; even the people from the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm that had declared Chu Zhiyuan to be their hero were looking at him with contempt on their faces.

“Exactly what is going on here?!” Right at that moment, a furious shout was heard.

It was Chu Hanpeng. Chu Hanpeng’s angry shout was aimed at Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather.

Evidently, Chu Hanpeng had also only just discovered that Chu Zhiyuan had trained in a demonic technique. As for that, it was something that Chu Hanpeng found intolerable.

“Lord Hanpeng, I also have no idea. I don’t know when Zhiyuan learned a demonic technique,” at that moment, Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather started to panic. Then, he pointed at Chu Zhiyuan and loudly shouted, “You disappointing failure, who taught you that demonic technique?!”

“Grandfather, this here is not a demonic technique. It is a forbidden medicine. I have merely taken a forbidden medicine. I have never willfully slaughtered the innocent,” being suppressed by Li Youbin, Chu Zhiyuan regained his reasoning and realized how grave the situation was. He immediately provided an excuse for himself.

Unfortunately, simply no one believed his excuse.

After all, there were many renowned individuals among the people present.

Those grand characters were naturally capable of easily determining whether the power Chu Zhiyuan had unleashed was from a forbidden medicine or from a demonic technique.

Thus, they all believed that Chu Zhiyuan was lying; that he was trying to provide an excuse.

Merely, for the sake of protecting the Chu Heavenly Clan's face, none of them exposed Chu Zhiyuan.

"Not only did you train in a demonic technique, but you're even lying in plain daylight. With how shameless you are, it is no wonder you would pretend to be the one to destroy the Upper Realm Gate's main formation."

"That said, that Chu Feng is likely a coward too."

"Back in the Upper Realm Gate, he was acting so high and mighty. Yet here today, he does not even dare to show his face."

"So this is all that the Chu Heavenly Clan is capable of," right at that moment, Li Tianyou began to ridicule them all.

"Who told you that I, Chu Feng, am a coward?"

Right at that moment, a voice suddenly sounded from the direction of the crowd.

Once that voice was heard, Chu Hanpeng, Chu Zhiyuan, Chu Ruoshi, Chu Xuanzhengfa and everyone else from the Chu Heavenly Clan, as well as everyone from the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, all revealed a change in expression.

The crowd turned their gazes toward the direction of the sound. Immediately, their expressions changed even more.

The reason for that was because they were able to see a figure from among the crowd.

As for that person, he was none other than Chu Feng.

"Heavens! It's Chu Feng, it really is Chu Feng!"

“Chu Feng, you didn’t die?”

The crowd all felt deep disbelief upon seeing Chu Feng.

People like Chu Xuanzhengfa, who were worried about Chu Feng, even stood up emotionally.

However, Chu Zhiyuan, Chu Ruoshi, Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather and Chu Haoyan’s grandfather were panicking slightly.

They felt that Chu Feng should’ve undoubtedly died. How could he still be alive?

If Chu Feng was alive, wouldn’t that mean that what the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations said was true?

Was it really Chu Feng who entered the Upper Realm Gate and destroyed the main formation to postpone the opening of the Upper Realm Gate?

“Chu Feng, wasn’t it said that you were already dead? Why would you still be alive?”

At that moment, many people began to question Chu Feng.

Faced with these questions, Chu Feng waved his hand and said, “I will explain what happened to me. However, before that, I must first speak with these Li Heavenly Clan’s guests. After all, they have called upon me, I, Chu Feng, couldn’t possibly refuse their challenge.”

As Chu Feng spoke, his body shifted, and he arrived on the battle stage.

“Chu Feng, in that case, it was truly you who destroyed the main formation of the Upper Realm Gate?” At that moment, there was someone among the crowd that was unable to keep themselves from questioning Chu Feng.

It was Chu Xuanzhengfa. Chu Xuanzhengfa wanted to verify the matter before everyone. After all, it was no small matter, as it was an endlessly glorious accomplishment. n-0ve**B**1n

Chu Feng turned to Chu Xuanzhengfa and said, “Senior Zhengfa, that was indeed done by me.”

Then, he looked to Chu Zhiyuan, who was lying on the ground. He chuckled coldly. "Merely, I would've never expected Chu Zhiyuan to be so shameless. Likely, he did not even enter the Upper Realm Gate. Yet, he dared to proclaim himself to be the one to destroy the Upper Realm Gate's main formation."

Hearing what Chu Feng said, the crowd all involuntarily turned their gazes to Chu Zhiyuan with contempt-filled eyes.

As matters stood, they were convinced that Chu Zhiyuan was assuming Chu Feng's glory.

Thinking about it, Chu Zhiyuan went as far as to train in a demonic technique for the sake of power, and went as far as to deceive everyone for the sake of his honor. As matters stood, the crowd's impression of Chu Zhiyuan had taken a dive.

From a hero that stood high and above, Chu Zhiyuan became a vile man that they looked down on.

"Traitor Chu Feng, you dare to still boast so shamelessly?! Today, this old man shall execute you on the spot!"

Right at that moment, a furious shout was heard. Following it, an enormous oppressive might, one that contained killing intent, swept toward Chu Feng.

It was Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather.

How could Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather possibly allow Chu Feng to live? He had decided to attack and kill Chu Feng.

"Buzz~~~"

However, even though Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather's oppressive might had approached Chu Feng, it was suddenly dispersed.

The crowd's expressions all changed upon seeing this scene.

This was especially true for the experts present. They were able to tell that Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather's oppressive might had been neutralized by someone. Someone was helping Chu Feng.

"Chu Heavenly Clan, are you all trying to silence Chu Feng?"

Right at that moment, a voice was heard. Following that, a figure appeared in the sky.

It was an old lady. That old lady was dressed very plainly.

She was not very tall, and was even slouching. In her hand was a long tobacco pipe. She was currently sucking on that pipe.

When the crowd saw the old lady, they all revealed confusion in their eyes. Even Chu Feng was reacting like that.

The reason for that was because the great majority of the people present did not know that old lady. Even Chu Feng did not know her.

Right at that moment, that old lady waved her sleeve, and boundless power covered the entire region.

That old lady's aura was actually that of a rank three Exalted, an entire level above Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather and Chu Haoyan's grandfather.

After unleashing her oppressive might, an extremely sharp gaze appeared in that old lady's aged eyes.

"Chu Heavenly Clan, you bunch of despicable and shameless individuals. For the sake of your own personal gain, you went so far as to try to assassinate a member of the younger generation."

"Today, this old lady will help Chu Feng obtain justice."

After she finished saying those words, the oppressive might in the sky started to change. Suddenly, the entire region became chilly. Everyone present revealed frightened expressions.

The reason for that was because that chilly sensation was killing intent. Contained within that oppressive might was boundless killing intent. The killing intent had covered everyone present.

That old lady was actually planning to unleash a massacre!!!

**Martial God Asura #Chapter 3070 - Chu Fengs
Grandma? - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 3070 -
Chu Fengs Grandma?**

Chapter 3070 - Chu Feng's Grandma?

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, with a thought from Chu Hanpeng, overwhelming oppressive might swept forth.

If that old lady's oppressive might was filled with killing intent, then Chu Hanpeng's oppressive might was extremely gentle.

However, that gentle oppressive might managed to block that old lady's oppressive might.

It turned out that Chu Hanpeng was also a rank three Exalted.

His cultivation was above that of Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather and Chu Haoyan's grandfather. It was no wonder that, although the three of them were all Supreme Elders, Chu Hanpeng possessed greater status than the two of them. It turned out that... Chu Hanpeng actually possessed the strength to justify his status.

That said, the old lady was not one to be trifled with either. Her oppressive might was extremely powerful. Even Chu Hanpeng was unable to suppress her oppressive might completely. Their oppressive might collided, but the outcome of this confrontation was undetermined.

The confrontation of oppressive might from two rank three Exalted experts distorted even space itself.

This sort of spatial distortion was no small matter. It was even more frightening than space being shattered.

After all, the power that was filling the region was capable of instantly killing the great majority of the people present.

Because of that, the people present were all astonished by Chu Hanpeng's strength. At the same time, they were scared of that old lady. After all, that old lady was planning to kill them.

Most importantly, the crowd all wanted to know exactly who that powerful old lady, who was so powerful that she was capable of contending against Chu Hanpeng, was.

“Illusory Blood Clan’s Clan Chief, you had disappeared for many years.”

“For you to reappear and plan to unleash a massacre upon our Chu Heavenly Clan immediately afterward, I’m afraid that’s rather inappropriate, no?” Chu Hanpeng said.

The gaze with which Chu Hanpeng looked at the old lady was different from the others. He was not confused. Instead, he seemed to be looking at an old friend.

“What? The Illusory Blood Clan’s Clan Chief?”

Chu Hanpeng’s words caused everyone’s expressions to change. They all revealed astonished expressions. Even Chu Feng was no exception.

Chu Feng had heard of the Illusory Blood Clan before. They were a legendary clan of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

Reportedly, the Illusory Blood Lotus was controlled by the Illusory Blood Clan.

That said, the Illusory Blood Clan was merely a legend. No one would’ve imagined that the Illusory Blood Clan truly existed.

If that old lady was truly the Illusory Blood Clan’s Clan Chief, then the appearance of the Illusory Blood Lotus outside the Ghost Sect Hall was most definitely not a coincidence. Instead, it should have been manipulated by that old lady.

“So she’s the Illusory Blood Clan’s Clan Chief. No wonder, it’s no wonder she’s so powerful,” the head of the Starfall Eight Immortals, Elder Xingyi, let out a gasp of astonishment.

Beside Elder Xingyi were the other Seven Immortals, their Starfall Holy Land’s Holy Daughter Xia Yun’er, and their Starfall Holy Land’s Holy Son Song Yunfei, as well as many others of the Starfall Holy Land’s younger generations.

Hearing what Elder Xingyi said, they all turned their eyes to Elder Xingyi, trying to find out what was going on.

“Back then, outside the Inheritance Cave, the Nine Profound Sect had wanted to attack Chu Feng because he seized the inheritance.”

“At that time, an old lady appeared. That old lady used her absolute power to suppress everyone present. She then warned everyone to not think of doing anything to Chu Feng, else the ones that would suffer would not only be them, but the entire Nine Profound Sect and our Starfall Holy Land.”

“Although we did not manage to see what she looked like, we were able to see her general figure. Right now, I am practically certain that the person outside the Inheritance Cave that day, the person that saved Chu Feng that day, was precisely that old lady,” Elder Xingyi said.

“No wonder that Chu Feng has been running around with no regard for the law and showed no fear ever since he appeared.”

“Turns out, the one standing behind him is the legendary Illusory Blood Clan.”

At that moment, Song Yunfei and the other people of the younger generation that had made an enemy of Chu Feng all started to frown.

It was only at that moment that they realized that the existence behind Chu Feng was much more powerful than their Starfall Holy Land.

When thinking of this, they inevitably started to feel lingering fear. If Chu Feng was one to keep a grudge, they feared they would end up suffering miserably.

That said, even Chu Feng actually had no idea who that powerful existence standing up for him was.

“Chu Feng, who is that? Do you know her?” Her Lady Queen asked. Her beautiful eyes were filled with questions.

“I don’t know her. You and I have been together the entire time, and neither of us have ever met her before,” Chu Feng said.

“She would not be helping you for no reason. Could it be... she is related to your grandfather?” Her Lady Queen asked. There was a basis for her question.

After all, that day, Chu Feng had not only obtained his grandfather’s Blackflame Ghost Sword from the Illusory Blood Lotus that appeared outside the Ghost Sect Hall, he had also obtained the Spirit Beast Mysterious Treasure Diagram.

As for that Spirit Beast Mysterious Treasure Diagram, it was originally purchased by a mysterious individual in the Grand Auction Assembly.

Thinking about it now, that mysterious individual should be that old lady.

For her to help Chu Feng so much, there must be a reason.

Suddenly, Her Lady Queen asked, "Chu Feng, could she be your grandma?"

"You're kidding," although Chu Feng said those words, he still turned his eyes to the old lady and began to carefully size her up.

After all, when thinking about it, it was not only Chu Feng's mother that was a mystery; his grandmother was also a mystery.

As for the old lady before him, her age was similar to that of his grandfather. Furthermore, she had been keeping the Blackflame Ghost Sword that his grandfather had supposedly lost.

If the Blackflame Ghost Sword was lost, why would it end up in that old lady's possession? Could it be a token of love?

If that was the case, then that old lady could truly possibly be Chu Feng's grandmother.

Right at that moment, that old lady said, "You are all bullying my good friend's grandson. How could I possibly watch with folded arms?"

Her words indirectly informed everyone why she was standing up for Chu Feng. Turned out, it was because of Chu Hanxian.

"For the sake of his own personal gain, Chu Feng went as far as killing his fellow clansmen. Even his death was brought upon himself by his own actions. How are we bullying him?" Chu Hanpeng said.

"That's right. My grandson personally witnessed what that Chu Feng did. Although I do not know why that Chu Feng is still alive, it is a fact that he attacked my grandson and the others with the intention to kill them."

"My grandson and Ruoshi were fortunate to survive. However, two among our Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations met their deaths at that Chu Feng's hands."

“Chu Feng’s crimes are unforgivable! He shall be put to death!” Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather shouted.

“Shut your mouth! The ones that shall be put to death are you all!” After hearing what Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather said, that old lady became extremely furious. She waved her sleeve and sent forth her martial power, which turned into a blade as it flew toward Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather.

However, before that martial power blade could reach Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather, it stopped in midair, trembled, turned back into martial power and dispersed into the wind.

Naturally, it was Chu Hanpeng who had neutralized that martial power blade.

Since he was here, Chu Hanpeng would not allow that old lady to harm anyone from their Chu Heavenly Clan.

“Blood Clan’s Clan Chief, your strength is naturally at the top of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.”

“However, if you’re planning to take on our Chu Heavenly Clan by yourself, I’d urge you to reconsider,” Chu Hanpeng narrowed his brows when he said those words. Everyone was able to tell that he was slightly angry.

If that old lady insisted on doing whatever she pleased, Chu Hanpeng was truly going to end up fighting against her.

“Humph, why don’t you show this old lady exactly what your Chu Heavenly Clan is capable of,” however, even though she was facing Chu Hanpeng, that old lady was not at all afraid. As she spoke, her gaze started to change. Even her oppressive might became much more powerful.

Right at that moment, an aged voice sounded from the crowd.

“Blood Clan’s Clan Chief, thank you for helping out of righteousness. However, you should let this old man handle this matter.”

Chapter 3071 - Setting The Record Straight

The voice that was suddenly heard from among the crowd was extremely resounding.

It immediately caught everyone’s attention.

Even that old lady turned her gaze toward the direction of the voice.

Upon seeing what they saw, the old lady, as well as the great majority of the people present, revealed a change in expression.

The person before them was someone that they did not know. Furthermore, that man was emitting the aura of a rank two Exalted.

Although that level of cultivation was extremely powerful already, it was evidently inferior to the old lady and Chu Hanpeng's cultivation.

As such, how could he have the courage to stand forth at a time like this and declare that the old lady not involve herself in the matter because he could settle it?

That said, compared to the great majority of the people present, Chu Hanpeng, Chu Xuanzhengfa, Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather and the others from the Chu Heavenly Clan revealed an enormous change in expression.

The reason for that was because they all knew who that person was.

He was none other than Chu Youyuan.

After verifying that it was indeed Chu Youyuan, Chu Xuanzhengfa revealed a joyous expression and called out, "Lord Youyuan."

It was not only Chu Xuanzhengfa who was feeling happy at that moment. Even Chu Hanpeng revealed a joyous expression. Merely, the joyous expression in Chu Hanpeng's eyes flashed past instantly, and was replaced with an angry look.

He shouted loudly at Chu Youyuan, "Youyuan, where have you gone to?! How could you wordlessly disappear for so long?!"

The reason why Chu Hanpeng was angry at Chu Youyuan was because he truly thought that Chu Youyuan had encountered some sort of mishap, and grieved for his death.

After all, Chu Youyuan was one of their Chu Heavenly Clan's great figures. No one would be willing to lose Chu Youyuan. Because of that, a lot of people felt joy upon seeing Chu Youyuan again.

That said, compared to the joyous expressions of the others, Chu Haoyan's grandfather and Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather's aged faces instantly turned deathly pale. Panic filled their eyes.

Whilst others might not know how Chu Youyuan disappeared, they knew very well how he had disappeared.

Chu Youyuan disappeared because he was forced into the Infernal Lake by the two of them.

"Hanpeng, instead of asking me those words, it's better that you ask the two of them," Chu Youyuan pointed to Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather and Chu Haoyan's grandfather on the main viewing platform.

Then, he pointed to Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi, "You can also ask the two of them."

Chu Youyuan's words came like a sudden clap of thunder.

Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi's expressions immediately changed enormously.

This was especially true for Chu Ruoshi. She fell several steps back, and nearly fell onto her butt. Sweat covered her face.

In the end, they were only people of the younger generation. Their tolerance for shock was lacking. After seeing Chu Youyuan, they started to panic completely. n)-OVe1b1n

In fact, it was not only the two of them. Even the two Supreme Elders were trying their hardest to conceal their panic and unease.

"This... what is going on here?"

After hearing what Chu Youyuan said, the great majority of the Chu Heavenly Clansmen turned their eyes to Chu Haoyan's grandfather and Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather. There was also a small portion of them that turned their eyes to Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi.

Upon seeing Chu Ruoshi's panicky expression, many people's expressions changed. They realized that something was amiss.

“Chu Youyuan, what is the meaning of this? What does your silent disappearance have to do with us? You’ve even went so far as to involve two people of the younger generation; exactly what is your intention?” Seeing that the situation was turning bad, Chu Haoyan’s grandfather immediately spoke to refute Chu Youyuan.

“Quiet,” however, right after he spoke, Chu Hanpeng spoke to stop him.

Then, he said to Chu Youyuan, “Youyuan, exactly what happened? Explain from the beginning.”

Hearing those words, the faces of Chu Zhiyuan, Chu Ruoshi, Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather and Chu Haoyan’s grandfather all sunk.

Chu Youyuan had quite a status in their Chu Heavenly Clan. To them, Chu Youyuan’s survival was extremely bad.

Chu Youyuan did not hesitate either. He cleared his throat, and then said to the crowd, “I believe everyone already knows about Chu Feng’s supposed death.”

“I believe everyone has also heard about my disappearance. However, what you all know is not the truth.”

“Today, this old man will reveal to everyone the actual truth.”

“The two members of our Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generation that died in the Sacred Domain were not killed by Chu Feng,” Chu Youyuan pointed his finger to Chu Haoyan’s grandfather and Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather, “Instead, they were killed by those two, our Chu Heavenly Clan’s Supreme Elders.”

“What? It’s the two Supreme Elders?”

Chu Youyuan’s words immediately brough forth a major commotion. Everyone turned their eyes to the two Supreme Elders. Astonishment filled their eyes.

This declaration was simply too astonishing.

If this were true, then it would definitely be an enormous scandal.

“You... you’re making false accusations!”

“Only people of the younger generation are able to enter that Yin Yang Gate. How could the two of us have killed them?”

“Chu Youyuan, even if we have conflicts with one another, you still shouldn’t wrongly accuse us like this. Do you take everyone here to be fools?”

The two Supreme Elders would naturally not admit to what Chu Youyuan said. Not only that, they instead began to falsely accuse Chu Youyuan.

Once they said those words, they were immediately met with the approval of many people. After all, it was a fact that only people of the younger generation were able to enter that Yin Yang Gate.

“You two would naturally not be able to enter it directly. However, if you two were to utilize the soul-seizing technique and seize the bodies of members of the younger generation, you would be able to enter the Yin Yang Gate using their bodies.”

“That soul-seizing technique was also the cause of death of those two younger generations’,” Chu Youyuan said.

“It’s actually a soul-seizing technique?”

“Indeed, if one were to use a soul-seizing technique, it would be possible. But, to use a soul-seizing technique on one’s clan’s younger generations, that’s simply too cruel.”

Hearing those words, the crowd burst into an uproar again.

They knew that using a soul-seizing technique to occupy the body of a member of the younger generation might truly allow one to pass through certain restrictions.

However, something like that was simply too cruel. As the prestigious Supreme Elders of the Chu Heavenly Clan, would they really do that sort of thing? Furthermore, why would they do that sort of thing?

“Your claims are becoming more and more absurd! How could you possibly fabricate this sort of lie?”

“Not to mention that the two of us do not know any soul-seizing techniques, even if we did, we would not have used them on our own clan’s younger generations.”

The two Supreme Elders’ faces turned pale with anger. They were fuming with rage between gritted teeth. It was as if they were truly receiving unjust treatment.

However, Chu Youyuan reacted very undisturbed at their performance. He casually waved his hand and said, “Don’t be so urgent to defend yourself. I’m still not done.”

After he finished saying that, Chu Youyuan turned to the crowd again. “Everyone, you all must be very curious as to why these two Supreme Elders would go as far as to use soul-seizing techniques on their own clan’s younger generations to enter the Yin Yang Gate.”

“Actually, that is very simple. The two of them wanted to eliminate Chu Feng.”

“As for why they wanted to eliminate Chu Feng, it’s because they felt that Chu Feng’s existence would become an obstruction to their respective grandsons, Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Haoyan.”

“Back then, the two of them occupied the bodies of two members of the younger generation and entered the depths of the Yin Yang Gate together with Chu Feng, Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi.”

“After they discovered a spring filled with martial power, they immediately decided to kill Chu Feng and seize it for themselves.”

“Fortunately, I arrived promptly and prevented Chu Feng from being killed. Unfortunately, I was attacked by them, and forced to leap into the Infernal Lake.”

“As for that Infernal Lake, it is filled with water capable of obliterating everything in sight. Entering it would mean certain death. Unless... one is a possessor of a Heavenly Bloodline.”

“Only I knew about that. The two of them did not. Thus, they did not chase after me once I entered the Infernal lake. Furthermore, they were certain that Chu Feng and I had died.”

“Afterwards, they should’ve handed all of the martial power from that spring to Chu Zhiyuan. That is why Chu Zhiyuan’s cultivation has advanced by leaps and bounds. That is why he was able to defeat all of his fellows of the same generation today.”

“This... is the truth as to what happened.”

Chu Youyuan’s words were spoken with righteousness and vigor. Hearing those words, the crowd’s hearts were all shaken.

Chu Youyuan’s claim did not seem to be a lie. His claims were also very logical and clear. It was as if it was the truth of what had happened.

Chapter 3072 - The Confident Chu Youyuan

“Chu Youyuan, I have truly underestimated you. Never would I have imagined that you were so capable of fabricating nonsense.”

“I truly do not know what sort of benefit you’ve received from Chu Feng to frame the two of us like this.”

“No matter what, we are the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Supreme Elders. What you are doing right now is equivalent to going against your superiors.”

After hearing what Chu Youyuan said, Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather and Chu Haoyan’s grandfather were both unable to tolerate it anymore. The two Supreme Elders pointed at Chu Youyuan and began to lash out at him.

Compared to the two of them, who were trying extremely hard to defend themselves, Chu Youyuan was extremely undisturbed.

“The two of you need not dispute it, this old man came here today precisely to declare the truth and retrieve justice for Chu Feng,” Chu Youyuan said.

“What arrogance. Who do you think you are for you to say that whatever you say is the truth?” Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather asked angrily.

“With undeniable evidence, I truly do not know how the two of you can refuse to admit to it,” Chu Youyuan said.

“Undeniable evidence? Why don’t you take out this evidence and let us see it instead of spouting baseless lies,” Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather grew even more spirited upon hearing what Chu Youyuan said.

He firmly believed that Chu Youyuan would definitely not be able to provide evidence. The fact that Chu Youyuan had declared that he had undeniable evidence served to provide Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather with an opportunity to strike back. As long as he insisted on this point, and Chu Youyuan fail to provide evidence, the people would start to think that Chu Youyuan was the liar.

At that moment, everyone turned their eyes to Chu Youyuan. They wanted to see what sort of evidence Chu Youyuan possessed.

After all, the story that Chu Youyuan told was very detailed. Many people felt what Chu Youyuan said to be the truth, and that Chu Feng might've really suffered this injustice.

"What this old man saw with my eyes is the evidence," Chu Youyuan pointed to his eyes.

"What? This..."

Once Chu Youyuan said those words, the crowd were all taken aback.

What he saw was the evidence? This was simply too unreasonable. He was simply taking everyone present to be fools.

At that moment, those that were originally thinking what Chu Youyuan said to be true all began to suspect his statement.

At the very least, he was unable to provide the so-called evidence. This meant that he was making baseless accusations.

"Youyuan, if you are trying to obtain justice for Chu Feng, you must provide definitive evidence. Your words alone are not evidence. No one will believe them," Chu Hanpeng said.

"I've said it already. What this old man saw is evidence, undeniable evidence," Chu Youyuan said.

"Lord Youyuan, this junior has respected and revered you in vain! Never would I have expected you to deliberately distort the truth and wrongly accuse your fellow clansmen just because you've received some benefits from Chu Feng!"

“Lord Hanpeng, you must uphold justice for this junior!”

At that moment, Chu Ruoshi, who had been quiet the entire time suddenly knelt on the ground and began to kowtow to Chu Hanpeng. Not only were her eyes red, but tears were also rolling down her cheeks. It was as if she was truly wronged.

“Lord Hanpeng, this Chu Youyuan is going against his superiors and blurting nonsense. Please uphold justice for us,” Chu Haoyan’s grandfather half-kneeled on the ground.

“Lord Hanpeng, with Lord Clan Chief not being present, you are the person who possesses the greatest authority in the clan. What Chu Youyuan is doing is equivalent to betraying our clan. Lord Hanpeng, please handle this matter as per our clan’s laws and punish him severely,” Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather also half-knelt on the ground.

Compared to Chu Haoyan’s grandfather and Chu Ruoshi’s words, his words were spoken with much more malice. He actually wanted Chu Hanpeng to directly punish Chu Youyuan.

“Lord Hanpeng, one cannot go against the Supreme Elders, much less make false accusations against Supreme Elders to publicly smear their reputation. Lord Hanpeng, you must uphold justice for our Supreme Elders.”

“Lord Hanpeng, you must uphold justice for our Supreme Elders.”

At that moment, many of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s elders actually stood up and then knelt on the ground to plead for Chu Hanpeng to punish Chu Youyuan.

“Good, very good. It would appear that you all possess quite a relationship with these two. This old man will remember you all,” Chu Youyuan looked to the elders kneeling on the ground.

“You dare to threaten our elders. Chu Youyuan, did you really think that our Chu Heavenly Clan could do nothing about you?” Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather berated Chu Youyuan. Then, he turned his eyes to Chu Hanpeng.

As for Chu Hanpeng, he was feeling enormous pressure after being faced with all those elders’ requests.

“Chu Youyuan, if you are unable to provide definitive evidence today and insist on continuing to babble nonsense, this old man will really have to punish you according to our clan’s laws,” Chu Hanpeng said to Chu Youyuan.

Compared to the other elders that were determined to severely punish Chu Youyuan or even kill him, Chu Hanpeng’s tone was that of a warning. He was warning Chu Youyuan to speak no more, or else he would have to punish him.

“Hahahaha...”

However, at that moment, Chu Youyuan burst into sudden laughter. His laughter was very resounding and heart-rending. It was as if he simply did not place any of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s elders, including even Chu Hanpeng, in his eyes.

“Chu Feng, why do I suddenly feel that this Chu Youyuan is acting strange?”

“Back in the Chu Heavenly Clan, he was very humble and modest. Why would he be so arrogant and domineering now?”

“He is simply not helping you obtain justice by acting like this. Instead, he is making the situation even worse,” at that moment, even Her Lady Queen began to worry.

Logically, Chu Youyuan should carefully talk the matter over and explain everything to Chu Hanpeng in detail. Then, he should confront the two Supreme Elders until he found a mistake in their story.

However, Chu Youyuan had reacted so very unyielding from the very start.

Yet, whilst Chu Youyuan possessed strength equivalent to that of Supreme Elders, he did not possess the status of a Supreme Elder.

As such, he did not possess the qualifications to act so unyieldingly. By acting like that, he would instead make the situation much worse for himself, and make people feel like he was spouting sophistry and deliberately causing trouble.

“I also do not understand why Lord Youyuan is acting like this. However, I think he has his own reasoning. We should continue to watch,” Chu Feng said.

Compared to Her Lady Queen, Chu Feng was much more calm.

Although he did not understand why Chu Youyuan was acting like that, he knew that he was powerless at that moment and that no one would believe him even if he spoke up.

Furthermore, while Chu Youyuan appeared to be deliberately causing trouble, he was filled with confidence from the very start.

While Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather and Chu Haoyan's grandfather, the two Supreme Elders, revealed panic on their faces, Chu Youyuan did not.

On the contrary, he was confident the entire time. It was as if everything was within his grasp.

Thus, Chu Feng felt that things would definitely not be as simple as they appeared to be, that Chu Youyuan must have some sort of hidden trump card.

Chu Feng also wanted to see exactly what sort of trump card Chu Youyuan might have to allow him to be so confident, so confident that he dared to confront the two Supreme Elders before all those experts of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, and before Chu Hanpeng.

Chapter 3073 - The Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm's Ruler

"You dare to continue to laugh? Are you truly looking down on our Chu Heavenly Clan?"

"Lord Hanpeng, I request that you immediately punish this man and expel him from our Chu Heavenly Clan."

"Else, what are we to do if our clansmen all begin to act like him?" Chu Haoyan's grandfather said.

"Lord Hanpeng, please punish this man severely, and return justice to our two Supreme Elders," the elders kneeling on the ground also began to plead for Chu Hanpeng to severely punish Chu Youyuan.

"Very well, come at me. Go ahead and use our clan's laws to punish this old man. I shall see who will dare to punish me today," Chu Youyuan suddenly waved his sleeve, and then stood there with his hands behind his back.

“To look down on our clan, your crime is worthy of death. Today, I will eliminate you on behalf of our Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“Let us join hands and eliminate this traitor to our clan.”

At that moment, Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather and Chu Haoyan’s grandfather both soared into the sky. With their weapons in hand, they flew toward Chu Youyuan.

With Chu Hanpeng refusing to act, the two of them had decided to take things into their own hands, and rushed forth to attack Chu Youyuan.

Chu Hanpeng did not attempt to stop them.

Chu Youyuan was indeed acting too excessively. His actions had already brought forth the anger of their clansmen.

The reason why Chu Hanpeng did not do anything was all because he took their Lord Clan Chief into consideration. After all, Chu Youyuan was their Lord Clan Chief’s trusted aide.

However, Chu Hanpeng did not stop Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather and Chu Haoyan’s grandfather either.

It was already very lenient for him to not personally reprimand Chu Youyuan. As such, he would naturally not stop them.

If he were to stop them, he would instead cause greater anger and unrest within the Chu Heavenly Clan.

In the blink of an eye, the two Supreme Elders arrived before Chu Youyuan. Their weapons were thrust toward Chu Youyuan’s vital areas.

The old lady did not attempt to stop the two Supreme Elders either. After all, she did not know Chu Youyuan. Even though they were both acting to stand up for Chu Feng, the old lady, based on her temperament, would not bother to save Chu Youyuan.

After all, she simply did not care about Chu Youyuan’s life and death. All she cared about was Chu Feng’s life and death.

That said, what was most astonishing was that Chu Youyuan was standing there motionlessly with his hands behind his back when faced with these

attacks from the two Supreme Elders. He seemed to not care about their attacks at all.

Soon, the two bladed weapons arrived before Chu Youyuan's vital spots. They were about to pierce into Chu Youyuan's body. As long as they pierced into his body, based on the strength of the two Supreme Elders, Chu Youyuan would undoubtedly be killed.

"Buzz~~~"

However, right at that moment, an astonishing scene occurred. The two Supreme Elders' weapons stopped right in front of Chu Youyuan's clothes. It was as if they were restricted, and unable to move an inch further.

"This?"

The two Supreme Elders looked to one another upon seeing this. Confusion filled their faces.

It was not only the two of them; even Chu Hanpeng and Chu Xuanzhengfa had confused expressions.

"Buzz~~~"

The next moment, a boundless aura was emitted from Chu Youyuan's body.

At that moment, the truth was revealed. Everyone realized why the two Supreme Elders, two rank two Exalted, were unable to injure Chu Youyuan.

The aura Chu Youyuan was emitting at that moment was that of a rank five Exalted. Even Chu Hanpeng was much inferior to him.

"Rank five Exalted. This... this... this is impossible, impossible!"

"You're not Chu Youyuan. Who are you? Exactly who are you?!"

The two Supreme Elders asked loudly. After sensing Chu Youyuan's aura, they had determined that the man before them was not Chu Youyuan, but instead was someone else.

The reason for that was because it would be impossible for Chu Youyuan to possess such a powerful cultivation.

“You want to know who this old man is? Very well, since the truth is revealed, I might as well let you all see who I am.”

“Carefully look at me and see exactly who I am.”

Chu Youyuan smiled coldly. Then, his face, whilst still smiling, began to transform.

Soon, Chu Youyuan’s face changed completely. He turned into another old man.

“Heavens, that is?!”

Upon seeing the current Chu Youyuan, Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather, Chu Haoyan’s grandfather, Chu Hanpeng, Chu Xuanzhengfa, the old lady, everyone else from the Chu Heavenly Clan, and all of the grand characters present all revealed astonished expressions.

This was especially true for Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather and Chu Haoyan’s grandfather. The faces of those two Supreme Elders were currently covered in fear. It was as if they were seeing the Grim Reaper.

This was the first time that Chu Feng saw such fear on those two Supreme Elders’ faces.

“Senior, it’s you?”

That said, when Chu Feng saw the current Chu Youyuan, his expression also changed.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had met that old man before.

Back when Chu Feng was heading for the Void Sacred Tree to find Wang Qiang, Chu Feng had encountered an old man that had journeyed alongside him.

After meeting that old man, Chu Feng inexplicably entered an illusory world. Inside that illusion, Chu Feng made a breakthrough in cultivation.

Back then, Chu Feng did not pay too much attention to the old man. He also did not feel that the appearance of that illusion was related to the old man.

However, Chu Feng now realized that that old man was not as simple as he had imagined him to be.

The reason for that was because the old man was emitting the aura of a rank five Exalted.

“We pay our respects to Lord Clan Chief!”

Right at that moment, everyone from the Chu Heavenly Clan shouted in unison.

Chu Feng looked around, and was astonished to discover that everyone from the Chu Heavenly Clan, including even Chu Hanpeng, had knelt on the ground and were respectfully greeting the old man standing before him.

“What, he’s the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief?”

Chu Feng came to a sudden realization. He finally realized why Chu Haoyan’s grandfather and Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather would become so panic-stricken, as if a great catastrophe was imminent after the old man revealed his true appearance.

Chu Feng also realized why Chu Youyuan was so overwhelmingly confident after arriving, why he was acting as if everything was within his grasp.

Last of all, Chu Feng realized why Chu Youyuan would declare that he would guarantee Chu Feng’s safety, and definitely return justice to him before going there.

It turned out that he was simply not Chu Youyuan at all. Instead, he was the strongest individual of the Chu Heavenly Clan, the leader of the Chu Heavenly Clan, the ruler of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Lord Clan Chief!!!

Chapter 3074 - True Man

Everyone from the Chu Heavenly Clan was astonished.

This was especially true for the elders that had spoken repeatedly of severely punishing Chu Youyuan. At that moment, they were shivering and sweating cold sweat in fear.

When those elders were already reacting like that, Chu Haoyan's grandfather and Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather would naturally be even more panicky.

After all, they never would've imagined that the man before them was not Chu Youyuan, but instead their Lord Clan Chief.

Radiating awe, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief spoke loudly, "Earlier, I'd said that what this old man saw is definitive evidence, and you all felt it to be ridiculous."

"Right now, I will say it again. What this old man saw is definitive evidence. Is there anyone that still finds it to be ridiculous?"

Once he said those words, everyone lowered their heads. Being their Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, what he said was law. No one would dare to raise any objections.

Seeing that no one was refuting him, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief smiled and said, "All of you, rise."

As he said those words, he waved his sleeve, and a gentle power immediately dispersed, lifting up everyone that was kneeling on the ground.

After that, he waved his sleeve again, and forced Chu Haoyan's grandfather, Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather, Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi back onto their knees with his oppressive might.

He said, "As for you all, it's better that you continue kneeling."

"Lord Clan Chief, exactly what is happening?" Chu Hanpeng had a confused expression on his face.

The Lord Clan Chief did not immediately respond to his question. Instead, he turned to Chu Feng, smiled and said, "Chu Feng, I am actually not Chu Youyuan. The actual Chu Youyuan is currently in closed-door training at our Chu Wonderland."

"In that case, senior, you've been deliberately disguising yourself as Lord Youyuan?"

"You were in disguise since the Yin Yang Gate?" Chu Feng came to a sudden realization. However, he still asked those questions to verify his guess.

“Indeed. If I didn’t disguise myself, how could I expose their true filthy appearances?” The Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief looked to the four people kneeling before him as he said those words.

Hearing those words, Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi’s faces immediately turned ashen. It was only at that moment that they realized the whole truth.

It turned out that the Chu Youyuan they had encountered in the Yin Yang Gate back then was not the actual Chu Youyuan. Instead, he was their Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief in disguise.

For the sake of appearing realistic, their Lord Clan Chief even went as far as to deliberately be injured, and then flee into the Infernal Lake with Chu Feng.

At that moment, they were completely stunned. It was as their Lord Clan Chief had declared, his words were indeed definitive evidence.

Of course they were definitive evidence. After all, he was the Clan Chief of their Chu Heavenly Clan, the ruler of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, the king of their entire world.

Originally, Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi had thought that they had won.

It was only at that moment that they realized that they had lost. Furthermore, they’d lost from the very beginning.

“Lord Clan Chief, I know my wrongs, I know my wrongs. Please give me another chance.”

Suddenly, Chu Haoyan’s grandfather, that Chu Heavenly Clan’s Supreme Elder, actually started to tear up, and began to kowtow and beg for forgiveness.

He had no choice but to beg for forgiveness. After all, everything he had done had been witnessed by their Lord Clan Chief. He simply had no chance to refute anything. Only by begging for forgiveness could he still have a chance to live.

“Humph, you know your wrongs?”

“Would our Chu Heavenly Clan’s two people of the younger generation that were killed be revived just because you know your wrongs?”

“If the one that entered the Yin Yang Gate to save Chu Feng wasn’t this old man, but was instead actually Youyuan, it would not only be those two people of the younger generation that would have been killed by you all. Youyuan and Chu Feng would have also been killed.”

“Our Chu Heavenly Clan’s talents would all end up being killed by the two of you! Yet, you still have the nerve to tell me that you know your wrongs?!” The Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief shouted furiously. His voice resounded through heaven and earth. His anger could be felt by everyone present.

“Lord Clan Chief, this was all my idea, I will bear the consequences of my actions alone. Please spare Zhiyuan, please spare Zhiyuan.”

Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather also started to kowtow and beg for forgiveness to the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

That said, compared to Chu Haoyan’s grandfather, Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather did not plead for leniency for himself. Instead, he was pleading for leniency for his grandson, Chu Zhiyuan.

“Do not bother with superfluous words. You will all definitely receive severe punishment for what you have done.”

“That said, this matter is not up for this old man to decide. Instead, Chu Feng will be the one to decide your punishment.”

After saying those words, the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief looked to Chu Feng, “Chu Feng, how do you wish to handle them?”

“What? This...”

Hearing those words, the crowd were all startled.

If the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief had ordered the execution of those two Supreme Elders, no one would voice any objections.

After all, he was the Chu Heavenly Clan’s ruler. According to the laws of the Chu Heavenly Clan, he possessed the authority to punish practically anyone.

However, Chu Feng was merely a person of the younger generation. How could he be qualified to punish the two Supreme Elders?

Seemingly knowing that the crowd was feeling displeased by it, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief shouted loudly, "Who will dare to object to the intention of this old man?!"

Once his shout was heard, it was not only those that were displeased with his decision, even those that weren't displeased were startled and afraid. Apart from Chu Hanpeng, all of the other Chu Heavenly Clansmen uniformly kneeled on the ground.

"Lord Clan Chief, please excuse this old man for speaking forthrightly."

"The crimes that the two of them have committed should be punished with execution. However, taking into consideration that they have made many contributions to our clan, I feel that it would be better to spare their lives," Chu Hanpeng said. He was actually asking for forgiveness for the two Supreme Elders.

"Chu Hanpeng, I have already said it. This old man will not decide what to do with them. Instead, Chu Feng will be the one to decide their punishment."

"If Chu Feng wants them to live, they will live today. If Chu Feng wants them to die, they will die today." *no ve-LB/In*

"This is the promise that I made Chu Feng, that I would retrieve justice for him."

The Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief looked to Chu Feng.

Justice. It turned out that this was the justice that the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had promised Chu Feng.

It was indeed justice.

That said, when faced with this sort of justice, Chu Feng felt very conflicted.

Chu Feng had been in contact with Chu Youyuan for some time now. During this period of time, Chu Feng had formed a very good impression of him.

Perhaps because he had been journeying with Chu Youyuan for a relatively long time, Chu Feng truly started feeling affection for this senior of his.

And at that moment, Chu Feng found out that the person he was associating with the entire time was not Chu Youyuan.

Instead, it was the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

Back then, wasn't it precisely that Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief that expelled his father and him?

Wasn't it the same Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief that left the imprint of 'trash' on their foreheads?

Wasn't it the same Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief that imprisoned his father and him in the Chu Heavenly Clan's forbidden area?

The Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief should be the person Chu Feng detested the most, the person he wanted to kill the most.

Yet at present, Chu Feng was unable to feel any hatred toward the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

The reason for that was because after getting along with him, Chu Feng discovered that the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was actually a genial and impartial senior.

In fact, even before Chu Feng returned to the Chu Heavenly Clan, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had already secretly helped him gain another level of cultivation.

That's right. Chu Feng had originally thought the illusion to be a coincidence. However, Chu Feng was now certain that the illusion should have been created by the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

"Chu Feng, I know that you are feeling very wronged. This old man is also guilty of the injustice that you've received. If you want, you can punish this old man too. That said, I still hope that you will spare their lives," at that moment, Chu Hanpeng clasped his fist and bowed respectfully to Chu Feng.

It would appear that Chu Hanpeng truly did not wish for Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather and Chu Haoyan's grandfather to die. Otherwise, someone of his status would not plead for leniency from a person of the younger generation like Chu Feng.

Faced with Chu Hanpeng's plea, Chu Feng waved his arm and said, "Senior, let us put this matter aside for now. We can discuss it later."

"Put it aside?"

Once Chu Feng said those words, the expressions of many people present changed. They revealed surprise and confusion.

As matters stood, the whole truth was already revealed. Chu Feng had never harmed their Chu Heavenly Clansmen.

Instead, he was a victim. The ones that had harmed Chu Feng were Chu Zhiyuan, Chu Ruoshi and two of the Chu Heavenly Clan's Supreme Elders.

According to the crowd's understanding of Chu Feng, forced to suffer this sort of grievance and being presented the opportunity to punish the criminals, Chu Feng should bring the death penalty upon them.

As such, why would Chu Feng ask for the matter to be put aside for now?

This was not like Chu Feng's character at all.

At the moment when the crowd were confused, Chu Feng said, "I know that many people are unable to understand why I am not punishing them right away."

"Actually, it's very simple. It's because punishing them is not what I want to do the most right now."

"Not what you want to do the most right now?" The crowd were even more confused upon hearing Chu Feng's words.

"Right now, what I want to do the most is not to fight amongst our clan. Instead, it is to defend against foreign enemies."

After saying those words, Chu Feng turned to the the Li Heavenly Clan's war chariot.

"This..."

At that moment, the crowd came to a sudden realization. It turned out that Chu Feng wanted to accept the Li Heavenly Clan's challenge.

After finding out Chu Feng's intention, the crowd's expressions changed again. Reverence appeared in their eyes.

Ignoring how Chu Feng planned to punish the two Supreme Elders, Chu Ruoshi and Chu Zhiyuan, merely Chu Feng's attitude of placing his personal grudges aside for the sake of the greater good, for the sake of his clan, was something worthy of respect.

Chu Feng was a true man of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Chapter 3075 - The Confident Chu Feng

The Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations had been watching everything unfolding before them with the attitude of enjoying a show. n0Ve.1b/In

Originally, they had thought that the drama would continue.

They did not expect that Chu Feng, the victim in all this, would not immediately take revenge upon his clansmen that tried to kill him, but instead turn his spearhead to them, mere bystanders.

"Chu Feng, son of Chu Xuanyuan."

"I, Li Yan, would like to see exactly what sort of ability you might possess."

Right at that moment, Li Yan's body shifted, and he arrived on the battle stage.

The moment Li Yan landed, his aura was released. The aura of a rank five Heavenly Immortal surrounded the entire stage.

Everyone was able to sense Li Yan's strength.

"He's actually a rank five Heavenly Immortal."

"Amazing."

Upon sensing Li Yan's strength, many people began to exclaim in admiration. The Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm's younger generations also began to feel extremely ashamed.

They were currently at the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition. Practically all of the most outstanding younger generations of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm were present.

However, their cultivations were generally only at the True Immortal realm. Furthermore, the great majority of them had not even reached the peak of the True Immortal realm. This was obvious as the winner of the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition, Chu Zhiyuan, was only a rank one Heavenly Immortal. From this, one could determine the overall quality of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm's younger generations.

As for the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations, some random woman was already a rank one Heavenly Immortal.

Furthermore, her fighting techniques were extremely skilled. Her power could be seen by how she managed to defeat Chu Zhiyuan, the winner of the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition.

As for the one that came out after her, Chu Youbin, he was a rank three Heavenly Immortal.

As for the one that came out now, Li Yan, he was even more amazing. He was a rank five Heavenly Immortal.

They had proved the claims of that woman from the Li Heavenly Clan. It was as she had said, she was the weakest amongst the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations present.

Facing such a powerful Li Yan, how exactly would Chu Feng confront him?

Even though Chu Feng was famed throughout the entire Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm for his demon-level genius fighting power, it remained that Chu Feng's cultivation before he disappeared was only that of a rank six True Immortal.

Even if Chu Feng had managed to make progress in his cultivation during the time that he had disappeared, how much progress could he possibly have made?

Would he truly be able to contend against the Li Heavenly Clan's rank five Heavenly Immortal-level genius?

The crowd were filled with doubts regarding this.

However, they did not say anything. Instead, they stared at Chu Feng with worry in their eyes.

Seeing Chu Feng's expression, the crowd grew even more confused.

The reason for that was because there was no trace of panic present on Chu Feng's face. They did not understand if Chu Feng was being reckless, or if he truly was capable of taking on Li Yan.

Before the crowd's gazes, Chu Feng asked, "Rank five Heavenly Immortal, is that your actual cultivation?"

"Precisely," Li Yan answered.

"In that case, are you the strongest among the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations that came here today?" Chu Feng asked.

"Why are you asking that?" Li Yan frowned slightly. He was able to tell that there was ill-intent behind Chu Feng's question.

"If you are the strongest, I will fight with you so that you all will not have journeyed here for nothing."

"However, if you are not the strongest, I'd urge you to go back and call for the strongest amongst you to face me so as to not waste both of our time, and not make you humiliate yourself," Chu Feng said.

"Woosh~~~"

Once he said those words, the crowd was completely astonished.

Chu Feng's words were simply too arrogant.

He simply did not place his opponent in his eyes at all. However, his opponent was no ordinary character; he was a rank five Heavenly Immortal.

"You're trying to say that I, Li Yan, am no match for you, right?" Li Yan chuckled. He said, "I know that you're trained in the legendary Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique."

“However Chu Feng, I, Li Yan, am not as mediocre as you imagine me to be. The abilities that I possess might surprise you.”

“I might as well tell you the truth. Indeed, among our Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations here today, I, Li Yan, am not the strongest.”

Once Li Yan said those words, the crowd’s expressions all changed. They then subconsciously turned their gazes to the Li Heavenly Clan’s war chariot.

They were unable to see through that war chariot. However, after hearing what Li Yan said, they guessed that there must be an even more powerful existence inside the war chariot.

“A member of the younger generation that’s even stronger than Li Yan, could it be that person?”

“That person? Which person?”

“Who else? It’s naturally the strongest person of the younger generation from the Li Heavenly Clan, one of the ten strongest members of the younger generation in the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield, one of the Ancestral Martial Decastars, Li Anzhi.”

“Li Anzhi? Would a genius like that really come here?”

Once Li Yan said those words, he immediately brought forth a major commotion. Many people of the older generation revealed longing expressions in their eyes as they looked to the Li Heavenly Clan’s war chariot.

If they were truly able to witness Li Anzhi’s elegant demeanor, it would be a sort of honor to them.

The Ancestral Martial Decastars possessed an extraordinary significance.

All those that were able to obtain that title in their youth would definitely become grand characters in the future.

Right at that moment, Li Yan added, “However, with your mere rank four Heavenly Immortal-level cultivation, you are far too inadequate to fight him.”

As he said those words, the refined and cultured Li Yan actually revealed an expression of contempt in his eyes as he looked at Chu Feng.

“Rank four Heavenly Immortal, is that Chu Feng’s cultivation?”

“Chu Feng is a rank four Heavenly Immortal now?”

“Could that really be true?”

Li Yan’s words of mockery toward Chu Feng astonished the crowd once again.

This was especially true for Chu Ruoshi, Chu Zhiyuan, Chu Haoyan, Chu Huanyu, Song Yunfei and the others. Their expressions changed enormously.

Rank four Heavenly Immortal, this disparity in strength was simply too enormous, no?

Did Chu Feng really manage to increase his cultivation to that of a rank four Heavenly Immortal in such a short period of time?

Even though the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations declared that Chu Feng had defeated them inside the Upper Realm Gate, many people still suspected Chu Feng to be a rank four Heavenly Immortal.

“Whether or not I, Chu Feng, possess the qualifications is not up to you to decide,” Chu Feng said.

“Then who is it up to?” Li Yan asked.

“It is up to me to decide,” After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng’s body shifted, and he rapidly flew toward Li Yan.

At the moment when Chu Feng moved, his aura was also released. Rank four Heavenly Immortal.

Chapter 3076 - Enter Li Anzhi

“He really is a rank four Heavenly Immortal?”

Many people revealed astonished expressions upon sensing Chu Feng’s aura. After all, this was simply too astonishing for them.

Before Chu Feng disappeared, he was only a rank six True Immortal. And now, he was a rank four Heavenly Immortal. His cultivation had increased by

so much in such a short period of time. The crowd was truly unable to remain unsurprised by it.

That said, compared to the people from the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, Li Yan revealed a sneer on his face.

He was standing there without even bothering to move. Just like that, he waited for Chu Feng's attack to arrive with a confident expression on his face.

The reason for that was because he firmly believed that as long as Chu Feng's cultivation was inferior to his own, even if Chu Feng possessed heaven-defying abilities, he would still be unable to defeat him.

As the number two genius of the Li Heavenly Clan, Li Yan was confident in himself. n/-o.(V)-E--l//b))1./n

In the blink of an eye, while the crowd were still astonished, Chu Feng had arrived before Li Yan.

At that moment, the smile on Li Yan's face grew even more intense. He said, "You're not even unleashing your Lightning Mark? Chu Feng, you've already lost."

Li Yan was ridiculing Chu Feng for underestimating him.

After he finished saying those words, Li Yan unleashed his oppressive might. With a cultivation an entire level above Chu Feng, Li Yan simply did not have to unleash any techniques. Merely his oppressive might would be enough to completely suppress the incoming Chu Feng.

"Boom~~~"

However, at the moment Li Yan unleashed his oppressive might, he felt an enormous pressure appearing out of nowhere, crushing his body. Then, with a 'putt,' he was forced onto his stomach.

At practically the same moment when Li Yan fell on his stomach, Chu Feng landed before him.

"Let me ask you this, am I qualified now?" Chu Feng asked Li Yan with a beaming smile.

At that moment, the people present, apart from Saintly Stellar Monk and the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, both those from the older generation and those from the younger generation, were all stunned.

This was especially true for Li Yan, who was lying on the ground. He had an expression of disbelief on his face.

The reason for that was because the aura Chu Feng was emitting at that moment was not that of a rank four Heavenly Immortal. Instead, it was that of a rank six Heavenly Immortal.

"Rank six Heavenly Immortal, Chu Feng's cultivation is actually that of a rank six Heavenly Immortal?!"

"Am I sensing it wrong?! Is this for real?!"

"It's real, there's no mistake. His cultivation is indeed that of a rank six Heavenly Immortal. Chu Feng's cultivation actually reached rank six Heavenly Immortal!"

"But, wasn't Chu Feng only a rank six True Immortal when he disappeared? How did he become a rank six Heavenly Immortal, how did he increase his cultivation by this much in such a short period of time?!"

"This is truly unbelievable, simply too unfathomable!!!"

At that moment, voices of astonishment sounded repeatedly.

Hearing the crowd's cries of alarm, even the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations revealed astonished expressions.

To increase one's cultivation from rank six True Immortal to rank six Heavenly Immortal in such a short period of time was truly frighteningly fast.

Not to mention among the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations, someone capable of increasing one's cultivation with a speed like Chu Feng's would be extremely rarely seen in the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield.

Suddenly, a furious curse was heard. It was Li Yan. "Bastard, you were concealing your cultivation! You are truly despicable and shameless!"

Li Yan's face had turned green with rage.

Even though Li Yan was also astonished by Chu Feng's actual cultivation, he felt furious because Chu Feng had concealed his cultivation.

If Chu Feng had revealed his actual cultivation from the very start, Li Yan would not have underestimated Chu Feng so much. He would not be defeated so embarrassingly. Because of that, Li Yan was feeling extremely unreconciled.

"Despicable?" Chu Feng chuckled coldly. He said, "You do not even understand the principle of 'there can never be too much deception in war.'"

"Could it be that your Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations have been nurtured in a greenhouse your entire life?"

"You!!!"

Hearing what Chu Feng said, Li Yan was even more furious. However, he was unable to respond.

He understood the principle of 'there can never be too much deception in war.'

Furthermore, Chu Feng's words were correct.

If he had to blame someone, he could only blame himself for being too careless, and not Chu Feng for being despicable.

"What 'there can never be too much deception in war'? In that case, why don't you allow me to experience exactly how powerful your deception in war might be."

Suddenly, a voice was heard from within the Li Heavenly Clan's war chariot.

At the same time as that voice was heard, a figure appeared from the war chariot.

He was a very handsome young man. However, he had an extremely ice-cold look to him. His face resembled an iceberg. It was the sort of face that one would feel was very difficult to approach just by seeing it.

However, after that man appeared, the expressions of many of the grand characters present changed.

“Li Anzhi, the Li Heavenly Clan’s strongest person of the younger generation, one of our Ancestral Martial Starfield’s Decastars. He actually came?!”

There was a grand character that recognized Li Anzhi, and exclaimed in alarm.

“Li Anzhi, he is that Li Anzhi?”

After hearing that exclamation, the others present all instantly burst into an uproar.

Even though it was the first time for the great majority of people present to see Li Anzhi, their expressions all changed upon finding out who the person that had exited the war chariot was.

This was especially true for the people of the younger generation, they were looking at Li Anzhi with eyes filled with admiration. As for the women among them, they were looking at Li Anzhi with adoration in their eyes.

The reason for that was all because Li Anzhi was no ordinary member of the younger generation. Instead, he was one of the ten strongest members of the younger generations in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

After Li Anzhi exited the war chariot, he did not immediately descend to the battle stage. Instead, he stood on top of the war chariot and clasped his fist toward the Saintly Stellar Monk on the main viewing platform, “Junior Li Anzhi pays his respects to senior.”

The Saintly Stellar Monk was truly worthy of being known as the second strongest world spiritist in the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield. His status was truly extraordinary.

Even someone as arrogant and condescending as Li Anzhi would have to respectfully greet the Saintly Stellar Monk of his own accord out of fear of offending him.

“Senior, due to the orders from the seniors of my clan, this junior should not have shown myself.”

“That was why I waited till now to come out and greet you. I hope senior will forgive me.”

After clasping his fist, Li Anzhi bowed to the Saintly Stellar Monk.

“It’s no bother. I am merely a spectator. Your proper business is of greater importance,” With a smile on his face, the Saintly Stellar Monk waved his hand. His intention was very clear. He wanted Li Anzhi to quickly have a showdown with Chu Feng. After all, even he was looking forward to their confrontation.

“This junior understands,” Li Anzhi clasped his fist respectfully again. Then, he turned his gaze to Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, your father and grandfather are both very powerful. They are seniors that we admire.”

“Merely, I do not know exactly what you, their descendant, are capable of,” Li Anzhi said to Chu Feng.

“What I’m capable of? You’ll know if you try me,” Chu Feng smiled lightly. His smile was filled with confidence.

“Since I’ve come here today, I will naturally have to give it a try. Merely, I’m afraid that you will not be able to last should I give it a try,” After saying those words, Li Anzhi’s expression suddenly changed. The next moment, he unleashed his aura.

“This?”

After sensing Li Anzhi’s aura, the crowd’s expression all changed.

The reason for that was because Li Anzhi’s aura was that of a rank seven Heavenly Immortal. His cultivation was an entire level above Chu Feng’s.

Chapter 3077 - The Strongest Showdown

“Rank seven Heavenly Immortal, is this the strength of the Ancestral Martial Decastars?”

“So powerful, this is simply too powerful.”

At that moment, the crowd from the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm all cried out in alarm.

Chu Feng's cultivation was already sufficiently heaven-defying among the younger generation. However, Li Anzhi's cultivation was actually even stronger than Chu Feng's.

That said, those that knew about Chu Feng did not immediately think that he would definitely lose to Li Anzhi.

After all, they knew about the abilities that Chu Feng possessed. Even if his opponent's cultivation was a level higher than Chu Feng's, Chu Feng's heaven-defying secret skill possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting a single level of cultivation.

"Chu Feng, taking into consideration that you are Chu Xuanyuan's son, if you are to admit defeat right now, I will not harm you, and will instead let you walk away unscathed," Li Anzhi said to Chu Feng.

While his words seemed courteous, they were actually filled with the intent to insult.

"I'm afraid that having me admit defeat would be impossible. If you are truly capable, you can try to defeat me with your strength," Chu Feng stood where he was. He had a faint smile on his face the entire time.

Seeing Chu Feng acting like that, Li Anzhi's expression of contempt changed slightly.

He realized that Chu Feng must possess hidden methods. Otherwise... it would be impossible for Chu Feng to still be so confident after he revealed his strength.

"Since that's the case, let us not hold back, and unleash all of our abilities to battle to our heart's content," as Li Anzhi spoke, a Heaven level Lightning Mark appeared on his forehead.

After his Heaven level Lightning Mark appeared, Li Anzhi's cultivation also increased from rank seven Heavenly Immortal to rank eight Heavenly Immortal.

After Li Anzhi's cultivation increased with the appearance of his Lightning Mark, Chu Feng also unleashed his Lightning Mark. With that, Chu Feng's cultivation increased from rank six Heavenly Immortal to rank seven Heavenly Immortal.

After Chu Feng's Divine level Lightning Mark appeared, not to mention the other people of the younger generation from the Li Heavenly Clan, even Li Anzhi revealed a slight frown.

As someone who cultivated the Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique, Li Anzhi had always looked down on others. This was especially true when his Lightning Mark was unleashed. At that time, he would be akin to a king standing high and above when facing other Heavenly Bloodline possessors.

However at that moment, after Chu Feng unleashed his Divine level Lightning Mark, Li Anzhi felt an extremely powerful sense of oppression.

Even though his cultivation was clearly superior to Chu Feng's, that oppressive sensation still managed to affect him.

The reason for that was because that oppressive sensation had nothing to do with one's strength. Instead, it originated from the depths of one's soul, from within one's blood.

It was the oppression of one's blood.

The Heaven Punishment Mysterious Technique was indeed inferior to the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. n-)0ve**l**1n

Even though Li Anzhi was feeling the oppression in his blood, he quickly stopped frowning and revealed a calm and composed expression. He was filled with confidence.

"If that's all you're capable of, you will not be able to contend against me," Li Anzhi said to Chu Feng.

"In that case, what about this?" As Chu Feng spoke, the golden-bright and dazzling Ancient Era's War Sword appeared.

Not only was the Ancient Era's War Sword radiating with light, but it also possessed the aura of a ruler. It resembled a king among weapons, looking down on all living things.

Furthermore, the Ancient Era's War Sword's imposing might was most definitely not false bravado. At the same time it appeared, it's heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting a single level of cultivation also appeared.

“That sword actually possesses a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting a level of cultivation?”

“What is that sword? It’s not an Immortal Technique or an Immortal Taboo Martial Skill. Could it be a secret skill?”

“That guy actually possesses such a heaven-defying secret skill?”

After Chu Feng unleashed his Ancient Era’s War Sword, the expressions of the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations immediately changed. They finally realized why Chu Feng was so confident.

It turned out that Chu Feng actually possessed a heaven-defying secret skill capable of surmounting a level of cultivation.

Even though Chu Feng’s cultivation could only be increased to rank seven Heavenly Immortal after using his Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique, and was simply no match for Li Anzhi’s rank eight Heavenly Immortal cultivation, it was not the same when Chu Feng possessed that enormous golden sword with heaven-defying battle power.

By relying on that sword, Chu Feng was capable of contending against Li Anzhi.

“So that’s the case. No wonder you were so confident.”

“However, Chu Feng. You will still be defeated by me today,” Li Anzhi said to Chu Feng.

“Everyone, why are you all still standing here? The upcoming battle is not something that you all can withstand.”

“Could it be that you all want me to protect you?”

Chu Feng deliberately took a glance at Chu Zhiyuan as he said those words.

Hearing those words, Chu Zhiyuan’s expression turned extremely ugly. It was as if he had been fed feces. However, he did not dare to utter a single fart. Crestfallen, he stood up and returned to where the others from the Chu Heavenly Clan stood.

The current Chu Zhiyuan was a criminal. Both his grandfather and his own lives were in Chu Feng's grasp. As such, how could he dare to talk back to Chu Feng?

At the same time as Chu Zhiyuan left the battle stage, Li Yan and the other Li Heavenly Clansmen also left the battle stage.

Even though Chu Feng's words were belittling them, they knew very well that they would not be able survive on the battle stage when the battle between Chu Feng and Li Anzhi began.

After everyone left the battle stage, Chu Feng said to Li Anzhi, "Come. Let me experience exactly what sort of strength the strongest member of the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generation possesses."

Once Chu Feng said those words, the crowd all revealed expressions filled with anticipation.

As matters stood, the crowd were all certain that Chu Feng was the actual strongest member of the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generation.

As for Li Anzhi, there was no need to doubt that he was the strongest member of the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generation.

This confrontation between the two of them, regardless of the outcome, would become something that people would discuss enthusiastically in the future.

This battle was most definitely worth looking forward to.

"Woosh~~~"

Suddenly, Li Anzhi flipped his wrist, and an Incomplete Immortal Armament appeared in his hand. Then, he waved his Incomplete Immortal Armament and sent forth a golden crescent-shaped blade ray.

"Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~"

The next moment, countless golden arrows appeared out of the golden crescent blade ray. The arrows shot out in a volley toward Chu Feng.

What Li Anzhi had used was an Immortal Technique. Furthermore, it was a rank three Immortal Technique.

Li Anzhi's attack was truly extraordinary from the get-go. Without even landing on the battle stage, Li Anzhi had directly unleashed such a powerful rank three Immortal Technique at Chu Feng from the war chariot.

That said, Chu Feng was already prepared for Li Anzhi's sudden attack. Without even moving, with only a thought, the Ancient Era's War Sword stood before Chu Feng like a shield.

The next moment, that volley of arrows arrived. They collided with the Ancient Era's War Sword. However, their collision was akin to crushed rocks smashing into a wall of steel. They all shattered on impact, and then dissipated into thin air.

Before the Ancient Era's War Sword, Li Anzhi's rank three Immortal Technique was actually unable to withstand a single blow.

"This..."

Seeing this scene, Li Anzhi's expression changed. Shock appeared in his eyes.

His rank three Immortal Technique was unleashed with the power of his Incomplete Immortal Armament.

Yet, not only did Chu Feng not use any Immortal Techniques to withstand it, but he didn't even use an Incomplete Immortal Armament.

Merely by relying on the secret skill itself, Chu Feng managed to neutralize his rank three Immortal Technique.

This illustrated that Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Sword not only possessed a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting a level of cultivation, but its power was also stronger than people imagined it to be.

Chapter 3078 - Fusion Secret Skills

"If that's all you're capable of, I'm afraid you won't be able to defeat me," Chu Feng said to Li Anzhi.

"Haha..."

Li Anzhi suddenly burst into laughter after hearing what Chu Feng said.

Many people were confused by his laughter. Clearly Li Anzhi was on the disadvantaged side during their first encounter. Thus, why was he still able to laugh?

“Chu Feng, that secret skill of yours is indeed extraordinary. However, your heaven-defying battle power originates from your secret skill and not you. You are only able to rely on that secret skill of yours to fight against me. If my guess is correct, that secret skill is your strongest technique.”

“As for me, I have grasped many different Immortal Techniques. That rank three Immortal Technique is most definitely not the strongest Immortal Technique in my arsenal.”

“Did you really think that that secret skill of yours would be able to defeat me?” Li Anzhi asked Chu Feng.

Once he said those words, many people of the younger generation felt what Li Anzhi said to be very reasonable. n.-Ove/bIn

It was as he had said, Chu Feng’s secret skill was extremely heaven-defying.

However, no matter how heaven-defying his secret skill might be, it was still only a technique of his. Right now, Chu Feng was only able to rely on his secret skill to contend against Li Anzhi.

Chu Feng had unleashed his trump card from the very start, whereas Li Anzhi had not. Looking at it this way, the situation was indeed very unfavorable for Chu Feng.

“Whether or not I will be able to defeat you, wouldn’t you know once you give it a try?”

Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, with a thought, the Ancient Era’s War Sword standing before him suddenly turned into a ray of golden light and flew towards Li Anzhi.

Chu Feng actually initiated an attack at Li Anzhi.

Seeing Chu Feng’s incoming attack, Li Anzhi did not act carelessly. He pointed his Incomplete Immortal Armament at Chu Feng.

A golden ray shot out from Li Anzhi's Incomplete Immortal Armament. The next moment, that golden ray turned into an enormous hammer over a thousand meters in length. The enormous hammer collided with the Ancient Era's War Sword.

"Clank~~~"

Ear-piercing rumbles resonated as powerful energy ripples wreaked havoc through the air.

At that moment, the crowd's expressions grew tense.

The reason for that was because the enormous golden hammer had actually managed to beat back Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Sword.

"Rank four Immortal Technique, that's a rank four Immortal Technique!" Someone cried out in alarm.

Actually, even without that person reminding the crowd, they were all able to tell that the Immortal Technique Li Anzhi used was a rank four Immortal Technique.

"Clank, clank, clank~~~"

At that moment, ringing sounds over ten thousand times more ear-piercing than bells sounded from the sky nonstop.

The ear-piercing sounds shook their surroundings violently. Even the martial cultivators present felt as if their ears were buzzing.

Li Anzhi's rank four Immortal Technique was repeatedly striking down at Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Sword and pushing toward Chu Feng nonstop.

Li Anzhi was very smart. He knew that the one that was fighting against him was not really Chu Feng, but rather Chu Feng's secret skill.

Chu Feng himself simply did not possess the ability to contend against him. As long as he continued to press on with his attacks and managed to land an attack on Chu Feng, Chu Feng would undoubtedly be defeated by him.

Unfortunately for Li Anzhi, Chu Feng was definitely not an ordinary opponent either. Chu Feng had already achieved mastery over his Ancient Era's War

Sword. Moreover, Chu Feng possessed superb observation, and rapid reactions.

Thus, Li Anzhi's each and every attack was seen through by Chu Feng, and instantly blocked using the Ancient Era's War Sword.

The giant sword and giant hammer collided in midair repeatedly. The confrontation between the two of them was what caused the nonstop ear-piercing rumbles.

That said, whilst the Ancient Era's War Sword was able to block Li Anzhi's rank four Immortal Technique with difficulty, it was not as powerful as Li Anzhi's Immortal Technique. With every collision, it would be beaten back.

As the Ancient Era's War Sword continued to be beaten back, Li Anzhi's rank four Immortal Technique began to grow closer and closer to Chu Feng.

"It would appear that the outcome of the battle has been decided."

Seeing this, the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations revealed smiles on their faces.

However, the people of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm that knew of Chu Feng's capabilities knew that Chu Feng possessed more than a single heaven-defying secret skill. They knew that he still had cards to play.

"Buzz~~~"

Sure enough, as Li Anzhi's Immortal Technique grew ever closer to Chu Feng, with a thought, a golden, bright and dazzling war axe appeared.

The Ancient Era's War Axe did not possess heaven-defying battle power. However, after it appeared, it actually fused with the Ancient Era's War Sword.

Its appearance strengthened the Ancient Era's War Sword, increasing its power to an even stronger level.

Meanwhile, Li Anzhi's rank four Immortal Technique had arrived again. As it collided with Chu Feng's Ancient Era's War Sword, a loud and ear-piercing rumble was heard once more. However, the Ancient Era's War Sword was not beaten back this time around. Instead, it was Li Anzhi's enormous hammer that trembled violently before being knocked several thousand meters away.

“This...”

“What the hell is that?!”

“It’s another secret skill? The two secret skills actually fused together and strengthened their power?!”

“Exactly how many secret skills does that Chu Feng possess?!”

Seeing Chu Feng fusing an enormous axe with the enormous sword, the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations all started frowning.

They knew very well that ordinary secret skills would not be able to fuse with one another. The only exception to this would be if the secret skills were originally one and had a natural ability to fuse with one another. However, secret skills like those were very difficult to come by to begin with, let alone two such powerful secret skills.

At that moment, regardless of whether or not they were willing to admit it, the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations were feeling restraining fear towards Chu Feng from the bottom of their hearts.

First there was the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. Then there was the heaven-defying secret skill. Chu Feng had managed to fight Li Anzhi with a cultivation of rank six Heavenly Immortal. This had already proved that Chu Feng possessed strength that could not be looked down upon. They were truly... afraid of Chu Feng.

That said, compared to the other Li Heavenly Clansmen, Li Anzhi’s expression remained unchanged. With a wave of his Incomplete Immortal Armament, the enormous hammer disappeared. Then, he pointed his Incomplete Immortal Armament at Chu Feng, and a golden light immediately shot forth.

“Roar~~~”

Suddenly, a loud roar was heard.

The golden light turned into a golden rhinoceros. This rhinoceros was enormous. Its body was a thousand meters tall and three thousand meters long. The aura it emitted was many times more powerful than the enormous golden hammer from before.

Traveling through the air, the golden rhinoceros caused spatial tremors beneath its feet with every step. Even the earth was shaking. It was shockingly powerful.

It was a rank five Immortal Technique.

The rank five Immortal Technique rhinoceros collided with Chu Feng's fused Ancient Era's War Sword and Ancient Era's War Axe. An extremely loud explosion was heard.

Chu Feng's fused secret skills were actually beaten back a hundred meters from Chu Feng.

This rank five Immortal Technique was so powerful that not even Chu Feng's fused secret skills were capable of contending against it.

Seeing this, the crowd started to worry. This was especially true for the people that were hoping for Chu Feng to win. They were all feeling extremely nervous.

The might of that rank five Immortal Technique was simply too powerful.

Even though the Ancient Era's War Sword and Ancient Era's War Axe did not shatter on impact, they were clearly no match for that golden rhinoceros.

Merely a single attack had pushed them back to Chu Feng. If the golden rhinoceros were to strike them again, even if Chu Feng managed to survive the attack, he would be seriously injured.

"Roar~~~"

Right at that moment, another roar was heard. The golden rhinoceros rank five Immortal Technique had unleashed another attack.

Seeing the unstoppable attack from the golden rhinoceros, many people started to sweat cold sweat out of worry for Chu Feng. However, Chu Feng continued to have a confident smile on his face.

Suddenly, Chu Feng flipped his wrist, and an Incomplete Immortal Armament appeared in his hand.

The crowd were confused by his action. Although an Incomplete Immortal Armament would be able to strengthen Chu Feng's control of the Ancient

Era's War Sword and Ancient Era's War Axe, it should not be enough to withstand a rank five Immortal Technique.

At the moment when the crowd was confused, Chu Feng began to form hand seals with one hand. Then, he shouted lightly.

With his shout, the Ancient Era's War Sword and Ancient Era's War Axe started flying toward him.

As they were flying, the two secret skills also began to shrink.

Chapter 3079 - Time To Settle This

The two colossal secret skills that were over a thousand meters long both shrank to only a meter by the time they arrived beside Chu Feng. Then, they began to slowly revolve around Chu Feng.

However, to the crowd's surprise, the Ancient Era's War Sword and Ancient Era's War Axe were not simply revolving around Chu Feng after shrinking to the size of a meter. As they revolved around Chu Feng, Chu Feng's body started to emit a golden radiance.

The light emitted by Chu Feng was exactly the same as the light emitted by the two secret skills. At that moment, Chu Feng seemed to have fused with the Ancient Era's War Sword and Ancient Era's War Axe.

At that moment, Chu Feng abruptly waved the Incomplete Immortal Armament in his hand and sent forth a golden blade ray.

That golden blade ray was extremely dazzling. While the experts of the older generation were fine, those from the younger generation were unable to keep their eyes open in the face of that dazzling light.

"That is?"

At that moment, the eyes of the people of the Chu Heavenly Clan, such as Chu Xuanzhengfa, lit up.

They were able to tell with a single glance that the blade ray that Chu Feng sent forth was no ordinary blade ray. Instead, it was one of their Chu Heavenly Clan's clan-protection Immortal Techniques.

Rank four Immortal Technique, Brilliant Light Slash.

Actually, whilst they were surprised by Chu Feng using their Chu Heavenly Clan's clan-protection Immortal Technique, they were able to understand why he knew it.

After all, Chu Feng had accompanied their Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief for so long. Learning some of their Chu Heavenly Clan's clan-protection Immortal Techniques from their Lord Clan Chief was normal.

Merely, even though the Brilliant Light Slash was powerful, it was only a rank four Immortal Technique. As such, could it possibly contend against Li Anzhi's rank five Immortal Technique?

"Boom~~~"

At the moment when the crowd were asking this question in their hearts, Chu Feng's rank four Immortal Technique, Brilliant Light Slash collided with Li Anzhi's rank five Immortal Technique.

An astonishing scene appeared. That powerful rank five Immortal Technique actually collapsed at the first blow before Chu Feng's rank four Immortal Technique. It was directly slashed in two. Then, it turned into glowing martial power that scattered into thin air.

Looking back to Chu Feng's rank four Immortal Technique, even though it had weakened a lot, it was still extremely mighty. It was currently slashing toward Li Anzhi.

"Humph."

Seeing this, Li Anzhi let out a cold snort. He began to brandish the Incomplete Immortal Armament in his hand in a command-like motion. Then, a golden-bright and dazzling male lion appeared. That golden lion was not at all smaller than the golden rhinoceros from before. Its might was not at all inferior either. In fact, it was even more powerful.

That lion was also a rank five Immortal Technique.

As the lion roared, it appeared to be capable of swallowing rivers, the sun and the moon. However, no matter how powerful it was, when it collided with Chu Feng's Brilliant Light Slash, it was still hacked in two before dissipating into thin air.

Chu Feng's single rank four Immortal Technique actually managed to defeat two of Li Anzhi's rank five Immortal Techniques in succession.

"What is going on? How could this be? Chu Feng actually managed to fuse the power of his secret skills with himself?"

"That's an ability I've never seen before. Chu Feng had never used that before."

The crowd were all astonished. After the overwhelmingly powerful war axe and war sword shrank in size and began to revolve around Chu Feng like protective artifacts, the crowd were surprised to discover that the power of the two secret skills did not decrease at all. Furthermore, their power had fused with Chu Feng.

Earlier, no matter how powerful the Ancient Era's War Sword was, it was the Ancient Era's War Sword's own power.

However, the Ancient Era's War Sword's heaven-defying battle power had now been transferred to Chu Feng.

That was also the reason why Chu Feng was able to defeat two of Li Anzhi's rank five Immortal Techniques using a rank four Immortal Technique.

After all, when Chu Feng didn't use his Incomplete Immortal Armament and Immortal Technique, the combined power of the Ancient Era's War Sword and Ancient Era's War Axe was already able to beat back Li Anzhi's rank four Immortal Technique.

As for now, the battle power of the two secret skills had fused with Chu Feng. Furthermore, Chu Feng also had his Incomplete Immortal Armament to unleash a rank four Immortal Technique. As such, it was natural for him to be able to easily defeat Li Anzhi's rank five Immortal Techniques.

This enormous power was granted to Chu Feng by the two secret skills.

That said, the crowd was still extremely surprised. They did not know how Chu Feng was able to fuse the battle power of the two secret skills with himself, allowing them to be used by him.

The reason for that was because they had never witnessed Chu Feng using such a technique before.

Only Chu Feng himself knew that the him from before did not possess full control of the Ancient Era's War Sword before, due to his cultivation not being strong enough.

However, as Chu Feng's cultivation reached the Heavenly Immortal Realm, Chu Feng gradually gained complete control of the power of the Ancient Era's War Sword, and comprehended a deeper level of technique.

It was like the Five Elements Secret Skills. Not only was Chu Feng able to turn them into five different bodies of elements to fight alongside himself, but the Five Elements Secret Skills were also capable of saving his life by fusing with him, granting Chu Feng a practically undying and indestructible body when against those with similar strength to his own.

And now, Chu Feng's newfound comprehension of the Ancient Era's War Sword and Ancient Era's War Axe allowed him to fully fuse them with himself, allowing him to gain the heaven-defying battle power of the Ancient Era's War Sword and the extremely strong battle power of the Ancient Era's War Axe.

In this sort of situation, even if Chu Feng did not use any weapons or Immortal Techniques, his enormous battle power was already sufficient to terrify his opponents.

If Chu Feng were to use weapons and Immortal Techniques, his opponents would naturally be no match for him. *novel* **L3**(In

"What are we to do now?"

At that moment, it was the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations that started to panic.

Chu Feng was able to defeat Li Anzhi's rank five Immortal Techniques using only a rank four Immortal Technique. By this accord, even if Li Anzhi were to use rank six Immortal Techniques, Chu Feng would be able to defeat them using rank five Immortal Techniques.

However, if Chu Feng were to attack Li Anzhi with a rank six Immortal Technique, how was Li Anzhi to handle that?

Even if the two of them were both demon-level geniuses, neither of them were capable of learning rank seven Immortal Techniques due to their current level of cultivation.

With the situation being like that, it was impossible for the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations to not panic.

Seeing his clansmen panicking, Li Anzhi's younger brother Li Tianyou shouted in a very displeased manner, "Why are you all panicking? My big brother did not become one of the Ancestral Martial Decastars with an underserved reputation!"

As Li Anzhi's younger brother, Li Tianyou had a greater understanding of Li Anzhi compared to the other Li Heavenly Clansmen. Li Tianyou knew very well that his big brother was definitely not an ordinary person.

Whilst Chu Feng might possess heaven-defying techniques, his big brother also possessed heaven-defying techniques.

"It would appear that it's time to settle this."

"Chu Feng, have you prepared yourself?" Li Anzhi asked Chu Feng.

"I've been waiting for a long time," Chu Feng said.

"Bang~~~"

Once Chu Feng said those words, blue gaseous flames began to pour out of Li Anzhi's body. The blue gaseous flames were spinning about like a tornado. They completely enveloped Li Anzhi within them.

"Woosh~~~"

The next moment, Li Anzhi's body shifted. Like a phantom, he started flying toward Chu Feng with extreme speed.

"That's a speed-increasing Immortal Technique, the Li Heavenly Clan's rank six Immortal Technique, Phantom Whirlwind," Chu Xuanzhengfa shouted loudly. He was shouting to warn Chu Feng to not lower his guard, because what Li Anzhi used was a rank six Immortal Technique.

However, Li Anzhi's speed was simply too fast. At practically the moment when Chu Xuanzhengfa shouted to warn Chu Feng, he had already arrived in front of him. The Incomplete Immortal Armament in his hand was thrust toward Chu Feng.

Everyone was astonished by Li Anzhi's thrust.

Even though Li Anzhi had unleashed a rank six Immortal Technique, that Immortal Technique of his was only an Immortal Technique to increase one's speed, and not one to increase one's battle power.

Thus, in terms of actual battle power, Li Anzhi was no match for Chu Feng. Even if his thrust was able to land on Chu Feng, it would likely be very difficult for him to injure Chu Feng.

Even more confusing were Chu Feng's actions. He seemed to be prepared for Li Anzhi's incoming thrust. He flipped his wrist and took out a square ruler.

This square ruler was a meter wide and a meter long. It was completely black, and engraved with runes and symbols.

That square ruler was no ordinary square ruler. Instead, it was an Immortal Armament.

However, everyone knew that Immortal Armaments, no matter how powerful they might be, were weapons only Martial Immortals could use.

As a Heavenly Immortal, Chu Feng was simply unable to utilize the power of an Immortal Armament. Thus, it should be of no use for him to take out an Immortal Armament.

However, since it was useless, why then did he take it out?

Martial God Asura #Chapter 3080 - There Can Never Be Too Much Deception In War - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 3080 - There Can Never Be Too Much Deception In War

Chapter 3080 - There Can Never Be Too Much Deception In War

After taking out his Immortal Armament, Chu Feng placed it directly across his chest, right in front of the location where Li Anzhi's incoming attack would strike.

This scene confused everyone. Even the experts of the older generation were unable to understand exactly what Chu Feng and Li Anzhi were trying to do.

Chu Feng was using an Immortal Armament that he could not use to protect himself, whereas Li Anzhi was trying to attack Chu Feng knowing full well that he would likely not be able to cause any injury to Chu Feng. This confrontation between them served no purpose at all.

“Buzz~~~”

Right at that moment, golden veined patterns suddenly appeared on Li Anzhi's body. The veined patterns originated from his chest, and instantly covered his entire body. The veined patterns were glistening with golden light. Even though Li Anzhi was wearing clothes, one could still see them clearly.

Sparkling with light and emitting a domineering aura, Li Anzhi looked like a god descending onto the world of mortals.

“Oh no!”

Seeing this scene, the expressions of Chu Xuanzhengfa and the other Chu Heavenly Clansmen immediately changed. This was especially true for Chu Xuanzhengfa, who even stood up nervously.

The reason for that was because Li Anzhi had obtained a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting a level of cultivation the moment those golden veined patterns appeared on his body.

With his Heaven level Lightning Mark active, Li Anzhi was already a rank eight Heavenly Immortal. After obtaining that heaven-defying battle power, Li Anzhi was now able to contend against rank nine Heavenly Immortals.

Chu Feng would simply not be able to withstand such a Li Anzhi.

Everything happened too quickly. By the time the crowd realized how dire the situation was, it was already too late. Li Anzhi's sword had fiercely thrust into Chu Feng's Immortal Armament.

Although the Immortal Armament acted as Chu Feng's shield and stopped Li Anzhi's attack from penetrating into his flesh, Chu Feng was still beaten back miserably.

When Chu Feng fell onto the ground, he even rolled several times. He was truly left in a very sorry state.

Although Chu Feng was not seriously injured, there was still blood flowing out the corner of his mouth, and scrapes on his body. Moreover, he was only able to stabilize himself after rolling on the ground several times.

Thus, the current Chu Feng was truly left in a very sorry state.

“What is going on? How could Li Anzhi suddenly obtain heaven-defying battle power?”

The crowd were all confused. As they looked to one another, questions filled their eyes.

At the moment when the crowd was confused, the Saintly Stellar Monk said, “It’s the Ancient Era’s treasure, Golden-grain Inner Armor.”

“It’s actually the Golden-grain Inner Armor?!”

Many people revealed astonished expressions upon hearing those words.

They had heard about the Golden-grain Inner Armor. It was indeed a treasure that could allow one to gain a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting a level of cultivation. Because of that, the Golden-grain Inner Armor was extremely valuable, and had triggered countless battles. Later on, the Golden-grain Inner Armor was lost.

No one would’ve expected the Golden-grain Inner Armor to land in Li Anzhi’s hands.

At that moment, they realized why Li Anzhi was so filled with confidence from the very start.

As Li Anzhi had the strength of a demon-level genius to begin with, he had become practically undefeatable after using such a treasure.

“Chu Feng, what did you say to our clan’s Li Yan earlier?”

“Oh, wasn’t it ‘there can never be too much deception in war?’ Right now, I, Li Anzhi, will return those words to you.”

Li Anzhi looked to Chu Feng. There was a faint smile on his face.

Mockery. It was so very mocking. Li Anzhi was simply ridiculing Chu Feng.

“Heh...”

Right at that moment, Chu Feng slowly got up. He wiped the blood from the corner of his mouth.

With his Immortal Armament in hand, Chu Feng pointed to Li Anzhi and said, “Li Anzhi, stand there and don’t move. Watch as I defeat you.”

“What? You want to defeat me?”

“Chu Feng, could it be that you are still unable to tell the circumstance that you’re in right now?”

“Defeat me? What makes you think you can do that?”

After hearing Chu Feng’s words, the mocking smile on Li Anzhi’s face grew even more intense.

“Woosh~~~”

However, Chu Feng acted as if he did not hear Li Anzhi. He took a step forward and soared into the sky. With the square ruler Immortal Armament in hand, he began to fly toward Li Anzhi.

Seeing this, Li Anzhi shook his head.

He felt that Chu Feng was merely unable to accept his defeat. However, what could he possibly do? With the Golden-grain Inner Armor, Li Anzhi’s battle power had already surpassed Chu Feng’s battle power by an entire level of cultivation. Even if Chu Feng were to charge at him, he would only be inviting disaster upon himself.

In fact, the crowd present were also confused. Chu Feng was holding an Immortal Armament that he simply could not use. What use was there in rushing toward Li Anzhi like that?

That said, whilst the great majority of the crowd were confused, there was also a small portion of people that were focused on the battle with anticipating expressions.

Apart from the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, there was also that unfathomable Saintly Stellar Monk and the old lady who possessed a certain relationship with Chu Feng’s grandfather.

Their expressions were different from those of the others. The others were all worried for Chu Feng and confused by his actions. As for them, they were filled with expectation, and looking forward to what Chu Feng would do.

Under the attentive gazes of the crowd, Chu Feng arrived before Li Anzhi. He also slashed forth his Immortal Armament at Li Anzhi from the right.

No, to be exact, that was a swat. Chu Feng's square ruler Immortal Armament did not target Li Anzhi with any sharp edge. Instead, it was swatted at him like an enormous palm.

"Chu Feng, it's useless."

"I will not even bother to dodge your attack. You will not be able to harm me," Li Anzhi said to Chu Feng.

"Bang~~~"

However, the very next moment, when Chu Feng's square ruler Immortal Armament landed on Li Anzhi, Li Anzhi was knocked flying several tens of thousands of meters away like an arrow shot out from a bow.

In the end, Li Anzhi was knocked out of the enormous battle stage and crashed violently into the main viewing platform.

Crushed rocks scattered in all directions. Li Anzhi actually even shattered the formation around the battle stage with his collision.

At that moment, not only was Li Anzhi's complexion very pale, but he was also vomiting blood repeatedly. His right arm that was struck by Chu Feng's ruler had shattered, and half of his entire body has been mutilated.

However, this was the result of Chu Feng holding back. Otherwise, Li Anzhi would've likely been killed already.

"How could this be?!"

Seeing this scene, the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations were all astonished.

Li Anzhi's battle power was an entire level above Chu Feng's. As such, how could Chu Feng possibly injure Li Anzhi?

When the crowd looked to Chu Feng again, their expressions all changed enormously.

That square ruler Immortal Armament was still being held by Chu Feng. However, at that moment, that square ruler Immortal Armament was flickering with light. Not only was its power being used by Chu Feng, but it had also granted Chu Feng a heaven-defying battle power capable of surmounting a level of cultivation.

“How could this be?! How could he, a Heavenly Immortal, be able to use an Immortal Armament?!”

“It’s that bracelet! It’s that bracelet on his wrist!”

Whilst confused, there were experts from the older generation that noticed the bracelet on Chu Feng’s wrist that was circulating runes and symbols.

They determined that Chu Feng being able to use his Immortal Armament must have something to do with the bracelet on his wrist.

“What sort of treasure is that?! It actually allowed Chu Feng to use an Immortal Armament?!”

The crowd all exclaimed in astonishment.

Right at that moment, the Saintly Stellar Monk said, “If I am not mistaken, that should be the legendary treasure capable of allowing Heavenly Immortal level experts to use Immortal Armaments, the Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector.”

“Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector? Heavens, that is the Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector?!”

“Right, that must be the Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector!”

Once the Saintly Stellar Monk said those words, the crowd were all stunned.

The Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector was equally renowned as the Golden-grain Inner Armor.

Merely, compared to the Golden-grain Inner Armor, the Utmost Exalted Wrist Protector had disappeared for an even longer period of time. And now, it actually ended up in Chu Feng’s possession.

“You damned bastard, you were still concealing a trick up your sleeve?!”

Li Anzhi let out a furious shout. He was looking at Chu Feng with eyes filled with resentment.

He knew that he had been careless. Otherwise, he would not be left in such a sorry state. However, that was also precisely the reason why he detested Chu Feng so much. If it wasn't for Chu Feng concealing his trick so well, he would not have been so careless.

Faced with Li Anzhi's murderous and resentment-filled gaze, Chu Feng smiled and said, “If I do not hide more tricks up my sleeve, how am I supposed to teach you exactly what it really means by ‘there can never be too much deception in war?’”

Chapter 3081 - Immortal Taboo Martial Skill

“Despicable and shameless bastard, prepare to die!”

Suddenly, boundless killing intent exploded out from Li Anzhi's body.

Following that, Li Anzhi soared into the sky. With his Incomplete Immortal Armament in hand, he began to fly toward Chu Feng.

Whilst flying, the Incomplete Immortal Armament in his hand began to spin together with his arm. The Incomplete Immortal Armament formed countless bodies of light. Contained within those bodies of light were sharp purple blades. With surging lightning, they swept toward Chu Feng like a torrential rain.

Whilst Li Anzhi rushed forth to attack Chu Feng, Chu Feng's body also shifted. He soared into the sky with his Immortal Armament in hand. He was like a warrior charging ahead all alone as he flew into the torrential rain of light.

The rays of light were very powerful. If Chu Feng were to be struck by them, he would definitely be injured, if not killed. This was even more so as there were so many of them.

That said, Chu Feng showed absolutely no fear. He began to wave around the Immortal Armament in his hand repeatedly. The purple light rays were being sliced apart by Chu Feng repeatedly.

In the blink of an eye, Chu Feng and Li Anzhi arrived before one another. The two of them raised their respective weapons at the same time. “Clank!” A loud explosion was heard as fiery sparks flew in all directions and energy ripples wreaked havoc. Li Anzhi was not only knocked back, but the Incomplete Immortal Armament in his hand was also knocked away.

Li Anzhi fell fiercely to the ground once again. At the same time, his Incomplete Immortal Armament also landed far away from him.

“This...”

At that moment, the crowd were all astonished. Even the experts of the older generation had faces filled with complicated expressions.

If Chu Feng’s opponent were someone else, they would not have reacted like this. After all, Chu Feng was an exceptional talent, someone publicly accepted to be a demon-level genius by the people of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

However, Chu Feng’s opponent was Li Anzhi, the strongest person of the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations, one of the ten strongest people of the younger generation in the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield.

However, such a Li Anzhi was actually powerless to fight back against Chu Feng.

“It’s useless. No matter how many times you attempt it, the result will be the same.”

“Li Anzhi, it is your defeat today.”

Chu Feng was holding his Immortal Armament and standing in the sky.

Chu Feng was most definitely not the strongest individual present.

However, standing there, Chu Feng resembled a ruler. All the younger generations felt fear upon looking at him.

This was especially true for the people of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm that had made an enemy out of Chu Feng before. They were filled with regret.

It was only at that moment that they realized how enormous of a disparity there was between them and Chu Feng.

It was only at that moment that they realized that they were truly not facing an ordinary member of the younger generation.

It was only at that moment that they realized why Chu Feng was Chu Hanxian's grandson, Chu Xuanyuan's son.

"Heh..."

"Hahahaha..."

However, at that moment. When everyone felt that the outcome of the battle was decided, Li Anzhi, who was lying on the ground, got back onto his feet. Furthermore, he had a cold smile on his face.

The crowd were all confused. They did not understand why Li Anzhi would be laughing. Could it be that he had been shocked by his defeat? Or could it be that it was because of something else?

Suddenly, Li Anzhi lifted his head up and looked at Chu Feng.

Li Anzhi's eyes were not only filled with murderous desire, but his entire expression had changed.

His eyes resembled those of a ferocious beast. His gaze resembled sharp swords.

As he stared at Chu Feng, he flipped his wrist, and the Incomplete Immortal Armament that landed far away immediately started flying toward him, landing in his hand.

After holding the Incomplete Immortal Armament in his hand, Li Anzhi said, "Chu Feng, did you think you've won?"

"I, Li Anzhi, will let you know right now what sort of ability I, one of the Ancestral Martial Decastars, possesses."

After he finished saying those words, Li Anzhi started to emit a boundless amount of Immortal-level martial power. The Immortal-level martial power turned into a tornado. It was spinning around Li Anzhi like a protective barrier.

Most importantly, it was more than a single tornado. One by one, tornadoes began to form. It was like countless blades were gathered together. After the tornadoes appeared, Li Anzhi's aura also became even more powerful.

“That’s not an Immortal Technique. That’s an... Immortal Taboo Martial Skill!”

“Immortal Taboo Martial Skill? Not even Immortal Taboo Martial Skills should be that powerful, no?”

“Could it be the Li Heavenly Clan’s clan-protection technique, the Immortal Taboo Martial Skill, Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield?”

“That’s right, it is the Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield. For an Immortal Taboo to be this powerful, it must be the Li Heavenly Clan’s clan-protection technique, the Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield.”

After seeing the tornadoes surrounding Li Anzhi, many people began to exclaim in astonishment.

After they verified that the technique Li Anzhi was using was the Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield, the crowd grew even more astonished.

The Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield was one of the Li Heavenly Clan’s strongest techniques.

Even their Li Heavenly Clan’s current clan chief had used that Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield to become famous throughout the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield in his youth.

That said, there were different levels of power among Immortal Taboo Martial Skills.

Without a doubt, this Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield possessed power surpassing that of rank six Immortal Techniques. It was even comparable to rank seven Immortal Techniques.

For a martial skill to be that powerful, it would naturally also be frighteningly difficult to learn.

There were even rumors saying that those below the Martial Immortal Realm were simply unable to master the Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield.

Yet, at that moment, Li Anzhi had unleashed it. With this, how could the crowd not be astonished?

It was only at that moment that the crowd realized why Li Anzhi would say those words.

Ancestral Martial Decastars. Perhaps this was the strength of the Ancestral Martial Decastars. They were true demon-level geniuses capable of accomplishing things that were impossible for ordinary people.

At the moment when they were astonished by how powerful Li Anzhi was, the crowd also couldn't help but turn their eyes to Chu Feng.

This was especially true for the people that wanted Chu Feng to win. A trace of worry appeared in their eyes.

Using the heaven-defying battle power of the Ancient Era's War Sword and Ancient Era's War Axe, Chu Feng was able to suppress Li Anzhi when their battle power was the same.

If Li Anzhi were to unleash a rank six Immortal Technique, he would likely not be able to defeat Chu Feng.

However, he had now unleashed the Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield that possessed power surpassing that of rank six Immortal Techniques.

With this, how was Chu Feng to respond?

"Amazing, truly amazing. Big brother Li Anzhi actually mastered the Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield!"

"Tianyou, it is no wonder you were so confident in big brother Li Anzhi. You must have known about this, right?"

While Chu Xuanzhengfa and the others were worried for Chu Feng, the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations were wild with joy.

The reason for that was because they also did not know that Li Anzhi had successfully mastered the Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield.

Furthermore, as they were members of the Li Heavenly Clan, they knew better than anyone how difficult it was to learn the Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield. At the same time, they also knew better than anyone how powerful the Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield was.

Thus, they felt that Chu Feng was undoubtedly going to be defeated by Li Anzhi. n)-Ove1b1n

“Humph, regardless of how powerful that Chu Feng might be, he will not be able to defeat my big brother.”

Li Tianyou let out a cold snort. Then, he turned his eyes to Chu Feng. Hatred and impatience filled his eyes.

He was itching to see Chu Feng suffer a crushing defeat at the hands of his older brother.

He was certain that Chu Feng would be defeated by Li Anzhi.

His certainty was from none other than the fact that he possessed absolute confidence in the Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield.

After all, the Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield was one of the most powerful techniques in their Li Heavenly Clan that those under the Exalted Realm cultivation could master.

Chapter 3082 - Chu Feng's Technique

The more the crowd looked at Chu Feng, the more questions emerged in their hearts.

Li Anzhi had already unleashed such a powerful Immortal Taboo Martial Skill. Thus, why would Chu Feng still have such a confident expression on his face?

“Li Anzhi, what are you doing? You're planning to beat me with a shield?”

Suddenly, Chu Feng's mouth moved. He revealed a mocking smile.

“Shield? I'll have you know exactly what sort of shield this is!”

Li Anzhi let out a sudden shout. Then, from within the wind shield that was revolving around him came many wind blades. Those wind blades swept toward Chu Feng.

Those wind blades were so powerful that the hearts of the experts of the older generation all tensed up upon seeing them.

It was obvious to anyone with discerning eyes that Li Anzhi's Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield should be strongest in terms of defense.

That said, the wind blades that Li Anzhi sent forth were very powerful too. At the very least, those wind blades surpassed the might of a rank six Immortal Technique.

After sensing how powerful those wind blades were, many people started to worry deeply for Chu Feng again.

After all, judging from the situation at hand, even if Chu Feng possessed overwhelmingly powerful battle power and was capable of suppressing rank four Immortal Techniques with a rank three Immortal Technique, he would still not be able to block the incoming wind blades even if he were to use a rank five Immortal Technique.

The reason for that was because those wind blades' power surpassed that of a rank six Immortal Technique.

Thus, Chu Feng must unleash a rank six Immortal Technique in order to block the incoming wind blades.

Merely, it was a general understanding that one had to be at least a rank nine Heavenly Immortal in order to learn rank six Immortal Techniques. With Chu Feng's current cultivation, he evidently did not know any rank six Immortal Techniques.

With the situation being like that, would Chu Feng really be able to defend against those wind blades?

“Bang, bang, bang, bang~~~”

The next moment, explosions began to sound before Chu Feng. It was the sound of the wind blades shattering before Chu Feng and turning into frighteningly powerful wind that scattered in all directions, ravaging everything in their path.

That said, no matter how powerful the wind blades were, they were unable to cause any harm to Chu Feng at all.

The reason for that was because there was an invisible power shielding Chu Feng.

It was that invisible power that blocked Li Anzhi's wind blades.

“How could this be?”

The crowd were all astonished. The first thing that came to their mind was that Chu Feng might know a rank six Immortal Technique.

If that were truly the case, then Chu Feng would simply be too frightening.

After all, even for geniuses, their cultivation still had to reach rank nine Heavenly Immortal in order to learn rank six Immortal Techniques.

As for Chu Feng, his actual cultivation was only that of a rank six Heavenly Immortal. That level of cultivation would find it difficult to learn and master even rank five Immortal Techniques; thus, how could he possibly master a rank six Immortal Technique?

“No, that’s not an Immortal Technique, that’s a martial skill, an Immortal Taboo Martial Skill!” Chu Xuanzhengfa suddenly shouted loudly.

“Immortal Taboo Martial Skill? Now that you mention it, that is indeed a martial skill. Chu Feng has actually grasped such a powerful Immortal Taboo Martial Skill?!!!”

The crowd were all alarmed by Chu Xuanzhengfa’s words.

Upon closer inspection, the crowd were able to tell that the invisible power before Chu Feng was indeed filled with martial power, and did not contain any spirit power. This meant that it was a martial skill, and not an Immortal Technique.

That said, even among Immortal Taboo Martial Skills, there existed a difference in strength. To be able to block Li Anzhi’s wind blades, it naturally meant that Chu Feng’s Immortal Taboo Martial Skill was extremely powerful too.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

Right at that moment, Li Anzhi narrowed his brows, and wind blades were once again sent flying toward Chu Feng.

This time around, the wind blades were much stronger than before.

However, when those wind blades approached Chu Feng, they were once again neutralized by the invisible power that surrounded Chu Feng.

“How could this be?!”

While the bystanders were still fine, the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations, especially Li Tianyou, were completely stunned.

They did not dare to believe that Chu Feng actually managed to block one of their Li Heavenly Clan’s strongest Immortal Taboo Martial Skills, the Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng revealed a grin on his face. He said to Li Anzhi, “What’s wrong? As one of the Ancestral Martial Decastars, is this all that you’re capable of?”

“Arrogance!” Chu Feng’s words immediately enraged Li Anzhi, and caused him to unleash a frantic barrage of attacks at Chu Feng.

Unfortunately, the earlier attack was evidently the strongest attack Li Anzhi was capable of. Thus, the following waves of attacks were all unable to bring any harm to Chu Feng. All of his attacks were neutralized by the invisible barrier before Chu Feng.

“Amazing! Exactly what sort of martial skill is Chu Feng using? It’s actually capable of blocking such powerful attacks from Li Anzhi?”

After observing for a while, the crowd began to voice their questions.

Compared to the might of Li Anzhi’s Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield, Chu Feng’s Immortal Taboo Martial Skill appeared to be extremely weak.

However, such a subtle and even formless Immortal Taboo Martial Skill actually managed to block Li Anzhi’s attacks.

Because of this, the crowd began to ponder exactly what sort of Immortal Taboo Martial Skill Chu Feng was using.

It was not only the Li Heavenly Clansmen that were pondering this; the people of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, and even the people from the Chu Heavenly Clan, were also pondering this.

Unfortunately, none of them knew the answer to this question.

Suddenly, Chu Xuanzhengfa asked, “Lord Clan Chief, could it be... Chu Feng is using our clan’s Immortal Taboo: Atmosphere Shield?”

“Immortal Taboo: Atmosphere Shield?”

Chu Xuanzhengfa’s words managed to startle quite a few people from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

The Immortal Taboo: Atmosphere Shield was originally one of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s clan-protection martial skills.

It was a protective martial skill that would protect its user like the air around them. Its defensive capabilities were extremely strong. Also like the air, it was formless. In fact, if its user were to deliberately conceal its aura, others would not even be able to detect the Immortal Taboo: Atmosphere Shield’s existence.

When mentioning it, it truly resembled the martial skill Chu Feng was using.

That being said, there was a reason as to why the people of the Chu Heavenly Clan never thought about the Immortal Taboo: Atmosphere Shield.

The reason for that was because ever since the Chu Heavenly Clan obtained the Immortal Taboo: Atmosphere Shield, there had never been anyone that managed to successfully learn it.

Later on, they searched for experts to evaluate it. It was then determined that the Immortal Taboo: Atmosphere Shield their Chu Heavenly Clan obtained was incomplete.

Because of that, the Immortal Taboo: Atmosphere Shield had its status as one of their Chu Heavenly Clan’s clan-protection martial skills removed.

As the Immortal Taboo: Atmosphere Shield was incomplete, how could anyone possibly learn and master it?

Could it be that Chu Feng was truly so powerful that he could even learn and master an incomplete Immortal Taboo Martial Skill?

Confused, the Chu Heavenly Clansmen all turned their eyes to their Lord Clan Chief.

After all, if Chu Feng was truly using the Immortal Taboo: Atmosphere Shield, then it must've been taught to him by their Lord Clan Chief.

Thus, the answer would be revealed by their Chu Heavenly Clan's Lord Clan Chief.

Before the focused gazes of the people of the Chu Heavenly Clan, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Lord Clan Chief revealed a smile on his face, and nodded gently.

He said, "Precisely."

Chapter 3083 - End This Battle

The Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's words were like a sudden clap of thunder. They shook everyone from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

In all these years, no one had been able to successfully learn and master the Immortal Taboo: Atmosphere Shield.

Not even their Lord Clan Chief was able to accomplish that feat.

Yet, Chu Feng accomplished it. There was no need to speak as to what this signified.

After verifying that Chu Feng was using the Immortal Taboo: Atmosphere Shield, Chu Xuanzhengfa was extremely excited. However, he soon sighed and said, "It would appear that the outcome of the battle today will likely be undecided."

"Milord, what do you mean by that?"

Once Chu Xuanzhengfa's words were spoken, he was immediately questioned by the Chu Heavenly Clansmen. Actually, rather than questioning Chu Xuanzhengfa, it was more like they were trying to verify their guesses.

"The Immortal Taboo: Atmosphere Shield is our clan's martial skill. I believe you all know very well how powerful its defensive capabilities are."

"And now, it has also completely revealed its extraordinary defense to us. This can be seen by how Chu Feng was able to easily defend against Li Anzhi's unceasing attacks."

“Unfortunately, whilst the Immortal Taboo: Atmosphere Shield is a rare Immortal Taboo Martial Skill, it is actually inferior to Li Anzhi’s Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield.”

“Firstly, the Immortal Taboo: Atmosphere Shield only possesses defensive capabilities. It is a purely defensive martial skill, and is simply unable to attack at all. Li Anzhi’s Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield, on the other hand, is capable of attacking. Furthermore, its offensive capabilities are also very powerful.”

“Moreover, even if we are to disregard offensive capabilities and take only the defensive capabilities into consideration, the Immortal Taboo: Atmosphere Shield’s defensive strength should be inferior to the Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield’s.”

“Right now, the reason why the Immortal Taboo: Atmosphere Shield is capable of neutralizing Li Anzhi’s attacks is actually all because of Chu Feng’s heaven-defying secret skills that increased his battle power.”

“If the person using the Immortal Taboo: Atmosphere Sphere right now were not Chu Feng, but instead someone else, they would likely be unable to neutralize Li Anzhi’s attacks.”

“Furthermore, the most frightening aspect about Li Anzhi’s Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield is not its fierce attacks, but rather its enormously powerful defense.”

“With the defensive prowess of the Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield, Chu Feng will likely be unable to cause any harm to Li Anzhi either.”

“With this, Chu Feng and Li Anzhi are in a deadlock, with neither party being able to cause any harm to the other,” Chu Xuanzhengfa said.

“It is as Milord said, the situation at hand really is like that.”

Once Chu Xuanzhengfa said those words, the Chu Heavenly Clansmen all nodded in approval.

Actually, even without Chu Xuanzhengfa’s explanation, many of the people present were also able to determine what the situation was.

“Actually, a result like this is already extremely good. After all, Chu Feng’s opponent is one of the Ancestral Martial Decastars, Li Anzhi.”

“Furthermore, Chu Feng’s actual cultivation is weaker than Li Anzhi’s. Thus, it would be equivalent to him defeating someone stronger than him.”

“Even if this battle ends in a tie, it is still equivalent to Chu Feng’s victory.”

“Our Chu Heavenly Clan is truly fortunate to have Chu Feng. Otherwise, we would be completely humiliated today.”

At that moment, many Chu Heavenly Clansmen began to look at Chu Feng with pride in their eyes.

This was the first time Chu Feng had been acknowledged since his return to the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Actually, their reactions were understandable. After all, no matter how Chu Feng had revealed his heaven-defying talent to them before, he was only proving himself.

However, it was different today. Today, Chu Feng was fighting for their Chu Heavenly Clan.

What Chu Feng carried on his back today was not only his own reputation and honor. Instead, it was their entire Chu Heavenly Clan’s reputation and honor.

And now, Chu Feng had managed to win honor and glory for their Chu Heavenly Clan. As members of the Chu Heavenly Clan, how could they not be proud of Chu Feng?

“Bastard.”

Suddenly, a downcast curse was heard.

That curse came from Li Anzhi’s mouth.

Li Anzhi was no longer attacking Chu Feng. Instead, he was gasping for breath, and completely drenched in sweat.

It would appear that controlling the Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield to unleash nonstop attacks at Chu Feng had put quite a burden on him.

Unfortunately, he was still unable to breach Chu Feng's Immortal Taboo: Atmosphere Shield. That was why he was feeling so flustered and exasperated; why he went so far as to curse out loud.

Likely, he himself also knew that he must win today. Otherwise, even if they were to tie, it would be equivalent to his loss.

After all, Chu Feng's cultivation was an entire level below his.

"What's wrong? Are you tired?" Chu Feng said to Li Anzhi. His tone was filled with mockery.

"....."

Hearing Chu Feng's mocking words, Li Anzhi turned red with anger, and began to gnash his teeth. However, he did not explode with rage.

The reason for that was because he was unable to find a justification for exploding in rage. After all, he was insufficiently talented. If he were to explode into a rage, he would only become an object of ridicule for others.

However, while Li Anzhi restrained his anger, his younger brother was unable to do the same.

"Chu Feng, why are you acting so arrogant?!" Li Anzhi's younger brother Li Tianyou shouted.

"Arrogant? Am I?" Chu Feng smiled. Then, he spread his arms and shrugged his shoulders, "Very well, I admit that my words today were a bit arrogant."

"However, I would like to ask you this, so what if I am arrogant? What can you possibly do about it?"

"You!!!" Hearing those words, Li Tianyou started to gnash his teeth angrily. The finger he was pointing at Chu Feng started to tremble with rage.

"Me? What about me?"

"I, Chu Feng, am arrogant today. However, I possess the qualifications to be arrogant. As for you..."

“Oh, I’ve nearly forgotten. Back in the Upper Realm Gate, you were much more arrogant than me today. Unfortunately... you do not possess sufficient qualifications.”

As he said those words, the smile on Chu Feng’s face grew even more distinct. It was an extremely mocking smile.

“Chu Feng, you damned bastard! The future is long, don’t you continue to act this arrogant! I, Li Tianyou, will definitely rip your mouth apart one day!” Li Tianyou exploded with rage. He was truly enraged by Chu Feng.

He knew best as to what had happened in the Upper Realm Gate that day.

He had first mocked Chu Feng and acted extremely arrogantly. However, in the end, he was ruthlessly beaten up by Chu Feng. n/.OVelB1n

Not only was he completely disgraced, but he was also completely battered. To him, it was a humiliation that he would never be able to erase in his entire life.

Li Tianyou had been trying his hardest to conceal his humiliation. However, Chu Feng actually decided to tear at his wound and humiliate him before all these people. It was only natural that Li Tianyou would not be able to tolerate it.

Seeing Li Tianyou’s reaction, the crowd recalled what Chu Feng had said earlier. Actually, the people present were able to guess what had happened between them.

At that moment, many of the Chu Heavenly Clan’s younger generations were unable to contain themselves, and began to laugh.

For some unknown reason, they felt extremely refreshed upon thinking that the Li Heavenly Clan’s arrogant genius Li Tianyou was given a proper beating by Chu Feng.

Suddenly, Li Anzhi shouted, “Chu Feng, you are fighting me here. Why are you involving my little brother in this?”

“If you have the skills, then aim them at me!!!”

“Watch your words, you’re wrongly accusing me. It was clearly your brother who tried to create trouble for me.”

Chu Feng shrugged his shoulders helplessly. His appearance could even be said to be haggardly. It was as if he had never placed Li Anzhi and Li Tianyou in his eyes at all.

Chu Feng’s action not only deeply angered Li Anzhi and Li Tianyou, but he also caused all of the Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations to feel very displeased.

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s expression changed. His relaxed expression suddenly became very sharp. His eyes seemed to be capable of penetrating one’s heart. Seeing those eyes, one would feel fear.

At that moment, Chu Feng turned those frightening eyes of his to Li Anzhi. He said, “What did you say earlier? You want me to come at you?”

“That’s right, if you have the skills, then come at me!” Li Anzhi shouted.

“Sure,” At that moment, a smile once again appeared on Chu Feng’s previously serious face. Merely, the sharp expression in his eyes did not change in the slightest.

Using a very serious tone, Chu Feng said, “In that case, I will end this battle right now.”

Chapter 3084 - One’s Father Cannot Be Insulted

“End this battle?”

“What arrogance. What makes you think you’re capable of that?”

Once Chu Feng said those words, Li Anzhi immediately began to mock him.

Li Anzhi finally got an opportunity to ridicule and mock Chu Feng. He firmly believed that Chu Feng would not be able to breach his Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield. As such, Chu Feng would only be humiliated by him by making such a claim.

“What makes me think I’m capable?”

Chu Feng smiled lightly at Li Anzhi’s show of contempt.

However, as Chu Feng smiled, he revealed a gaze that made Li Anzhi feel an inexplicable sense of unease.

“Rumble~~~”

The next moment, thunder began to sound from above Chu Feng.

That thunder was extremely loud and resounding. The thunder continued to explode above Chu Feng’s head in an unceasing succession.

At that moment, the crowd all raised their heads to look above Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because a powerful aura was currently gathering there. As it condensed, it began to assail the crowd’s senses.

Accompanying the enormous aura was crimson lightning that appeared in the same location as the surging thunder.

At the beginning, the lightning was only barely visible. However, it soon grew more and more clear. In merely the blink of an eye, it revealed its true appearance.

Numerous dazzling lightning bolts were surging, spiraling and roaring in the sky like fierce dragons.

That lightning were no ordinary lightning, because it was blood red.

The blood red lightning surged in the sky. Not only was it strange, but it was also sinister. Seeing it, one would feel an indescribable sense of unease.

This was especially true for the people of the younger generation present. They all revealed frightened expressions, and were completely panic-stricken.

It was as if doomsday was descending upon them.

Fortunately, there were a lot of powerful experts present.

Otherwise, if one were to suddenly see such a sight, there would definitely be a lot of people that would immediately turn around and begin fleeing.

This was the might of the technique that Chu Feng used. It was so powerful and frightening that it struck fear into the hearts of the crowd.

“What is that blood red lightning? Is that an Immortal Taboo Martial Skill?”

“But, our Chu Heavenly Clan doesn’t seem to possess such a powerful Immortal Taboo Martial Skill, no?”

Seeing the blood red lightning that covered the sky, Chu Xuanzhengfa and the others from the Chu Heavenly Clan all exclaimed in admiration.

While their Chu Heavenly Clan possessed many clan-protection-level Immortal Taboo Martial Skills, they did not possess one that was as powerful as the one Chu Feng was currently using.

The might of Chu Feng’s Immortal Taboo Martial Skill had already surpassed Li Anzhi’s Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield. In fact, it was not only a bit stronger, it was much stronger.

After the blood red lightning filled the sky, not to mention the other Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations, even Li Tianyou, who had been filled with confidence in his older brother, became scared.

The blood red lightning was simply too powerful, indescribably powerful.

The enormous power of the blood red lightning was also the reason why the crowd all wanted to know what it was.

With the situation being like that, the people of the Chu Heavenly Clan all turned their eyes to their Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

Faced with the crowd’s gazes, their Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief only smiled and shook his head.

Naturally, that Immortal Taboo Martial Skill was not taught to Chu Feng by him. After all, not even he possessed such a powerful Immortal Taboo Martial Skill.

As for that Immortal Taboo Martial Skill, it was called the Immortal Taboo: Blood Lightning Technique.

The origin of the Immortal Taboo: Blood Lightning Technique was actually quite dramatic. If Chu Feng were to mention it, it was likely that no one would believe him.

That Immortal Taboo: Blood Lightning Technique was something Chu Feng picked up inside the Primal Sea Sacred Mountain's Sacred Mountain World.

When Chu Feng first entered the Primal Sea Sacred Mountain, he looked all around, and discovered the Immortal Taboo Martial Skill on the ground.

However, the Immortal Taboo Martial Skill that Chu Feng conveniently picked up from the ground was overwhelmingly powerful.

Back then, due to the limitations of Chu Feng's cultivation, he was unable to train in the Immortal Taboo: Blood Lightning Technique.

It was only afterwards that Chu Feng was capable of learning it. After Chu Feng learned it, he realized how powerful the Immortal Taboo: Blood Lightning Technique was.

Disregarding the Ancient Era's War Axe and Ancient Era's War Sword, the two heaven-defying secret skills, the Immortal Taboo: Blood Lightning Technique had become the strongest technique that Chu Feng currently possessed.

"Li Anzhi, it is still not too late for you to admit defeat right now."

"Otherwise, should this blood lightning of mine strike, that wind shield of yours will definitely be destroyed. At that time, I cannot guarantee that you will not be injured," Chu Feng had an absolutely confident expression on his face as he said those words to Li Anzhi.

He felt that there was no way that Li Anzhi could get out of his present predicament, that Li Anzhi did not possess any stronger Immortal Techniques. Chu Feng felt that his Immortal Taboo: Blood Lightning Technique was sufficient to settle the match.

"What arrogance! Even if it were your father that was standing here and fighting me, he would likely not dare to make that sort of boasting claim! As for you, you are even less capable of that!" Li Anzhi shouted coldly.

Even though Li Anzhi was also capable of sensing the heaven-defying might of Chu Feng's blood lightning, he was still filled with confidence in his Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield.

Li Anzhi felt that even if he were to be facing the exceptional genius Chu Xuanyuan, not even Chu Xuanyuan would dare to make such boasting claims against him should their battle power be the same.

Li Anzhi was very confident. He was completely determined that no one with the same battle power would be able to breach his Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield.

However, Li Anzhi had no idea that his casual words would end up angering Chu Feng.

At that moment, not only did Chu Feng narrow his brows, but a ruthless expression also appeared in his sharp eyes.

In Chu Feng's heart, his parents held an extremely high status.

Even though Li Anzhi was only supposing things, and Chu Feng was also able to tell that, he felt that even if Li Anzhi and his father were of the same generation and possessed similar strength, Li Anzhi would definitely not be on par with his father.

Thus, Li Anzhi's words had enraged Chu Feng. This was the first time Chu Feng had been angry in his match against Li Anzhi, the first time Chu Feng wanted to make Li Anzhi pay.

To Chu Feng, one could make all sorts of jokes, and could even insult him.

However, his father could not be insulted.

As Li Anzhi had compared himself to Chu Feng's father, Chu Feng felt that Li Anzhi was insulting his father. As such, Chu Feng was unable to tolerate Li Anzhi.

“Woosh~~~”

Chu Feng abruptly raised the Immortal Armament in his hand.

In that very instant, the blood red lightning that filled the sky began to violently surge forth. It was like an army of lightning waiting for Chu Feng's command.

Once the command was given, they would unleash a ruthless offense.

That said, Chu Feng did not immediately order the lightning to strike. Instead, he stared at Li Anzhi with his sharp gaze.

He said, "Li Anzhi, there are words that one can say, and words that one cannot say."

"Originally, I was not planning to injure you. However, I must now let you know what sort of level of talent you actually possess."

"Rumble~~~"

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng waved down his Immortal Armament.

Following that, the blood red lightning that covered the sky surged toward Li Anzhi.

Seeing that Chu Feng had unleash his attack, Li Anzhi tightly grabbed his Incomplete Immortal Armament with one hand and began to form hand seals with the other.

As he activated the hand seals, the wind shield that surrounded him not only began to spin even faster, but it even began to emit a dazzling splendor. At the same time, the wind shield was giving off an impregnable sensation.

It turned out that this was the actual might of the Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield. With its might, it would not even be excessive to deem it the strongest defensive Immortal Taboo Martial Skill.

"Rumble~~~"

Suddenly, ear-piercing rumbles were heard. n0Ve.1b/ln

The blood red lightning that covered the sky had collided with the wind blades, creating an enormous violent storm that wreaked havoc through the surroundings.

At that moment, the crowd's expressions all changed. This was especially true for the Li Heavenly Clansmen; their eyes were filled with worry and shock.

The reason for that was because not only had Li Anzhi's wind shield been breached, but Li Anzhi was also lying on the battle stage, completely bloodied.

His aura was extremely weak, and he resembled a dying man. He was unable to even stand up.

Their Li Heavenly Clan's clan-protection martial skill, the Immortal Taboo: Windblade Shield, was actually no match for Chu Feng's Immortal Taboo: Blood Lightning Technique, and was destroyed with a single attack.

That being said, what was most astonishing to the crowd was most definitely not the outcome of the battle. Instead, it was the fact that Chu Feng actually left such serious injuries on Li Anzhi, the precious genius of the Li Heavenly Clan.

At that moment, even many people from the Chu Heavenly Clan were sweating cold sweat in worry.

Whilst it was a spar, if something were to happen to Li Anzhi in the spar, the Li Heavenly Clan would definitely be provoked. At that time, a calamity would truly befall them.

That said, compared to the others, Chu Feng was very cold and detached toward the seriously injured Li Anzhi. In fact, even the anger in his eyes did not decrease.

Chu Feng looked to Li Anzhi, who was lying on the ground, without any sympathy or regret in his eyes.

Using an extremely cold tone, Chu Feng said, "Today, I have injured you so that you can understand that you are not qualified to be discussed alongside my father."

Chapter 3085 - Chu Xuanyuan's Son

Once Chu Feng said those words, the crowd's expressions changed.

It was only at that moment that they realized why Chu Feng was so ruthless toward Li Anzhi.

It turned out that he had done that deliberately. He wanted to teach Li Anzhi a lesson.

As for the reason, it was because Li Anzhi had angered Chu Feng.

At that moment, the crowd realized that Chu Xuanyuan was Chu Feng's reverse scale.

He was someone that could not be insulted.

.....

"Chu Feng, I, Li Anzhi, will remember the humiliation I've received today. I will definitely return it to you in double."

The current Li Anzhi was extremely weak. Even his voice sounded extremely powerless. That said, his voice was filled with killing intent.

To him, what Chu Feng did was also an act of humiliation.

Thus, Li Anzhi currently hated Chu Feng to the bones, and even wanted to kill him.

"Very well. If you want to fight, I, Chu Feng, will accompany you anytime," Chu Feng said in a very indifferent manner. It was as if he hadn't placed Li Anzhi in his eyes the entire time.

"Woosh, woosh~~~"

At that moment, two of the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations landed on the battle stage and helped Li Anzhi back onto their war chariot. *nove.1b*-In

Seeing the scene of Li Anzhi being helped back onto the war chariot and then comparing it to Chu Feng standing on the battle stage confidently, waves were surging violently in the crowd's hearts.

After all, the one that was just defeated by Chu Feng was Li Anzhi of the Ancestral Martial Decastars.

"Chu Feng, did you think you've won?"

Suddenly, Li Anzhi's younger brother Li Tianyou looked to Chu Feng with hatred-filled eyes.

"What else could it be? Are you perhaps suggesting that I've lost?" Chu Feng asked.

“The battle today was merely a sparring. The actual battle is the battle between your clan and our clan. I’d urge you to prepare yourself for despair.”

Li Tianyou swept his gaze across everyone from the Chu Heavenly Clan as he said those words. His gaze was very sharp. Not only was it filled with soaring anger, but it was also extremely threatening.

A member of the younger generation actually dared to threaten the entire Chu Heavenly Clan.

However, Li Tianyou just so happened to succeed.

Once Li Tianyou said those words, he made the people of the Chu Heavenly Clan and the people of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm realize that the Li Heavenly Clan was already an arrow on a bow, and that a war was unavoidable once the Upper Realm Gate opened completely.

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked, “Li Tianyou, I would like to ask you this: had you all thought of losing to me before coming here today?”

“It was merely a spar, what are you acting so arrogant for? My big brother will definitely repay you for his defeat today,” Li Tianyou said.

“Heh,” Chu Feng chuckled, “Actually, I wish to present you with these words.”

“Today, you all came here without ever imagining that you might lose, because you were filled with confidence.”

“I want to tell you all this. What you all are thinking, what you all are seeing, might not necessarily be the truth.”

“I will advise you of this: return to the Li Heavenly Clan and properly relay my words to your clan’s elders.”

“If your Li Heavenly Clan knows your place, then even if the Upper Realm Gate opens completely, our Chu Heavenly Clan will not bring any harm upon your Li Heavenly Clan.”

“However, if your Li Heavenly Clan thirsts for our Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm out of greed and dares to invade our Chu Heavenly Clan’s territory with your army, do not blame our Chu Heavenly Clan for acting ruthlessly,” Chu Feng said.

“Am I mishearing things? You’re threatening me?” Li Tianyou asked.

“That is not a threat. It’s merely a warning. However, if your clan refuses to comply, the warning shall come true,” Chu Feng said.

“Hahaha...” Suddenly, Li Tianyou burst into loud laughter.

Following him, the other Li Heavenly Clan’s younger generations also began to laugh.

To them, what Chu Feng said was truly akin to a joke.

Even though Li Anzhi’s defeat by Chu Feng today was very unexpected, they still possessed absolute confidence in their clan.

They felt that the difference between the Chu Heavenly Clan and their Li Heavenly Clan was simply akin to night and day.

They stood high and above, whereas the Chu Heavenly Clan was merely a weak clan.

Yet, a weakling in their eyes dared to threaten them. Naturally, they would find it very laughable.

To them, Chu Feng’s threat was simply akin to a hare declaring that it would bite a tiger to death. It was simply comical and absurd.

“You dare to threaten me? What makes you think you’re capable of that?”

Suddenly, Li Tianyou pointed toward Chu Feng and asked, “What makes you think your Chu Heavenly Clan is capable of threatening our Li Heavenly Clan? Who gave you the courage to utter that threat? Who gave you the confidence?”

The smile on his face had disappeared. It was replaced with endless anger. Being looked down on by Chu Feng caused him, a young master of the Li Heavenly Clan, to feel extremely displeased.

“I’ve already said what I needed to say. If you all refuse to believe my words, I can only say you can all give it a try when the time comes.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng’s eyes became incomparably sharp. His gaze was like an invisible blade piercing through Li Tianyou’s heart.

Seeing Chu Feng's eyes, Li Tianyou's body immediately trembled, and he involuntarily took two steps back. He even lost his footing, and nearly fell on his butt.

Even though he also did not understand why, the second his eyes met Chu Feng's eyes, he actually felt fear.

"Tianyou, what's wrong?"

The Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations hurriedly supported Li Tianyou. Not knowing what had happened, they looked to Li Tianyou with confused expressions.

As for Li Tianyou, he felt extremely embarrassed. Thinking that he was actually frightened by Chu Feng's gaze, the anger in his heart soared even more.

Thus, he said to Chu Feng in a very fierce manner, "Chu Feng, just you wait."

After he finished saying those words, Li Tianyou waved his sleeve, turned around and entered the war chariot.

After all of the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations entered the war chariot, the war chariot turned around and began to fly toward where they came from.

The war chariot was very fast. In the blink of an eye, it disappeared into the distant sky.

Seeing the Li Clan's War Chariot growing further and further away, the people of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm all felt very uneasy.

They felt that the Li Heavenly Clan's war banner that was gradually disappearing from their field of view would once again appear. Furthermore, the next time it appeared, it would likely bring a great catastrophe upon the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

Chu Feng being able to defeat Li Tianyou was an unexpected pleasant surprise. However, it was not completely out of the question.

After all, Chu Feng was Chu Xuanyuan's son. The blood running through him was the same heaven-defying blood.

However, it would be a miracle if the Chu Heavenly Clan was able to defeat the Li Heavenly Clan.

After all, the disparity between the two clans was simply too enormous.

At that moment, many people of the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm were not immersed in joy at having beaten back the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations. Instead, they were extremely worried.

"Chu Feng, well said," suddenly, a voice was heard.

It was the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

The crowd were surprised by the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's words.

Not only had Chu Feng injured the strongest member of the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generation, but he had even threatened the Li Heavenly Clan. What he did would only increase the Li Heavenly Clan's hostility toward the Chu Heavenly Clan.

Originally, the crowd had thought that the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief would reprimand Chu Feng. Even if he didn't reprimand Chu Feng, he should, at most, consider nothing to have happened.

The crowd truly didn't expect for the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief to praise Chu Feng.

Was he being excessively pampering of Chu Feng, or was it really as Chu Feng had said and the Chu Heavenly Clan possessed strength superior to what could be seen, that they were truly certain in being able to defeat the Li Heavenly Clan?

"The reputation of Chu Xuanyuan's son is truly well-justified."

At the moment when the crowd was confused, another voice was heard.

When that voice was heard, the crowd's expressions changed again. The reason for that was because the person who had spoken was the Saintly Stellar Monk.

Chapter 3086 - Overflowing With Light

“Brother Chu, your Chu Heavenly Clan is truly beloved by the heavens. Your Chu Heavenly Clan actually managed to have three exceptional geniuses appear in succession. This is truly worthy of celebration,” the Saintly Stellar Monk said to the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief with his fist clasped.

The Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief also clasped his fist in return. With a smile on his face, he said, “That is indeed our Chu Heavenly Clan’s fortune.”

“That fortune of yours is something that makes people jealous,” Saintly Stellar Monk said.

After saying those words, he soared into the sky, slowly walked in the air and arrived on the battle stage, landing before Chu Feng.

“This junior pays his respects to Saintly Monk,” Chu Feng hurriedly greeted the Saintly Stellar Monk respectfully.

“Little friend Chu Feng, there is no need for you to stand on ceremony. Did you know that the person that I wanted to see the most in coming here today was you?” the Saintly Stellar Monk said.

“Thank you for your compliment, senior,” Chu Feng said.

“It is not really a compliment. Rather, your grandfather and your father are truly too amazing.”

“That is why I wanted to see what their descendant would be like.”

“Seeing your performance today, you are truly qualified to be Chu Hanxian’s grandson, Chu Xuanyuan’s son,” the Saintly Stellar Monk said.

Hearing what the Saintly Stellar Monk said, many people of the younger generation revealed admiring and envious gazes. However, they knew very well that the only person present that could obtain such praise from Saintly Stellar Monk was Chu Feng.

“Senior is flattering me,” Chu Feng said.

“To be able to remain modest even with strong power is truly a rare virtue,” the Saintly Stellar Monk praised.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng smiled embarrassedly. He said, "Senior, when this junior was fighting against the Li Heavenly Clan's younger generations earlier, I was not modest."

"That doesn't count. One should always oppose one's opponent with equal harshness in a battle. Even verbal insults are a sort of psychological attack. One cannot be modest in such a setting."

"To be truly modest means that one will not act arrogant after winning," the Saintly Stellar Monk said.

"Thank you for your advice, senior," Chu Feng smiled.

"Little friend Chu Feng, this old man has a present for you today," the Saintly Stellar Monk said.

"Woosh~~~"

Suddenly, the Saintly Stellar Monk waved his sleeve. Then, the Fire Qilin Armor that he had presented to Chu Zhiyuan earlier was forcibly removed from him.

The enormous power that removed the Fire Qilin Armor caused Chu Zhiyuan to tumble to the ground. When he stopped, he lay there with a very sorry appearance.

"Little friend, this armor was something that I was planning to give to the most outstanding person of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm's younger generation."

"As for you, you evidently do not meet my requirements. As such, I am going to give this armor to Chu Feng instead. Are you willing to accept that?" the Saintly Stellar Monk said to Chu Zhiyuan.

Chu Zhiyuan was already powerless to defend himself. As such, how could he dare go against the Saintly Stellar Monk's desire?

Merely, being stripped of something that he was already wearing caused him to feel a scorching pain on his face.

To him, this day was simply a nightmare.

It would not even be excessive to say that he had fallen from the heavens to hell.

Encountering such an enormous shock, the corner of Chu Zhiyuan's mouth started to twitch. Then, his body started shaking, and his mouth turned askew. After that, he fainted.

Chu Zhiyuan actually fainted from being unable to endure the shock.

"Zhiyuan!"

This scene greatly frightened Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather. He immediately arrived before Chu Zhiyuan to diagnose his injuries.

"Rest assured, he has merely fainted. It is not a danger to his life."

"However, my words will concern your lives," at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly spoke.

Once Chu Feng said those words, Chu Zhiyuan's grandfather, Chu Haoyan's grandfather, Chu Ruoshi and Chu Haoyan all shivered. Then, they looked to Chu Feng with dejected expressions.

How could they have forgotten that Chu Feng currently controlled their lives, and could end them with a word if he wanted to?

At that moment, everyone turned their eyes to Chu Feng. Many among them even held their breath, fearing to even breathe loudly.

Now that the foreign enemies had been beaten back, it was time for Chu Feng to settle things with his internal enemies.

Everyone was wondering how Chu Feng would handle these shameless clansmen that went as far as to use despicable methods in order to harm him.

Suddenly, Chu Feng looked to the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, clasped his fist and said, "Lord Clan Chief, I only have a single request. I want their lives to be spared. As for their punishment, Lord Clan Chief can decide."

"What?"

"Chu Feng actually wants to keep them alive?"

Chu Feng's words were completely unexpected.

Even Chu Ruoshi and the others had not expected Chu Feng to say this sort of thing.

After all, what they'd done to Chu Feng was simply deplorable, and should be punished with death.

Since Chu Feng held authority over their lives, practically everyone, including they themselves, felt that Chu Feng would definitely order their deaths. The only difference was how they would die, and what sort of torture they would suffer before their deaths.

No one expected that Chu Feng would actually let them live.

At that moment, even Her Lady Queen turned to ask Chu Feng in a confused manner, "Chu Feng, why aren't you planning to kill them?"

"If I am to kill them, it will be letting them off too easily."

"I want them to live and witness my growth with their own eyes. I want them to witness me growing to a state where they fear me, a state that they do not wish to see."

"At that time, I will be able to take their lives at any moment. They will have to worry about being killed by me day and night. Forever, they will live in fear of me, unable to sleep in peace," Chu Feng said.

"Boy, never would I imagined you to have this sort of trick in mind. If that's the case, this Queen will stand in favor of you not killing them," Her Lady Queen said.

No one was able to hear the conversation between Chu Feng and Her Lady Queen. Thus, no one knew what Chu Feng's real intention was.

Chu Feng was definitely not being lenient. Instead, he wanted them to suffer even more.

"Chu Feng, are you certain of that?" The Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief asked.

His reaction was very calm. Compared to the other Chu Heavenly Clansmen, he seemed to not be very surprised by Chu Feng's response.

“Lord Clan Chief, this junior is certain,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well,” the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief nodded. Then, he waved his sleeve, and boundless martial power spinkled down. His martial power turned into four golden chains that flew out from his cuff.

The golden chains began flying toward Chu Haoyan’s grandfather, Chu Zhiyuan’s grandfather, Chu Zhiyuan and Chu Ruoshi.

By the time the crowd noticed the golden chains, the golden chains had already tightly bound the four of them.

After being bound by the chains, the aura of the four were completely suppressed. Furthermore, their faces turned extremely pale, and they directly fell onto their stomachs.

At that moment, they resembled people without cultivation. They were unable to bring forth any power at all. They were no different from cripples.

“Zhengfa, punish the four of them severely according to our clan’s laws. Remember... all you have to do is to keep them slightly alive,” the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said to Chu Xuanzhengfa.

“Yes, Milord,” Chu Xuanzhengfa clasped his fist in response.

Then, he ordered his men from the Law Enforcement Hall to arrest the four of them.

“Well then, everyone, this Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition shall come to an end here. Chu Zhiyuan has trained in a demonic technique, and had an unfair advantage in the contest. As such, his performance is invalid.”

“As for who the number one individual in this Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition really is, I believe there is no need for this old man to state it,” the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief smiled.

“Chu Feng!”

Once the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said those words, there were immediately shouts of Chu Feng’s name. n--O**V**e**l**b1n

The person who first shouted out Chu Feng’s name was Ying Mingchao.

To the people present, Ying Mingchao was a stranger.

However, no one felt any antipathy toward his shout. In fact, the crowd even began to echo his shout.

Soon, both the people of the younger generation and the people of the older generation were all shouting Chu Feng's name. Their shouting was like thunder exploding in the sky.

At that moment, many of the people present were feeling very joyous. This was especially true for the Chu Heavenly Clan's younger generations. They felt extremely proud to have a person like Chu Feng among their ranks.

However, there were also people with faces covered in unease.

They were Chu Haoyan and Chu Hanyu.

There was no need to mention Chu Haoyan. His grandfather had been arrested. One could very well imagine what he was feeling now.

As for Chu Hanyu, he was someone who was determined to avenge his father. However, seeing the current Chu Feng, how was he supposed to avenge his father?

That said, there was more than just those two people among the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clansmen that were feeling depressed.

There was another person. Her name was Chu Yue.

Chu Yue was originally the person closest to Chu Feng in the Chu Heavenly Clan.

However, for the sake of her own self-interest, she betrayed Chu Feng.

And now, Chu Feng was overflowing with light and enjoying praises from the entire Great Chilocosm Upper Realm. Yet, she no longer had any relationship with Chu Feng.

All she had was endless remorse.

Chapter 3087 - Clan Chief's Apology

Chu Feng's name was resonating through the sky, echoing in all directions.

His name was being sounded nonstop. It seemed as if his name would resonate till the end of time, forever remaining in the world.

Suddenly, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief raised his hand.

Once he did that, the shouting and high-spirited people immediately quieted down.

In the blink of an eye, everyone present closed their mouths. However, Chu Feng's name was still echoing in the air, and only gradually settling.

When Chu Feng's name finally stopped echoing, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief soared into the sky and landed before Chu Feng.

He placed his hand on Chu Feng's forehead.

Although Chu Feng did not have much feeling in his forehead, he felt an enormous shock to his soul. That said, this shock was one of warmth.

Chu Feng was able to sense that something was currently being removed from his soul. As for that something, it originally did not belong to him.

It was an imprint. It was the imprint of 'trash' on his soul.

It was the imprint that the Chu Heavenly Clan had left on him. And now, it was being removed by the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

"Senior?" Chu Feng felt very complicated.

Originally, he had wanted to thank the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief. However, he wasn't able to utter a word of thanks.

After all, it was as his father had said, the 'trash' imprint was branded onto their souls. Even if the imprint could be removed, the humiliation to the two of them would never be erased.

At that moment, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief saw Chu Feng's complicated expression. He seemed to have realized something. However, he did not say anything to Chu Feng. Instead, he only smiled.

Then, he turned his gaze to the crowd present.

“It is as everyone has seen, Chu Feng is most definitely not someone incapable of cultivating.”

“Back then, this old man failed to carry out his duty. It was our Chu Heavenly Clan that failed to carry out our duty. Thus...”

The Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief turned his eyes back to Chu Feng. He said, “... this old man owes you an apology.”

After that, the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief lowered his back and bowed to Chu Feng.

“Senior, you must not,” Chu Feng hurriedly rushed forth to stop him. However, he was simply unable to stop him.

“Chu Feng, this old man was blind and deaf. I made an incorrect decision.”

“Right now, I want to amend my mistake. I hope that it is not too late. Chu Feng, are you able to forgive this old man, forgive this clan?”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng was stunned. He was left slightly dumbfounded.

The Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief was actually really apologizing for what he did back then.

“Chu Feng, please come back.”

Right at that moment, everyone from the Chu Heavenly Clan actually started to bow to Chu Feng. In unison, they called out for him to return to their Chu Heavenly Clan.

Regardless of whether they were doing it out of sincerity or hypocrisy, they at least all called out for Chu Feng to return.

The gazes of everyone from the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm were fixed onto Chu Feng.

They were all waiting for Chu Feng’s response.

While it was true that the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief and everyone else apologizing to Chu Feng, a person of the younger generation, was very

unbelievable, Chu Feng had already revealed exactly what sort of talent he possessed to everyone with his performance this day.

Chu Feng possessed the qualifications to make the Chu Heavenly Clan apologize to him. To request his return to their Chu Heavenly Clan.

“Actually, my father mentioned something to me.”

“He said that regardless of whether or not the Chu Heavenly Clan is willing to recognize us father and son, the blood flowing in our veins will forever be the Chu Heavenly Clan’s blood.”

“Because of that, I, Chu Feng, have always considered myself to be a part of the Chu Heavenly Clan.”

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng turned his eyes to the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief. He said, “Senior, please get up. There is no need to mention what happened in the past anymore. What is important is our clan’s future.”

After he finished saying those words, Chu Feng helped the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief back up.

Then, Chu Feng cast his gaze across the crowd. He said, “Everyone, please get up.”

“Brother Chu, it is truly your Chu Heavenly Clan’s blessing to have a child like this. You must not let this child down again,” the Saintly Stellar Monk said.

“Unless this old man dies, our clan will never let down Chu Feng again,” The Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“Haha, that’s right.”

The Saintly Stellar Monk laughed. Then, he directly placed the Fire Qilin Armor in his hand onto Chu Feng’s body.

Chu Feng did not oppose it. After all, it was an honor to be able to have the Saintly Stellar Monk put the Fire Qilin Armor on him.

After wearing the Fire Qilin Armor, the aura Chu Feng emitted was far superior to that of Chu Zhiyuan. They were simply incomparable. It was as if the Fire Qilin Armor was especially created for Chu Feng.

The might emitted by Chu Feng caused everyone's eyes to shine. Even the Saintly Stellar Monk was no exception.

"Little friend Chu Feng, you are a perfect match for this Fire Qilin Armor. It would appear that I have presented this gift to the right person," the Saintly Stellar Monk said.

"Thank you senior," Chu Feng clasped his fist.

"There's no need to stand on ceremony. This gift is something you deserve," the Saintly Stellar Monk smiled.

Afterwards, the Saintly Stellar Monk and the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had a brief exchange of pleasantries, then left.

As for the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief, he began to mention how to handle the Li Heavenly Clan to the grand characters of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

Although Chu Feng's display of his talent was something worthy of celebration, the opening of the Upper Realm Gate remained a disaster that the people of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm would have to deal with.

The matter was like a heavy boulder crushing everyone's chests, making them feel extremely uncomfortable.

Thus, as the ruler of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had to say some things.

Actually, what he said were merely words to stabilize the crowd's hearts, to raise their morale.

However, his words were very effective. His words calmed the hearts of the crowd that were feeling extremely uneasy.

While the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief was conversing with the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm's grand characters, the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm's younger generations surrounded Chu Feng.

Everyone wanted to seize this opportunity to befriend Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng's gaze was not on those people. Chu Feng ran his eyes across the crowd. He was looking for that old lady.

That Illusory Blood Clan's Clan Chief was someone with a definite relationship with his grandfather.

Unfortunately, no matter how much Chu Feng searched for her, he was unable to find her.

"Are you searching for that senior? She left when the Chu Heavenly Clan's Lord Clan Chief was apologizing to you."

Suddenly, a familiar voice entered Chu Feng's ears.

Turning toward the voice, a beautiful woman was standing in the crowd not far from Chu Feng.

Her beauty was so exceptional that she could still be recognized immediately even when standing within the crowd.

That person was the Starfall Holy Land's Holy Daughter, Xia Yun'er.

Xia Yun'er was as beautiful as always. That said, this woman who Chu Feng originally viewed as a poisonous beauty gave off the sensation of an old friend when Chu Feng saw her again.

Chu Feng did not say anything in return. Instead, he smiled lightly.

Seeing the smile on Chu Feng's face, Xia Yun'er also smiled.

Her smile was very sweet, very beautiful and very relieved.

She knew that Chu Feng was still the same Chu Feng. Even though he was overflowing with light now, even though he had reached a peak position that no one else could attain, she, Xia Yun'er, was still Chu Feng's friend.

Chapter 3088 - The Truth Of What Happened Back Then

"Miss Xia, it's been a long time," Chu Feng said to Xia Yun'er with a smile on his face.

"It's been a long time, Young Master Chu," Xia Yun'er smiled in return.

The two of them both had smiles on their faces. They resembled old friends as they chatted. As for the other people of the younger generation present, they were all ignored by the two of them.

Had it been before, Chu Feng being able to chat with Xia Yun'er in such a manner would definitely bring about countless people's envy and jealousy. In fact, they would even feel hatred and killing intent toward Chu Feng.

After all, Xia Yun'er was one of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm's publicly accepted Three Great Beauties, and the Starfall Holy Land's Holy Daughter.

However, at that moment, there were not a lot of people that were envious of Chu Feng. Instead, more people were envious of Xia Yun'er.

After all, things was different from before. Chu Feng was no longer that greenhorn that even someone like Chu Xianshuo could bully.

The current Chu Feng was standing at the apex of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

He was someone that could even defeat an existence like Li Anzhi.

How could there be another person of the younger generation in the entire Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm that would dare to bully Chu Feng?

At that moment, everyone realized one thing.

From that moment on, there would be two kinds of geniuses in the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm.

The first kind was Chu Feng. As for the second kind, it was everyone else.

.....

Eventually, all banquets will come to an end. The Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition was the same.

This was especially true now that the Upper Realm Gate had opened, and the entire Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm would face the great enemy known as the Li Heavenly Clan.

Thus, after the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief pacified the crowd's nervousness, the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition came to an end.

After the Heavenly Beloved Martial Competition ended, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief began to discuss countermeasures against the Li Heavenly Clan with the Chu Heavenly Clan's upper echelons.

As for Chu Feng, he arrived at the residence of the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

The reason for that was because the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said he had matters to discuss with Chu Feng.

Chu Feng quietly waited for the return of the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng also had important matters that he wished to discuss with the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

"Creak~~"

Finally, that tightly-closed palace gate was pushed open. Then, a familiar figure walked in.

That person was none other than the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief.

After walking in, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief asked Chu Feng with a smile on his face, "Chu Feng, you wouldn't blame this old man, right?"

He simply did not look like a clan chief. Instead, he was acting more like Chu Feng's grandfather, and his eyes were filled with affection.

"This junior doesn't understand what senior means by that. Why would I blame senior?" Chu Feng asked.

"I have pretended to be Youyuan and deceived you for so long," The Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng came to a sudden realization. He smiled and said, "Senior has done all that for my sake. As such, how could junior blame senior?"

"Actually, I had done that with selfish motives too. I wanted to observe you by being near you so as to verify your moral character. That said, you have truly not disappointed this old man. You greatly resemble your father and grandfather."

"To this date, our Chu Heavenly Clan has grown exponentially, and our clansmen number in the millions. However, the most outstanding blood of our Chu Heavenly Clan only runs in your veins."

The Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's eyes were focused onto Chu Feng when he said those words. Chu Feng was able to sense deep expectations in his eyes.

At that moment, Chu Feng's heart moved. He was able to tell that there was a deeper implication to the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's words.

He first praised Chu Feng's grandfather and father. And now, he was saying that Chu Feng had the most outstanding blood flowing through him.

Furthermore, he was very emotional when he said those words. This meant that not only did the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief recognize Chu Feng's grandfather and father's strength, but he also held deep affection for them.

Chu Feng felt that it was time for him to state what he wanted to say the most.

After all, his actual purpose in returning to the Chu Heavenly Clan was to have the Chu Heavenly Clan agree to release his father after gaining their acknowledgement. Only by doing so would Chu Feng be able to gain information about his mother from his father.

Thus, after adjusting his frame of mind, Chu Feng said, "Senior, my father might have been rude and impetuous back then. However, he has already suffered for all these years."

"Furthermore, the Chu Heavenly Clan is currently faced with the great enemy that is the Li Heavenly Clan. Our Chu Heavenly Clan is in need of strong battle power."

"Might it be possible..."

However, before Chu Feng could finish, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief waved his hand and said, "Chu Feng, this old man understands your intention."

Chu Feng was surprised to hear those words.

The Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief looked to Chu Feng with a complicated expression again.

"Chu Feng, what you know is actually not the truth as to what happened back then."

"Firstly, you need to know how powerful your father was."

"With his strength, our Chu Heavenly Clan is simply unable to restrain him," The Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's heart moved. An indescribable sensation was surging from his heart.

Chu Feng was dumbfounded. Since the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief knew very well that they could not contain his father, why then did they decide to imprison his father in their Chu Heavenly Clan's forbidden area?

"Chu Feng, do you think that this old man is such a muddle-headed person?"

"Did you really think that I would imprison your father just because of some remarks from our clansmen?" The Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said with a smile.

Unable to contain himself, Chu Feng asked, "Senior, exactly what happened?"

As matters stood, Chu Feng firmly believed that there was another reason for what happened back then.

"Firstly, you need to understand why your father had to leave the Ancestral Martial Starfield."

"The reason for that is because, with his talent, if he were to continue to grow, our Chu Heavenly Clan would definitely have become the overlord of the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield under his leadership."

"However, the current overlord of the Ancestral Martial Starfield, that is the people of the Starfield Master Realm, would definitely not allow that to happen."

"Thus, if your father wanted to continue to grow, he had to leave the Ancestral Martial Starfield."

"...just like your grandfather did back then," The Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said.

"In that case, both my grandfather and father were forced to leave?" Chu Feng asked.

"That's right. If they didn't leave, they would be viciously attacked by the Starfield Master Realm. After all, they would not allow anyone to threaten their position as the overlord of the Ancestral Martial Starfield."

"That said, the Starfields outside are far superior to our Ancestral Martial Starfield. They are filled with countless experts, and are extremely dangerous."

"That is why even someone like your grandfather ended up going missing for many years. Even now, his life and death is unknown."

After saying those words, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief sighed. His sigh was filled with helplessness.

"The main culprit behind all this is the Starfield Master Realm. They were the ones that forced my grandfather and father to leave this place and risk their lives in other Starfields."

At that moment, deep anger began to surge in Chu Feng's eyes. However, his expression immediately changed. He said, "In that case, it would mean that the main reason why my father was imprisoned was also because of the Starfield Master Realm?"

"I wouldn't say it is all because of them. With your father's return, the Starfield Master Realm would naturally pay close attention to him. As your father killed people from the Starfield Master Realm, the Starfield Master Realm would naturally use that as justification to take care of your father."

"However, the Starfield Master Realm is not the main reason why I imprisoned your father. The main reason is because your father... provoked a power many times more powerful than the Starfield Master Realm," The Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said.

Chapter 3089 - A Lot Of Thoughts

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's psyche tensed up. He hurriedly asked, "Who was it?"

When he asked those words, Chu Feng's entire expression changed.

When Chu Feng found out that the Starfield Master Realm had been secretly suppressing his grandfather and father, threatened their lives and even forced them to leave the Ancestral Martial Starfield, Chu Feng's eyes were filled with anger.

However, there was now a determined expression within Chu Feng's anger-filled gaze.

Even though he did not know who his opponents were, he was prepared to make a stand and fight against that power.

"This old man doesn't know who they are. Your father did not mention it to me."

"However, your father said that they were an existence so powerful that very few people could match them in the entire vast Outer World," The Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said.

"In that case, my father could choose to leave. Why did he decide to allow himself to be imprisoned?" Chu Feng asked.

"Actually, it was not only you who didn't know the reason why, this old man also didn't know the reason why in the past," After saying those words, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief smiled. After smiling that complex smile, he said, "There is some sort of power within the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm's forbidden area."

"If one is to stay in the forbidden area for an extended period of time, then regardless of what cultivation one might possess, one's cultivation would start regressing. That was precisely the reason why our Chu Heavenly Clan's Old Ancestor, Lord Yetianhong, classified that place as a forbidden area and sealed it away."

"However, your father said that the frightening power of that place is actually capable of awakening his Heavenly Bloodline. Only by awakening his Heavenly Bloodline would he be able to gain the strength to contend against that power."

“That is the main purpose of his return to our clan. Furthermore, for the sake of not catching the attention of that power, he had no choice but to keep a low profile. If he wanted to keep a low profile, he could not clash with the Starfield Master Realm, and could only choose to endure silently.”

“Of course, none of us had planned for things to develop to the state they did back then. It was truly that we were forced to a state of no alternative after certain things happened.”

“Back then, the result from your talent test was real.”

“After people insulted you, your father was enraged, and ended up killing people from the Starfield Master Realm. That too was real.”

“It is also real that the Starfield Master Realm wanted to put your father to death.”

“Because of that, after what happened, we were forced with no other choice.”

“Originally, I had proposed to secretly raise you. I was truly worried that you would end up dying in there after being brought into the forbidden area by your father.”

“After all, that forbidden area is a place that can even deprive martial cultivators of their cultivation. For an infant that you were back then, it was simply akin to hell.”

“However, your father refused my proposal. He told me to not involve myself in the matter, and pretend as if I did not know of his intentions. He wanted everyone to think that you had truly been expelled by our Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“Back then, this old man did not understand your father’s intentions. I also did not know what exactly it was your father was trying to do. After all, you were only an infant back then.”

“However, I now understand. Actually, your father had selfish motives from the very start.”

As the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said those words, the expression in his eyes changed slightly.

“Senior, you said that my father had selfish motives?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

Chu Feng was actually still unable to understand why his father made the decision he had.

Even if his father wanted to enter closed-door training, there were many methods of doing so. There was no need to get himself expelled from the Chu Heavenly Clan, to become disdained by everyone.

Moreover, it was as this Lord Clan Chief said, even if his father wanted to enter closed-door training in the forbidden area using the excuse of being imprisoned, everything was still within the Chu Heavenly Clan’s control.

There was no need for his father to bring him, Chu Feng, along.

“Firstly, your father had mentioned that hatred is the fastest way for one to become stronger.”

“Because of that, this old man had thought that he wanted you to live with hatred, that he wanted hatred to temper you and make you stronger.”

“Although I must admit that his method has been effective, and you have become very excellent. Ever since you were a child, you have been living a struggle and adversity-filled life. Because of that, you now possess a willpower that other geniuses lack.”

“The willpower that you’ve tempered all your life will become critical to your future growth.”

“Thus, Chu Feng, your father did not abandon you because he truly wanted to abandon you.”

“He wanted you to become even more excellent. After all, since ancient times, all the greats were people that grew up amidst adversity. They were definitely not people raised in protected environments.”

“Because of that, your father actually has enormous expectations of you, so much so that he hopes for you to surpass him.”

“Furthermore, as your father had offended such a strong power, he must’ve prepared himself to encounter them and face the danger of death at any moment.”

“Under that sort of circumstance, it might actually be the safest for him to push you away from him.” *Overl***bn**

“Thus, Chu Feng, you must not blame him,” The Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“Senior, I have never ever blamed my father. Likewise, I’ve never blamed my mother.”

“Even though they’ve never been by my side, I am always able to sense the love that they have for me,” Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng was stating his true feelings. He didn’t blame his father for pushing him away.

After all, it was as the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said, growing up among cold eyes and ridicule had truly tempered Chu Feng’s willpower. This willpower had allowed Chu Feng to survive amidst adversity.

Moreover, what the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said was very true. His father had offended a power much stronger than the Starfield Master Realm. As such, he was powerless to defend himself.

Under that sort of circumstance, it was indeed safer for him to distance himself from Chu Feng.

If it were Chu Feng making the decision, he too would likely make the same decision.

Furthermore, Chu Feng also did not blame his father for not telling him the truth in the Heavenly Road.

The reason for that was that if Chu Feng were to find out the truth at that time, he might really not have received the Chu Heavenly Clan’s acknowledgement so quickly.

Chu Feng knew very well that he was only able to make such rapid progress due to the hatred in his heart. It was that hatred that urged him to grow, urged him to obtain the Chu Heavenly Clan's acknowledgement.

"Very well, you are truly worthy of being Chu Xuanyuan's son. Actually, had it been someone else from our clan, even if they possessed excellent talent, they might never have had a chance to shine, or even been killed by those with bloodlines inferior to theirs, should they have been tossed into the Lower Realms."

"However, you are different. That will not happen to you, for you are Chu Xuanyuan's son, and Chu Hanxian's grandson."

"Flowing within your body is extraordinary blood. Contained within your body is the purest bloodline power."

"Only you can grow within predicaments to your current state. Likely, your father was only able to be that heartless, push you far away from him and have you temper yourself outside all alone, because he firmly believed in you," The Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said with a smile on his face.

"Lord Father has truly given this a lot of thought," Chu Feng said.

Martial God Asura #Chapter 3090 - Returning To The Lower Realm - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 3090 - Returning To The Lower Realm

Chapter 3090 - Returning To The Lower Realm

Suddenly, Her Lady Queen's voice was heard. After finding out about the truth, she was not as undisturbed and calm like Chu Feng. Instead, Her Lady Queen became very angry. "Pah! Lot of thoughts my ass! He is simply heartless!"

"Although your mother also did not look after you, she at least sealed this Queen in your body. As for your father, he truly pushed you into dangers with no regard. If it wasn't for your own capabilities, you might really be dead already."

She sighed. "Men. Sometimes they are truly frighteningly selfish."

Hearing Her Lady Queen's angry voice, Chu Feng chuckled lightly.

He knew very well that Her Lady Queen was only so angry because she felt sorry for him.

"You're still laughing? Your father deceived you!"

"Furthermore, even if he had no way to keep you by his side, you would've been able to have this old man raising you."

"Yet, your father decided to toss you into that Ancestral Martial Lower Realm and have you grow up by yourself. How could you still laugh at that?" Hearing Chu Feng's laughter, Her Lady Queen became even more furious.

"Eggy, it's enough. Aren't I perfectly fine?"

"You shouldn't harbor hard feelings for your future father-in-law just because of that," Chu Feng said with a smile.

"What did you say? Future father-in-law?"

"The hell do you mean by future father-in-law?" Hearing those words, Her Lady Queen's little face immediately changed.

"Since you're going to be my future wife, my father will naturally be your future father-in-law," Chu Feng said with a mischievous laugh.

"Pah! You are truly daring! You dare to take advantage of this Queen! How shameless could you be?!" Her Lady Queen spoke very angrily.

"My Eggy, stop pretending. I know that you have fallen deeply in love with me. You're not planning to marry anyone besides me, no?" Chu Feng said.

"Heavens, how did you become this shameless?! If I knew you would become like this, this Queen would not have protected you till this day!" Her Lady Queen shouted with contempt.

Whilst Chu Feng and Her Lady Queen were conversing with one another inside Chu Feng's mind, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief suddenly opened his mouth.

He said, "Chu Feng, regarding the truth of what happened back then, only you, your father and I know about it."

"You absolutely must not speak of this matter to anyone else, not even Chu Xuanzhengfa."

"Otherwise, if word of this matter is to spread, it will not only bring danger to your father, but our entire Chu Heavenly Clan will likely face a calamity of death and destruction."

The Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief had a very serious expression on his face as he said those words.

"Senior, please rest assured. As this matter concerns the safety of our Chu Heavenly Clan, this junior will definitely keep it confidential."

Chu Feng knew that there were a lot of reasons as to why his father was forced to make such a decision back then.

Powerful enemies were not scary. Instead, it was the internal traitors that were scariest. Even for the Chu Heavenly Clan now, they were filled with internal and external conflicts, and were not united at all.

A lot of people hoped for the death of Chu Feng and his father. Naturally, Chu Feng would not tell the actual truth.

As for Chu Xuanzhengfa, Chu Feng firmly believed in his character. Chu Feng believed that the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said those words not because he suspected Chu Xuanzhengfa's character, but rather because he felt that it was safer to keep the matter as confidential as possible.

"That said, senior, there is something that this junior wishes to seek your help with."

"What is it?" The Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief asked.

"I wish to take a trip back to the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm," Chu Feng said.

Although Chu Feng's strength could be considered to be extremely strong among all of the Ancestral Martial Starfield's younger generations, returning to the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm was still not something that he could decide on his own. He had to first get permission from the Chu Heavenly Clan.

"Actually, this old man knew that you wanted to return. As such, that will naturally not be an issue. Our Chu Heavenly Clan has a formation that leads directly to the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm. You can also use that formation to directly return to the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm."

"That said, there are still things that this old man must warn you of," At that moment, the Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief's expression turned serious again.

"Senior, please speak away," Chu Feng said.

"With your cultivation, you will be akin to an actual god should you return to the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm. You will be able to travel completely unhindered through its vast territory. You will be able to easily destroy numerous formations. However... there are still places that you cannot enter," The Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said.

"Where?" Chu Feng asked.

"The Misty Peak," The Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said.

"The Misty Peak?" When he heard that name, Chu Feng started to recall the numerous rumors and legends regarding the Misty Peak.

The Misty Peak was indeed a miraculous land. Existing on it were many unexplainable powers. Even Ya Fei, Ya Ruyu, and Murong Wan had disappeared in there.

"Located in the Misty Peak is a power far superior to that of our clan. I know that you have some relationship with the people of the Misty Peak. However, that Misty Peak is a mystery that not even our Chu Heavenly Clan is capable of solving."

"Our clan has always felt that the Misty Peak might be the hiding ground of a certain Ancient Era's Organism. Thus, it is best to not enter deep into the Misty Peak. Otherwise, if you end up disturbing that individual, a great catastrophe will be imminent, and no one will be able to save you," The Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief warned.

"Exactly what happened in the Ancient Era? Why would there be Ancient Era's Organisms still alive, but the Ancient Era's cultivators are nowhere to be seen?" Chu Feng asked curiously.

"Who said that there aren't any Ancient Era's cultivators still alive today?" The Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief asked with a smile on his face.

"There are martial cultivators from the Ancient Era still alive today?" Chu Feng asked feeling very surprised.

Regardless of how powerful a martial cultivator might be, they would inevitably be limited by their lifespan. However, this was different for some special organisms. Their lifespans were far longer than those of human cultivators. Thus, it was understandable for them to still be alive.

However, if martial cultivators were able to continue to live on from the Ancient Era till present, it would be very astonishing. Unless one were using some sort of heaven-defying method, it would be impossible for a martial cultivator to live for so long.

Most importantly, Chu Feng had seen Ancient Era's Organisms. However, he had never seen any Ancient Era's cultivators. Curious as to what actually happened in the Ancient Era, Chu Feng hoped that there would be Ancient Era's cultivators still alive. Should that be the case, the mystery of the Ancient Era would be solved.

"Many years ago, when your grandfather and I were still young, a martial cultivator emitting an ancient era's aura all over his body was discovered in a remnant somewhere in the Ancestral Martial Starfield."

"Merely, he seemed to have received an enormous shock, and was delirious when he was discovered, killing anyone he encountered."

"He was so powerful that he was simply unstoppable. Back then, only a small portion among those that encountered him were able to survive. The great majority of them died by his hands."

"Afterwards, he was seen in multiple other places. A bloodbath ended up happening in all the places that he appeared."

"Originally, everyone felt that he would become a catastrophe of our Ancestral Martial Starfield. Fortunately, he ended up leaving the Ancestral Martial Starfield. Only then did the uneasy and alarmed people of the Ancestral Martial Starfield ease their hearts," The Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief said.

“There’s actually such a thing?” Chu Feng started to feel a faint sense of unease after hearing about it.

“As such, it might be possible that there are still cultivators from the Ancient Era that are alive. As for that Ancient Era’s Organism that I spoke of, it might not necessarily be a monster. It is possible that it is a human cultivator. Merely, discovering it might not necessarily be a good thing,” The Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“I am truly growing ever more curious as to exactly what happened in the Ancient Era,” Chu Feng said.

“The mystery will one day be solved. Perhaps our cultivation is still insufficient. Likely, this old man will have no chance to find out about the mystery of the Ancient Era. However, it is different for you,” The Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said as he looked to Chu Feng.

Then, he asked, “Oh, that’s right. Chu Feng, when do you plan to return to the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm to see your father?”

“Senior, I am planning to set off immediately,” Chu Feng said.

“This urgent?” The Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief smiled. Then, he said, “That’s good too. Well then, follow me.”

Afterwards, Chu Feng followed the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief and arrived at a building. It was a vast palace hall emitting an extremely ancient aura.

The Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief brought Chu Feng to a gate. Upon opening the gate, Chu Feng could see that there was a formation inside.

Seeing that formation flickering with light, Chu Feng became very excited.

Chu Feng knew that he would leave the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm and return to the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm the moment he stepped into that formation.

The people that had helped him in the past, the people that had battled alongside him, the people that Chu Feng considered to be his relatives... Chu Feng had always thought about them ever since he left.

Finally, Chu Feng was able to return to see them again, return to chat and drink with them again.

Chapter 3091 - Forbidden Mysteryrealm

“Chu Feng, hold this title plate and have it recognize you as its master. After that, enter that formation, and you’ll be able to directly enter our Chu Heavenly Clan’s Forbidden Mysteryrealm in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm.”

“You will not be able to find the formation back to our Chu Heavenly Clan’s Forbidden Mysteryrealm, however. The reason for that is because that formation is hidden.”

“However, this old man will teach you a chant. By chanting it, you will be able to summon the formation hidden in the Forbidden Mysteryrealm and return here.”

The Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief handed a title plate to Chu Feng.

That title plate was slightly special. Although it was said to be a title plate, it resembled an oval jade pendant. The jade pendant was light blue in color, and looked very clear. It seemed to be composed of water.

Following the directions given to him by the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief, Chu Feng began to imbue the title plate with his power. Immediately, the so-called title plate gave a response. Then, the title plate actually started to melt. Like water, it entered Chu Feng’s palm.

It did not leave any sort of imprint after entering Chu Feng’s palm. However, Chu Feng was able to tell that the power of the title plate had already fused with him.

At that moment, Chu Feng was delighted. He knew that he would from henceforth be able to go back and forth through the teleportation formation connecting the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm and the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm at will.

“Senior, do you plan to accompany me?” Chu Feng asked the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief.

“The opening of the Upper Realm Gate has caused our clansmen to feel very uneasy. From today on, this old man will not be able to leave our Chu

Heavenly Clan. I cannot even enter closed-door training. Thus, I will not be accompanying you.”

“Moreover, there are a lot of your friends and family there. You will inevitably stay there for several days after seeing them again. If this old man is to accompany you, they will likely feel ill-at-ease,” the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng smiled. He had to admit that what the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said was correct.

Even though Chu Feng clearly knew that he was a member of the Chu Heavenly Clan, and belonged to the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, in his heart, the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm, the Nine Provinces Continent, that pebble-sized Azure Province by comparison, was his actual homeland.

Chu Feng had enormous sentimental feelings for that place. There were a lot of people Chu Feng were concerned for there.

Finally, Chu Feng would be able to see them again. The feelings he had for them was not something that could be expressed with a word or two.

Because of that, Chu Feng really did plan to stay for a while after returning this time around.

“That said, Chu Feng, although this old man understands your frame of mind, I hope that you can return quickly, and not stay too long.”

“No matter how much you long to be there, the current you no longer belongs to that place.”

“In fact, not even this Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm would be capable of keeping you. You belong to the vast world of martial cultivation.”

“That mysterious and unknown vast starry sky shall become your arena,” the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said to Chu Feng sincerely and earnestly.

“This junior understands senior’s intention. I will definitely return quickly,” Chu Feng said.

“Very well. Go on ahead. This old man will wait for you here. When you return, this old man will have an important matter to discuss with you,” the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief said.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart moved. He had a feeling that what the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief was talking about was something extraordinary. The reason for that was because Chu Feng was able to hear the graveness of the subject from his tone.

That said, Chu Feng did not attempt to ask about it. Instead, he casually chatted with the Chu Heavenly Clan’s Clan Chief for a bit longer, learned the chant for activating the title plate that had assimilated into his palm, and then stepped into the teleportation formation.

Using the title plate in his palm, Chu Feng began to activate the formation.

That grand formation was very powerful. It was also very fast.

In an instant, Chu Feng had been transferred away from the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, and into the vast starry sky. His surroundings were rapidly flowing past. However, the distant stars were clearly visible to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng knew that this formation was actually quite similar to the Stairway to Heaven. It had the same sort of function. The only difference was that the Stairway to Heaven lead upwards, whereas this formation lead downward.

After continuing the rapid descent for a while, Chu Feng’s surroundings were no longer filled with stars. Instead, they had become rapidly flowing spirit power. Chu Feng was simply unable to see his surroundings at all. However, he was still capable of sensing that he was rapidly descending.

“Buzz~~~”

Finally, Chu Feng’s body was set free from the restriction of the teleportation formation. He was once again capable of moving. At that moment, Chu Feng’s vision had also become clear again.

Chu Feng was able to recognize where he was with a single glance.

That place was the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm. It was the Heavenly Road that connected the Eastern Sea Region to the Holy Land of Martialism.

This was the place where Chu Feng's father, Chu Xuanyuan, and the old ape were imprisoned, the Chu Heavenly Clan's forbidden area, the Forbidden Mysteryrealm.

However, upon arriving there the excitement that had just appeared on Chu Feng's face immediately froze.

Chu Feng was dumbfounded. Upon closer inspection, he discovered that he had been locked out of the forbidden area. He was simply unable to enter deep into the forbidden area.

The reason for that was because there was a very powerful formation sealing it, locking Chu Feng out.

That formation was so powerful that Chu Feng was able to tell merely by looking at it that he would not be able to breach it. Not to mention him, it was likely not even their Chu Heavenly Clan's Clan Chief would be able to breach the formation.

"Is this... something my father set up?" Chu Feng mumbled to himself. He was able to faintly feel a familiar aura from the formation. As for that aura... it was his father's aura.

"Lord Father, it is I, Chu Feng. I have returned to see you," Chu Feng called.

Chu Feng's voice was very loud and clear. Unfortunately, even after he waited for quite a while, there was still no response.

With that, Chu Feng decided to call out several more times, with each call being louder than the last. In fact, he even ended up using his oppressive might later on. Unfortunately, there was no reaction. Neither inside or outside the formation.

"What is this? Could it be that we're going to return empty-handed?"

"What the heck is your father doing? You've gone through all those trials and tribulations to return here, yet he's actually refusing to see you?" Seeing Chu Feng's calls going unreturned, Her Lady Queen grew anxious.

As she had just found out the truth of what had happened back then, and discovered that Chu Feng's father had deceived him, Her Lady Queen was already feeling displeased with Chu Feng's father to begin with.

And now that Chu Feng had accomplished the mission his father had tasked him with, not only did he eradicate the Infant Soul Sect of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, but he also defeated all of the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm's younger generations; even the strongest member of the Li Heavenly Clan's of the younger generation. All in order to receive the acknowledgement of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

However, after he had painstakingly finished all the missions his father had tasked him with, his father ended up refusing to see him. With this, Her Lady Queen would naturally feel very displeased.

Chapter 3092 - Nine Galaxies

"Eggy, don't worry. I think it's not that my father is not planning to see me," Chu Feng said.

"If he didn't do this to refuse to meet you, why did he do this?" Her Lady Queen asked.

"I feel that my father would not set up this formation for no reason at all. Likely... he has already left," Chu Feng said.

Chu Feng's words were not baseless claims. The reason for that was because Chu Feng knew that his father being here was not due to imprisonment. Rather, he had willingly decided to stay there to train.

As long as his father was still here, there was simply no reason for him to set up this sort of formation. For there to be such a formation set up here, the most likely explanation would be that his father had already left.

"Left?" Hearing those words, Her Lady Queen was unable to contain her emotions.

She shouted, "Then what about his promise to tell you about your mother?! Wouldn't that mean that he has broken his promise?!"

"I don't think that's the case. If my father wanted to leave, he could've left directly. There's likely a reason as to why he set up such a formation here. I think this formation is protecting something. As for that something, I believe it is what he wanted to tell me," Chu Feng said.

"In that case, this formation is to stop others, and not you? You will be able to enter it directly?"

Her Lady Queen was a very intelligent person. Earlier, she was thoughts were clouded by anger. However, after Chu Feng said those words, she reacted immediately.

"That is my guess. However, as for exactly what it is, I will have to give it a try first."

After saying those words, Chu Feng leaped forth, and began to fly toward the formation.

"Buzz~~~"

The next moment, a miracle happened. That seemingly indestructible formation was like water before Chu Feng, and he entered the formation easily.

Soon, Chu Feng passed through the formation, and entered the forbidden area.

"It actually worked. It would appear that you've guessed correctly. You were actually able to pass through the formation. In that case, even though your father has left, he must've left you something."

"Turns out you are truly father and son. You've managed to even guess this sort of thing."

At that moment, a smile finally appeared on the previously angry face of Her Lady Queen.

"Rumble~~~"

The moment Chu Feng landed, the earth started to tremble. The next moment, small bodies of light emerged from the ground. n-/O(/V(/e))l--&.-l)(n

There were so many bodies of light that they resembled meteors flying in reverse. After they appeared, they began to mix and fuse with one another.

As they fused, the bodies of light began to change. Soon, they took the form of a silhouette. That silhouette grew clearer and clearer. In the end, it turned into an image of a person.

Everything looked so very real. Even the stitches on that person's clothes were extremely vivid.

That person was Chu Feng's father, Chu Xuanyuan.

That said, even though Chu Xuanyuan looked very realistic, Chu Feng knew that the person standing before him was not his father, but rather an illusion left behind by his formation.

That said, even though it was only a formation, Chu Feng was still looking at his father's image with much emotion. Respect and longing filled his eyes. The reason for that was because the formation was filled with his father's aura.

It was as if the formation was conscious. After it appeared, it turned its eyes to Chu Feng. Gentle love and affection filled its eyes.

"Feng'er, I hope that you will forgive father for leaving without telling you."

"Actually, father just didn't want to disturb your training."

"I have already left the Ancestral Martial Starfield. Due to the distance being so far, even if I am to leave behind a portion of my soul that is connected to my consciousness, its connection to my consciousness would also be disconnected due to the distance, and the soul would dissipate into thin air too."

"Because of that, I could only leave behind this formation, which will activate when you arrive here."

"I believe you have already obtained the Chu Heavenly Clan's acknowledgement. I believe Lord Clan Chief has also told you the truth."

"It is as he said, although the decision to be imprisoned was forced upon me, it was also my own decision."

"I hope you do not blame father for not telling you the truth back then. I have made you bear hatred in your heart as you left to experience the trials and tribulations of the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm."

"Father did not tell you the truth back then because I knew that hatred allows one to become stronger. This is especially true for a child like you. Hatred will become an enormous driving force for you to become stronger."

"Perhaps this might be cruel to you. However, the world of martial cultivators is one such cruel world."

"Furthermore, there truly are people in the Chu Heavenly Clan that view us father and son as enemies. Thus, even though you know the truth now, you must not let your guard down."

"And now, I will honor my promise and tell you about your mother."

Hearing those words, Chu Feng suddenly grew tense. He became very emotional and excited.

After looking forward to it for so long, he was finally able to find out about his mother.

That said, Chu Feng was able to tell that his mother was most definitely very extraordinary.

Chu Feng still remembered the abnormal emotional response that his father had when he mentioned his mother last time.

As Chu Feng's emotions became complicated, the formation his father left continued to speak.

"Feng'er, if you wish to understand your mother, you must first understand the vast and boundless martial cultivation world."

"I've mentioned to you before that above Lower Realms are Ordinary Realms, and above Ordinary Realms are Upper Realms. Each and every world is a planetary star. A large amount of such planets forms a Starfield."

"Since you are returning from the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, I believe you must have some knowledge of these things now."

"That said, the Starfields are not the most magnificent sights in the vast martial cultivation world."

"Within this vast martial cultivation world, in the boundless starry sky, flow Nine Galaxies."

"These Nine Galaxies are scattered across the vast starry sky. Each Galaxy is composed of multiple Starfields."

"Although the Ancestral Martial Starfield is huge, and contains countless worlds, it is actually only a small section of a Galaxy."

Hearing those words, astonishment filled Chu Feng's eyes.

Chu Feng finally realized why, in the Sacred Heavenly Temple, that man called Xianhai Shuoyi would ask him which Galaxy and which Starfield he was from.

It turned out that the world of martial cultivators was actually so vast and magnificent. Its size had completely surpassed Chu Feng's imagination.

Judging from things like this, not to mention a place like the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm, even the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm would be akin to dust in the vast starry sky.

Chapter 3093 - Regarding Mother

"The Galaxy that our Ancestral Martial Starfield belongs to is called the Holy Light Galaxy."

"Actually, in the earliest days of the Holy Light Galaxy, it was known as the Ancestral Martial Galaxy. The reason why it is called the Holy Light Galaxy now is because the ruler of the Holy Light Galaxy is the Holy Light Clan."

"As the overlord of a galaxy, the Holy Light Clan has the authority to change the name of the galaxy they rule over."

Chu Feng firmly remembered the name of the Holy Light Clan.

The reason for that was because they were the overlord of a galaxy.

As there were only nine galaxies in the entire vast starry sky, it was obvious how frighteningly powerful the Holy Light Clan was to be able to become the overlord of a galaxy.

"I have mentioned to you before that your mother is not in the Ancestral Martial Starfield, but instead in another starfield. I believe you still remember that."

"That said, in actuality, the distance between your mother and you is much greater than the distance between two starfields. The distance is the distance between two galaxies."

"The galaxy that we are in is called the Holy Light Galaxy."

"As for the galaxy that your mother is in, it's called the Seven Realms Galaxy."

"Furthermore, the power that your mother belongs to is called the Seven Realms Sacred Mansion."

"Seven Realms Sacred Mansion?" Hearing those words, Chu Feng's expression changed.

Following that, Her Lady Queen's voice sounded in Chu Feng's ears, "Chu Feng, the Holy Light Clan is the overlord of the Holy Light Galaxy. The power that your mother belongs to is called the Seven Realms Sacred Mansion. Wouldn't it mean that the power your mother belongs to is the overlord of the Seven Realms Galaxy?"

"That's very possible," Chu Feng said.

Whilst Chu Feng and Her Lady Queen were discussing this, the formation that Chu Feng's father left behind was continuing with its explanation.

"Feng'er, I believe you must have some guesses in your heart after listening till this point."

"It is as you've guessed, the power that your mother belongs to is very powerful. They are so powerful that they control that entire galaxy."

"However, even among galaxies, there are differences in strength. The Seven Realms Galaxy that your mother belongs to is stronger than our Holy Light Galaxy."

“In other words, the Seven Realms Sacred Mansion that your mother belongs to is stronger than the strongest power in our Holy Light Galaxy, the Holy Light Clan.”

“I believe you must be very curious as to exactly how powerful the power that your mother belongs to is, for it to be this powerful.”

“Actually, it is related to the noble talent for world spirit techniques flowing through your body.”

“Gathered in the Seven Realms Sacred Mansion are the strongest world spiritists in the entire boundless martial world. That place is the sacred holy land of world spiritists. That is the reason why it’s called the Seven Realms Sacred Mansion.”

“The Seven Realms Sacred Mansion was established after the Ancient Era, and has continued to exist for tens of thousands of years. And now, it has become akin to a clan, and not some simple power.”

“For the sake of preserving the purest and most outstanding bloodline of world spiritists, the Seven Realms Sacred Mansion has a special rule.”

“The rule is, those from the Seven Realms Sacred Mansion are only allowed to marry others from the Seven Realms Sacred Mansion. Their bloodline is not allowed to be passed to outsiders. If one is to pass one’s bloodline to an outsider, it will be a very serious crime.”

“As for me, I am not a member of the Seven Realms Sacred Mansion. The fact that I was together with your mother and we gave birth to you meant that your mother committed a very serious crime.” n/)σ-.V.-e-.L-)B-)1-(n

“As for you and I, we have committed a capital offense.”

“Capital offense?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s expression changed enormously. His mood became slightly emotional. Anger was burning in his heart.

Chu Feng finally realized why his father would have such a reaction back then.

He also seemed to realize why his father and mother were unable to be together.

It turned out that it was because Chu Feng's father and mother were not supposed to be together. Furthermore, after being together, they committed a very serious crime.

Chu Feng finally realized why his mother did not raise him after giving birth to him, and instead sealed two world spirits into his body before leaving.

It was because she had no choice. She was forced to make that decision.

Upon thinking of the suffering his mother had to go through all those years, the anger in Chu Feng's heart burst forth uncontrollably.

In fact, surging killing intent was flowing from Chu Feng's body. Like great whips, his killing intent filled the entire forbidden area.

"Feng'er, I believe you must be surging with rage right now."

"However, I hope that you will be able to stabilize your mood and finish listening to what I will say next."

"Both you and I are wanted criminals of the Seven Realms Sacred Mansion."

"They want to kill us because I've made their Seven Realms Sacred Mansion's bloodline impure. As for you, you are what they view as their impure bloodline."

"However, both you and I are still safe. The reason for that is because the Seven Realms Sacred Mansion does not know exactly who we are yet, nor do they know where we are."

"The reason for this is because your mother decided to shoulder everything by herself."

"Your mother used to be the most outstanding individual in the Seven Realms Sacred Mansion. She had the possibility of becoming the successor to lead the Seven Realms Sacred Mansion. It is all because of this matter that she ended up becoming a criminal of the Seven Realms Sacred Mansion, and is currently being imprisoned."

"Both you and I, father and son, have the responsibility to rescue your mother."

“However, the Seven Realms Sacred Mansion is too powerful, so powerful that not even the current me possesses the certainty of being able to fight against them, much less the current you.”

“Just leave the matter of saving your mother to me, your father. After all, compared to you, as the husband of your mother, I, your father, should even more so rescue my lover with my own hands.”

“Furthermore, although your mother committed a serious crime, due to her talent, the Seven Realms Sacred Mansion will not really do anything to her. Moreover, I will definitely rescue her one day.”

“As such, you do not have to worry too much about your mother. She is very safe right now, and will one day regain her liberty.”

“Father instead wants you to perform another task.”

Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s expression changed.

A special sort of light emerged in his previously anger-filled eyes.

Chu Feng naturally wanted to save his mother very much. After all, she was his biological mother.

However, he also knew very well how small and weak he currently was.

He was simply unqualified to even speak about saving his mother, much less actually attempting to go and save her.

However, Chu Feng did not wish to do nothing. He wanted to help. Even if he was only able to help his father a bit, he still wanted to put all his effort into helping him.

And now, the opportunity to help his father seemed to have appeared.

“Feng’er, this is something very important, extremely important.”

“This is something that neither your grandfather or I managed to accomplish.”

“I hope that you will be able to accomplish what both your grandfather and I failed to accomplish,” Chu Feng’s father said.

Chapter 3094 - Old Ancestor’s Final Wish

“Ever since our Chu Heavenly Clan emerged from the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm, we have ruled over the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm for many years now.”

“To the people of the Lower and Ordinary Realms, our Chu Heavenly Clan has managed to make enormous accomplishments.”

“However, our clan should not be stuck where it currently stands. We should not only be reaping the benefits of our Old Ancestor’s accomplishments, and be satisfied with only guarding the world our Old Ancestor conquered.”

“That is not what our Old Ancestor desired. Our Old Ancestor desired for our Chu Heavenly Clan to become the overlord of the Ancestral Martial Starfield.”

“Our Old Ancestor desired for the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield to be at peace, to flourish and become stronger.”

“His desire was most definitely not endless internal unrest, and to be viewed as meat by others, and be humiliated by others.”

“Our Old Ancestor wished that in the future, anyone from the Ancestral Martial Starfield, regardless of whether they were from Ordinary Realms or even Lower Realms, would be respected by others the moment they mentioned that they were from the Ancestral Martial Starfield.”

“Unfortunately, something like that is very difficult to accomplish. Not even our Old Ancestor managed to accomplish it. Because of that, it became our Old Ancestor’s final wish.”

“I have tried to realize our Old Ancestor’s final wish. Your grandfather also tried to realize it. However, our greatest obstruction presently is not our cultivations, but rather the Starfield Master Realm.”

“The Starfield Master Realm is extremely incompetent and feeble against outsiders. They have been humiliated by the surrounding starfields on many occasions, and never once did they dare to fight back.”

“It is their incompetence that caused our Ancestral Martial Starfield to hold an extremely low status in the entire Holy Light Galaxy, and become the object of ridicule for other starfields.”

“However, whilst the Starfield Master Realm is extremely incompetent and cowardly toward others, they are extremely domineering against the people of the Ancestral Martial Starfield.”

“They have refused to allow anyone or any power to threaten their status. If anyone should threaten their status, they will immediately suppress them, and will even go as far as to massacre their entire clan.”

“Tragedies of powerful clans being completely massacred in a single night have happened multiple times in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.”

“All the intelligent people know that the culprit behind those massacres was the ruler of the Ancestral Martial Starfield, the Starfield Master Realm.”

“Truth be told, back then, the Starfield Master Realm sent assassins to your grandfather in an attempt to kill him. Although he survived, he was seriously injured, and forced to leave the Ancestral Martial Starfield.”

“Snap~~~”

After hearing those words, Chu Feng clenched his fists tightly. Chu Feng’s killing intent, which had already filled the entire palace, grew even more intense. *no ve-lb/1n*

He had only known that the Starfield Master Realm had tried to suppress his grandfather and father. He had never thought that they had actually attempted to assassinate his grandfather.

At that moment, Chu Feng began to suspect whether his grandfather’s disappearance had anything to do with the Starfield Master Realm. He began to worry that his grandfather had been killed by the Starfield Master Realm.

“It was not only your grandfather. I too sensed the ill-intentions from the Starfield Master Realm, and ended up having no choice but to leave. During the days that I was gone, the Chu Heavenly Clan was secretly monitored by the Starfield Master Realm the entire time.”

“The Chu Heavenly Clan at that time was akin to hostages. They were firmly in the grasp of the Starfield Master Realm.”

“They were afraid that I would threaten them on my return. Because of that, they planned to use the entire Chu Heavenly Clan to threaten me.”

“If I dared to make any moves that might threaten them upon my return, if I dared to do anything that exceeded their control, they would immediately massacre the entire Chu Heavenly Clan.”

“Because of that, after I returned to the Ancestral Martial Starfield with you, I deliberately sought out a chance to fight them, and deliberately lost to them.”

“It was only because I was defeated by them that they lowered their guard. As for what happened afterwards, I believe you already know about it.”

“That said, Feng’er, there is one thing that you must know. I did not humiliate myself to have the Starfield Master Realm lower their guard against and remove the monitor over our Chu Heavenly Clan because I feared them.”

“I, your father, have never feared a single opponent in my entire life.”

“However, I want to save your mother.”

“Because of that, I cannot wage war against the Starfield Master Realm. At the very least, I cannot do so at this time. Otherwise, if this matter is to spread and catch the attention of the Seven Realms Sacred Mansion, it might end up exposing our identities.”

“As for now, I have something even more important that I must do. As such, I hope that you, my son, I hope that you, Feng’er, will be able to accomplish our Old Ancestor’s final wish.”

“However, you must remember this. Defeating the Starfield Master Realm and having our Chu Heavenly Clan rule over the Ancestral Martial Starfield is definitely not for ambition. Nor is it for the status of our Chu Heavenly Clan. More than anything, it is for the sake of the people of our Ancestral Martial Starfield. That was the desire of our Old Ancestor.”

“Feng’er, father knew that you initially tried so hard at martial cultivation for the sake of proving yourself. Later on, you tried so hard for the sake of protecting your family and friends.”

“However, the aspirations of a martial cultivator should not end with only these. With great power comes great responsibility; the greater the power you possess, the more you should use that power to do right.”

“The Starfield Master Realm is already filled with chaos. Not to mention guarding the Ancestral Martial Starfield and keeping order in the Ancestral Martial Starfield, the people of the Starfield Master Realm are secretly doing shameful things in the dark. Everything is for their own self-interest now. They do not care about the lives and deaths of others, and would even go so far as to bring harm upon the people living in the Ancestral Martial Starfield.”

“If they are allowed to continue to rule over the Ancestral Martial Starfield, the Ancestral Martial Starfield will one day be ruined by their hands. As such, it is time to replace them.”

“That said, that path is a very difficult one. The Starfield Master Realm will not allow others to threaten their status. When you expose your edge, you will become a thorn in their side.”

“As such, the path to overthrow them could be said to be filled with dangers. You will be traveling alongside the grim reaper. Feng’er, are you willing to walk this path?”

“Are you willing to fulfill the final wish of our Chu Heavenly Clan’s Old Ancestor that both your father and grandfather failed to fulfill?” Chu Xuanyuan asked Chu Feng.

“Father, I am willing. I will definitely do this. I will definitely overthrow the Starfield Master Realm. For you, for grandfather, for Old Ancestor, for the people of our Chu Heavenly Clan, and for the the people of our Ancestral Martial Starfield, I am willing.”

Chu Feng’s voice was very powerful and resounding. One could tell how determined Chu Feng was from his voice.

Chu Feng was most definitely not saying those words for the sake of saying them. He was really prepared to bring trouble to the Starfield Master Realm.

Actually, Chu Feng had already made this decision before returning to see his father.

Chu Feng would absolutely not allow a power that tried to assassinate his grandfather and forced both his father and grandfather out of the Ancestral Martial Starfield to continue their tyrannical rule over the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

Moreover, Chu Feng felt what his father said to be very true.

Apart from preserving their own status, the Starfield Master Realm simply did not care about the lives and deaths of other Upper Realms anymore. Otherwise, why would the opening of Upper Realm Gates in the Ancestral Martial Starfield signify certain war?

As the overlord of the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield, they refused to do what they should to maintain peace. A power like that should be overthrown.

Even if not for himself, Chu Feng would still do this for the sake of the people of the entire Ancestral Martial Starfield.

Right at that moment, Chu Feng's father suddenly smiled.

"Actually, I am unable to hear your response. After all, this is only a formation, and not actually me."

"However, I know that my Feng'er will definitely not disappoint me. After all, you are my son."

Chu Xuanyuan spoke with a smile on his face. His eyes were filled with high hopes.

Seeing such an expression in Chu Xuanyuan's eyes, Chu Feng felt as if his father were truly looking at him.

Thus, he vowed in his heart that he would definitely fulfill the final wishes of their Old Ancestor. Even if he had to go through water and walk through fire, he was still ready to bear all those dangers to accomplish it.

After all, this was not only their Old Ancestor's final wish, it was also his grandfather's wish and his father's wish.

And now, it had also become Chu Feng's wish.

Chapter 3095 - Returning To The Nine Provinces

"Feng'er, I know that, apart from your mother, you also want to know about how Zi Ling is doing."

"Zi Ling did not leave with me. She is currently training elsewhere."

"As for where that is, it's actually not important. You merely need to know that she will find you after she finishes her training."

"Zi Ling is a good lady. While the effort you've put into cultivating is to protect your family, she is doing so purely to help you."

"Thus, boy, you must treat her well."

"This is all that I want to tell you."

"Apart from these words, I did not leave anything else for you. I hope that you will be able to obtain what you want with your own strength."

"As for this forbidden area, it does possess the power to awaken the bloodline powers of our Chu Heavenly Clansmen."

"Merely, the current you has yet to reach the level to awaken your bloodline. Thus, this place still does not belong to you. When you reach a sufficient level of strength and return here again, I believe you will be able to comprehend the power here. At that time, you will attain a complete transformation."

"Before that, you will still have to put forth great effort in training. No matter how dangerous the path ahead is, you must still not give up."

"You must remember that as long as you persevere, there will definitely be hope. However, if you give up, everything will be for nothing."

"Although I cannot be by your side watching you grow, I will be waiting for you in the Outer World together with your grandfather. We will wait for you to emerge in power. At that time, our family will reunite."

As Chu Xuanyuan said those words to Chu Feng, there was a smile of anticipation in his eyes. At that moment, his image started to become indistinct. Soon, he completely disappeared before Chu Feng.

"Grandfather?"

As for Chu Feng, he was stunned. Although his father's image had disappeared and he was feeling slightly sad, when he heard his grandfather being mentioned, a joyous emotion emerged from his heart.

Chu Feng's grandfather had disappeared for many years. It was unknown if he was alive or dead. However, judging from Chu Xuanyuan's tone, it seemed

that he was certain that Chu Feng's grandfather didn't die. Naturally, this would make Chu Feng feel happy.

If he was able to meet his almighty grandfather, it would also be something that Chu Feng would look forward to.

As such, Chu Xuanyuan telling Chu Feng that their family would reunite again in the Outer World after Chu Feng emerged in power became an enormous motivation for Chu Feng.

Family reunion, that was something that Chu Feng looked forward to the most.

"Chu Feng, your father couldn't have possibly really left nothing for you, right?"

Compared to Chu Feng, Her Lady Queen was more concerned that Chu Feng's father really hadn't left anything for Chu Feng.

Faced with Her Lady Queen's question, Chu Feng smiled gently. He said, "Father said he didn't leave anything. As such, he must not have left anything."

"That father of yours is truly ruthless," Her Lady Queen said in a slightly discontented manner.

"I feel what my father said to be very true. As a man, I naturally should obtain what I want with my own power. How could I depend on my parents?"

"Come, Milady Queen, let's go. Although I am unable to count on my father, I will still have to count on you to help me," Chu Feng said with a beaming smile.

"Humph, that's only natural. Hasn't this Queen helped you the entire time?" Her Lady Queen spoke haughtily.

Then, she said, "Come, let's go. I know that you're impatient to see your group of friends. Since that heartless father of yours didn't leave anything for you, let's leave this place."

Hearing those words, Chu Feng smiled lightly. What Her Lady Queen said was exactly what he was thinking.

Chu Feng was naturally impatient to see his friends.

Afterwards, Chu Feng left the forbidden area.

And now, the formation around the Heavenly Road was simply unable to obstruct Chu Feng. Chu Feng passed through the Heavenly Road's barrier effortlessly, and arrived at the Eastern Sea Region.

Upon walking out of the formation gate, Chu Feng arrived at a vast and boundless sea.

Giant waves were surging forth as the sea breeze whistled past.

The sound of the sea waves and the wind were mixing together. Rising and falling, they continued to resonate.

Chu Feng stood in the air and looked at the azure sea. He was overwhelmed by emotions, and feeling extremely excited.

Having traveled to many places, Chu Feng had seen many seas like the one before him.

Seas like this one were present all over the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. There were even lakes that were larger than the sea of the Eastern Sea Region.

To be deemed a sea in a place like the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm, those bodies of water were truly boundlessly vast. They were simply not something the Eastern Sea Region could compare to.

However, only the Eastern Sea Region was capable of providing Chu Feng that sort of feeling, the feeling of familiarity, the feeling of closeness.

After all, the Eastern Sea Region was the place where Chu Feng had fought before. Chu Feng simply had too many memories of the Eastern Sea Region. As such, the Eastern Sea Region had extraordinary significance to Chu Feng.

Arriving in the Eastern Sea Region, the place where Chu Feng should go first would be the Misty Peak. After all, the Misty Peak was closest to that sea..

However, Chu Feng did not proceed toward the Misty Peak. Instead, he started flying toward the Nine Provinces Continent. *no ve-ℓb/1n*

It was difficult for Chu Feng to be able to return. Although he would be able to return frequently in the future, he currently had an important mission he had to accomplish. As such, how could he return frequently to see his friends?

As such, Chu Feng wanted to do one thing. He wanted to walk the path that he had grown up on again.

Thus, the first place he went would naturally be the Nine Provinces Continent's Azure Province.

Upon returning to that familiar land, Chu Feng first arrived at the Chu Family's former residence.

Chapter 3096 - Entering The Azure Dragon School

The Chu Family's former residence was still present. Even though it had been destroyed before, it had been restored.

Chu Feng did not enter the Chu Family residence. Instead, he was standing in the sky and looking down at it.

As he looked at those familiar buildings, vivid images of the past appeared in his mind.

During those years, in Chu Feng's youth, he had been looked on with disdain and pushed aside by others because he was an outsider. However, as Chu Feng continued to put forth effort, increased his cultivation and brought honor and protection to the Chu Family, Chu Feng was finally acknowledged by the people of the Chu Family.

Those people that he had disputes with in the past had also become his true relatives. *nove.1b*-In

Recalling those memories of the past, a special sort of emotion bubbled forth in Chu Feng's heart.

It was a time that was gone forever. It was a past that belonged to him. Compared to the youthful and inexperienced him, Chu Feng had grown into a much stronger man.

Back when he was bullied and humiliated, Chu Feng had hatred in his heart. However, he now no longer had any hatred or blame toward those people of the Chu Family that had once targeted him.

It was precisely those tribulations that had promoted his growth.

Standing in the sky, Chu Feng was still reminiscing over the past. He did not descend to the ground during that time.

Although there were still people in the Chu Family's former residence, they were only people watching over that place.

The familiar faces, those people that were not related to Chu Feng by blood, but were held firmly as relatives, were not present there.

Chu Feng knew that his family was no longer there. Even if the people of the Chu Family wanted to stay there, his friends would not allow them to stay there for the sake of their safety.

As such, Chu Feng only stopped by the Chu Family's former residence for a very short period of time. After a bit of observation, Chu Feng headed toward the Azure Dragon School.

The Azure Dragon School was as beautiful as always. Its sceneries were very pleasant. It was like an immortal mountain. One could tell from a single glance that it was a place where martial cultivators gathered.

There was practically no change to the Azure Dragon School at all. If one had to find a change, then it would be that the Azure Dragon School had become much more prosperous.

After all, the Azure Dragon School was no longer a second-rate sect of the Azure Province. Instead, it had become the strongest sect in the entire Nine Provinces Continent.

That said, the Azure Dragon School at that moment was still especially lively.

Endless streams of horses and carriages were at the foot of the mountain. It was completely packed with people.

There were adults climbing up the mountain with their children. They were proceeding toward the entrance of the Azure Dragon School.

“What excitement. Could it be that it’s the time when the Azure Dragon School accepts new disciples?” Her Lady Queen asked.

“That must be the case,” Chu Feng had a smile on his face.

Originally, Chu Feng was planning to fly directly to the entrance. However, he suddenly changed his mind, and descended to the ground. He began to climb the mountain with the crowd. Slowly, he began to approach the entrance.

“Big brother Chu Feng.”

Upon reaching the entrance, a voice was suddenly heard. Someone actually called out Chu Feng’s name.

That was a disciple from the Azure Dragon School.

Chu Feng knew right away from the outfit that this disciple was wearing that he was an inner court disciple.

Furthermore, judging from his appearance, he should be a couple years younger than Chu Feng. That said, Chu Feng was certain that he did not know this person.

“Big brother Chu Feng, it really is you! Heavens! You’ve finally returned!”

After verifying that it was Chu Feng, that inner court disciple quickly walked over to Chu Feng. He had an extremely excited expression on his face.

“Chu Feng? He seemed to be saying that that person is Chu Feng?”

“Heavens, he really does look like him. He couldn’t possibly really be Lord Chu Feng, right?”

Originally, Chu Feng did not draw any attention whilst traveling with the crowd. However, after that inner court disciple called out to him, he immediately caught the attention of the surrounding crowd.

At that moment, the people that were climbing the mountain all stopped and surrounded him. They were staring at him as if they were surveying a rare animal.

That said, their gazes were not only those of curiosity. They were also filled with reverence.

After all, Chu Feng's name was already renowned throughout the entire Nine Provinces Continent.

In fact, Chu Feng could even be said to be the most legendary individual to have ever appeared in the Nine Provinces Continent after Qing Xuantian.

Seeing someone as legendary as Chu Feng, the crowd were, apart from feeling excited, wondering whether what they were seeing was real.

They began to doubt if they were truly so fortunate to be able to see the legendary Chu Feng.

That said, Chu Feng did not pay attention to the crowd's pleasantly surprised yet skeptical gazes.

Chu Feng had grown used to that sort of gaze. Thus, he was only looking at the man before him.

"Big brother Chu Feng, you must've forgotten about me, no?" That inner court disciple asked Chu Feng.

"You are?" Chu Feng tried to remember the people he had met. However, he truly did not recall this man.

"Actually, it's very normal for you to not remember me. After all, we only met once," that inner court disciple smiled embarrassedly.

He then said, "Back then, I had just reached the age to become a disciple. My mother brought me to the Azure Dragon School in hopes of me being able to enter."

"At that time, it was big brother Chu Feng who received us. Furthermore, as the entrance was closed, my mother even had a disagreement with big brother Chu Feng."

"Oh, I remember now," hearing those words, Chu Feng came to a sudden realization, and remembered who the young man was.

At that time, Chu Feng was still an outer court disciple of the Azure Dragon School. Every day, he was only allowed to do odd jobs.

Every time the Azure Dragon School accepted new disciples, Chu Feng would have to go to the entrance and receive the people that wanted to join the Azure Dragon School.

On that day, Chu Feng had received a married woman. She was dissatisfied with the Azure Dragon School's entrance being closed, and started to make things difficult for Chu Feng because of that. At that time, it was all thanks to Chu Yue that Chu Feng was able to escape that difficult situation.

Chu Feng would never forget what happened that day. The reason for that was because that day could be said to have been a true turning point for Chu Feng.

It was that day that Chu Feng managed to, using the Saint Spirit Grass given to him by Chu Yue, make a breakthrough past the predicament that he had failed to break through for a long time.

Even though Chu Feng had been putting forth great effort to train, and had accumulated a lot of power before that, that Saint Spirit Grass was Chu Feng's critical junction.

Because of that, Chu Feng firmly remembered what had happened that day.

Likely, that inner court disciple was the little boy that married woman had brought with her that day.

Looking at him now, that little boy from back then had grown into an adult now. However, Chu Feng was still able to see the image of that boy from the man.

"So you were him. Never would I have expected that you'd end up becoming a disciple of the Azure Dragon School," after finding out who the man was, Chu Feng felt a sense of familiarity from him.

"Big brother Chu Feng, it is me. Although I missed the opportunity to join the Azure Dragon School that year, I still ended up joining the Azure Dragon School later on. After I joined, I grew up hearing about big brother Chu Feng's achievements. Unfortunately, as my status was low, I had not been able to see big brother Chu Feng again."

"That said, that one encounter from back then left a deep impression on me. It was due to what happened back then that I started coming here to help every

year when the Azure Dragon School accepts new disciples. Never would I have imagined that I'd be able to see big brother Chu Feng again this year."

"I am truly too fortunate. If I am to mention this to my senior and junior brothers, they will definitely envy me to death."

That inner court disciple became extremely excited upon being recognized by Chu Feng.

Chapter 3097 - The Girl On The Misty Peak

After Chu Feng and that inner court disciple chatted for some time, Chu Feng entered the Azure Dragon School. However, after entering the Azure Dragon School, Chu Feng did not stay for long.

The reason for that was because he received news that Chu Guyu, Chu Yue and the others from the Chu Family, as well as Azure Dragon Founder Li Zhangqing, Zhuge Liuyun, the Monstrous Monkey King and all the other familiar seniors of Chu Feng were not in the Azure Dragon School.

Reportedly, they had already left for the Holy Land of Martialism. Furthermore, they had been gone for some time now. They had left in order to enhance their pursuit of martial cultivation. That said, as to exactly how they would increase their cultivation, the people of the Azure Dragon School that remained had no idea.

Since all the people that Chu Feng knew were not in the Azure Dragon School, there was naturally no reason for Chu Feng to stay in the Azure Dragon School for long.

After all, Chu Feng had only returned to the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm for the sake of seeing his old friends.

Thus, Chu Feng once again returned to the Eastern Sea Region. That said, Chu Feng still did not proceed directly for the Misty Peak.

Instead, he arrived over a crimson sea. That sea had a very impressive name. It was called the Everlasting Sea of Blood.

The reason why Chu Feng went there was because there was an unforgettable memory for Chu Feng in that place.

Back then, Chu Feng encountered a little girl in that Everlasting Sea of Blood. That little girl was called Little Fishy.

That Little Fishy possessed an unknown origin. However, she was extremely extraordinary. Even though she was clearly only a child, she went through trials and tribulations together with Chu Feng.

Because of that, Chu Feng ended up having an extraordinary friendship with that little girl, who was much younger than himself.

Later on, Little Fishy left. Furthermore, she personally said to Chu Feng that she would not return.

Chu Feng had thought that Little Fishy might be related to the enormous hand that ripped apart the sky. Perhaps Little Fishy did not belong in that place to begin with. Likely, Little Fishy was someone from the Outer World.

Even though they'd only known one another for a short period of time, Chu Feng would like to see that little girl again, if possible.

Likely, the little girl from back then must've matured into a little beauty at present.

"I truly never imagined that little girl to have this much weight in your heart," Her Lady Queen said to Chu Feng.

The reason for that was because Chu Feng had been quiet the entire time ever since he arrived at that place. Although Her Lady Queen was unable to see the expression Chu Feng had at that moment, she was able to share his sight and hearing.

Chu Feng was looking at all the places that Little Fishy had been to.

Her Lady Queen was able to feel how much Chu Feng missed Little Fishy.

"That girl was like a younger sister to me. It's only natural for me to miss her after not seeing her for many years," Chu Feng did not attempt to hide it, and told the truth. n--OVe1b1n

That's right, she was a younger sister. To Chu Feng, Little Fishy was like his own younger sister.

“What use is there in remembering? Who knows where that little girl is now,” Her Lady Queen said.

“Eh, am I mishearing things? Milady Queen, the tone that you spoke with, you couldn’t possibly be jealous, right?” Chu Feng said with a mischievous smile on his face.

“Jealous? Pah! You’re truly overthinking things.”

“When has this Queen ever been jealous of anyone? Moreover, this Queen is quite fond of that little girl. Did you think that you’re the only one that missed her? This Queen also misses her greatly,” Her Lady Queen curled her lips and refuted Chu Feng.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng felt his heart turn very cold.

Indeed, when had Her Lady Queen ever been jealous because of him?

Her Lady Queen had accompanied Chu Feng the entire time. Yet, during their entire journey, never had she ever been jealous of any girl. In fact, if she were to encounter a beautiful girl or a girl that she was fond of, she would immediately act the matchmaker and urge Chu Feng to pursue said girl.

Thinking of that, Chu Feng sighed. Then, his body shifted, and he left the Everlasting Sea of Blood.

The Everlasting Sea of Blood was still the same Everlasting Sea of Blood. However, Little Fishy was no longer present. All that remained were memories. Although Chu Feng was reminiscing on the past, he could not stay there for long.

Finally, Chu Feng arrived at the Misty Peak.

As Chu Feng saw the Misty Peak floating in the distance, that place that looked like a land of immortals, Chu Feng’s heart was filled with emotions.

Chu Feng suddenly recalled the time when he first arrived at the Misty Peak. Back then, he was completely stunned by the spectacular sight of the Misty Peak.

He also remembered the battle of the Misty Peak.

That was the battle between the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Misty Peak. It was also the battle between Chu Feng and Jiang Qisha.

Remembering it now, that battle seemed as if it had happened yesterday. However, Chu Feng was no longer the same Chu Feng as he was back then.

Everything in the Misty Peak resembled the way it did in the past.

There were many people staring at the Misty Peak from the sidelines. It was as if it had become a scenic spot.

However, those people were actually quite far away from the Misty Peak. Likely, they were afraid of being driven out by the people of the Misty Peak should they grow closer to it.

Like before, the Misty Peak was still protected by a powerful formation. It was not an easy task to enter it.

However, the formation was something that was effective only against the people of the Eastern Sea Region. To the current Chu Feng, the seemingly powerful defensive formation was akin to mist; it was simply incapable of stopping him.

With a shift of his body, Chu Feng passed through the defensive formation and entered the Misty Peak.

After entering the Misty Peak, Chu Feng was suddenly stunned.

The reason for that was because he was surprised to discover that there was a girl standing on the other side of the defensive formation.

That girl could not be said to be extremely beautiful. However, her skin was snow-white, and she appeared to be very intelligent.

Paired with her long green skirt, she resembled a little celestial fairy.

At that moment, the girl just so happened to discover Chu Feng too. The two of them were looking at one another.

Suddenly, the girl shouted, "Impudent! You dare transpass upon our Misty Peak! You are courting death!"

She began to form hand seals, and then pointed her finger at Chu Feng. The surrounding space immediately started to fluctuate strangely. Martial power was gathering.

“Rank nine Martial Lord?”

Chu Feng managed to determine with a single glance that the girl possessed a cultivation of rank nine Martial Lord.

Not to mention the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm, even in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm, a cultivation of rank nine Martial Lord was extremely weak.

However, in a place like the Eastern Sea Region, to be able to attain the cultivation of rank nine Martial Lord at that girl’s age, she would be considered a genius. A very powerful genius.

Chapter 3098 - Seeing Old Friends

“Woosh, woosh, woosh~~~”

At that moment, the martial power that surrounded the girl had turned into countless swords under her control, and began to fly toward Chu Feng.

After successfully unleashing her attack, the girl revealed a smile on her face.

As a stranger had suddenly intruded upon the Misty Peak, that girl did not conceal her strength, and unleashed her strongest attack from the very start.

She felt that since the distance between her and Chu Feng was so close, Chu Feng would not even be able to dodge her attack should she be able to successfully unleash it. As such, he would undoubtedly be killed.

“Buzz~~~”

However, at the moment when those swords were about to strike Chu Feng, they suddenly froze in midair.

“This is?”

Seeing that, the smile on that girl’s face immediately disappeared. Shock and unease immediately appeared in her quick-witted eyes.

She was unable to understand how her fatal attack would suddenly freeze in midair, and not listen to her command.

“To have such a murderous heart at such a young age is not a good thing.”

Chu Feng smiled lightly. Then, he gently flicked his finger. The next moment, the countless swords that had frozen before him instantly shattered.

“ ... ”

At that moment, that young girl’s expression changed enormously. She finally realized why her attack had frozen.

All of it was caused by the man before her.

As he possessed such power, he was most definitely not someone that she could handle.

Thus, without uttering a word, the girl immediately turned around and began to rapidly fly toward the main palace of the Misty Peak.

There were six people in the Misty Peak’s main palace.

Amongst those six was a relatively old lady. She was the previous master of the Misty Peak, Lady Piaomiao.

As for the most beautiful-looking woman among the group, she was Lady Piaomiao’s daughter, the current master of the Misty Peak, Qiushui Fuyan. n--
0**relb**1n

As for the other four people, although their looks were inferior to Qiushui Fuyan, they too were beauties.

The four of them were Lady Piaomiao’s four personal disciples, Chun Wu, Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu and Dong Xue.

“This is bad! This is bad!”

Suddenly, a series of frantic shouts was heard. Following that, the entrance to the palace that was closed was kicked open.

It was that girl, she had run in and kicked the door open.

Seeing the girl, Qiushui Fuyan frowned and shouted at her, “Ming Ye, what are you doing?!”

“Weren’t you informed that you are not to disturb us while we’re having a meeting?!”

“Lady Master, this disciple didn’t plan to disturb you all. However, someone has intruded upon our Misty Peak.”

The girl by the name of Ming Ye hurriedly kneeled on the ground and spoke with grievance on her face.

“What did you say? Someone has intruded upon our Misty Peak?”

Hearing those words, Qiushui Fuyan and the other five people all had a huge change in expression.

“He’s already inside!” That girl called Ming Ye said.

“Already inside?” Hearing those words, their expressions grew even uglier.

To be able to directly break through the formation and enter the Misty Peak, that person was most definitely not a nobody.

One must know that after the Blood Qilin that suddenly appeared was defeated by Chu Feng, there had never been another power that was capable of contending against the Misty Peak in the Eastern Sea Region.

Furthermore, no one dared to offend the Misty Peak.

Yet now, not only did someone intrude upon their Misty Peak’s territory, but that person even managed to breach the defensive formation. This could only mean one thing: an enemy with ill-intentions had arrived.

“Show the way,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“Big sister Fuyan, there’s no need for that.”

However, right when Qiushui Fuyan was planning to go out, a voice was suddenly heard.

At the same time as that voice was heard, a figure appeared in the palace hall.

Seeing this person, Qiushui Fuyan and the others were all stunned. However, immediately afterward, overwhelming joy appeared on their faces.

They were smiling so joyously that they were simply even happier than when they managed to make a breakthrough in cultivation.

The reason for that was because that person was none other than Chu Feng.

“Impudent! You’ve intruded upon our Misty Peak and dared to even enter our main palace! Watch as I kill you!”

The girl by the name of Ming Ye did not notice the overjoyed expressions on Qiushui Fuyan and the others’ faces. Instead, she immediately took out her weapon the moment she saw Chu Feng and was planning to attack him.

Seeing this, Qiushui Fuyan shouted, “Ming Ye, stop!”

Then, she arrived before Ming ye and forcibly took away the weapon in her hand.

Then, she shouted, “Ming Ye, do not be rude! Don’t you know who he is?!”

“Master, he... who is he?” Ming Ye asked.

“Ming Ye, he is your idol, Chu Feng,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“Master, are you serious?! He’s really Chu Feng?!” Hearing those words, Ming Ye became extremely excited.

“Why would master lie to you?” Qiushui Fuyan said with a smile.

“Lord Chu Feng, this lowly one is Ming Ye. I have admired you for three days already. Please accept my respect,” suddenly, that Ming Ye half knelt on the ground and began to bow to Chu Feng.

At this moment, Chu Feng was bewildered. He had no idea when he got such an admirer. Furthermore, what was the business with the ‘three days?’

Soon enough, after chatting, Chu Feng discovered that Ming Ye was born in a remote location. She was someone that Qiushui Fuyan had discovered whilst traveling the four seas to search of an outstanding successor.

There was no need to doubt how talented that Ming Ye was. At such a young age, she was already a rank nine Martial Lord. One must know that even Qiushui Fuyan was only a Martial King.

However, it was also precisely because Qiushui Fuyan discovered Ming Ye in a remote location that Ming Ye did not know much about the Eastern Sea Region. As such, she had Qiushui Fuyan tell her things about the Eastern Sea Region the entire time.

When Ming Ye came to find out about Chu Feng's achievements, she started feeling endless admiration for Chu Feng, and declared him to be her idol. She declared that she would learn from Chu Feng and follow his example.

That said, it had only been three days since she declared Chu Feng to be her idol. That was the reason why she said that she had admired Chu Feng for three days.

Chapter 3099 - Strange Volcano

Lady Piao, Qiushui Fuyan, Chun Wu and the others were all overjoyed by Chu Feng's return.

They stopped all their business and began to wholeheartedly accompany Chu Feng.

As they chatted, they began to ask Chu Feng about what sort of place the Outer World was.

Chu Feng was able to tell how much they missed him. This was especially true for Lady Piaomiao. Perhaps because she was growing older, she was missing the people close to her even more now. Even though she did not say anything, Chu Feng was able to tell that she wanted him to stay longer.

As such, Chu Feng decided to stay in the Misty Peak for a few days.

Whilst staying in the Misty Peak, Chu Feng learned that a sacred cultivation ground had been discovered in the Holy Land of Martialism.

One's cultivation would be able to increase rapidly while training in that sacred cultivation ground.

With aid from Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang, many experts from the Eastern Sea Region and the Nine Provinces Continent all left for the Holy Land of Martialism.

Huangfu Haoyue, Qiu Canfeng and the others also left for the Holy Land of Martialism.

If it wasn't for the fact that Qiushui Fuyan had a duty to guard the Misty Peak, as she was the master of the Misty Peak, she too would have left for the Holy Land of Martialism.

Alas, all good things must come to an end. Although they were very reluctant to have Chu Feng leave, they knew that Chu Feng no longer belonged to their world.

Thus, on Chu Feng's third day in the Misty Peak, Lady Piaomiao started urging Chu Feng to leave.

Chu Feng was able to sense Lady Piaomiao's kind intentions. Thus, he did not decline, and bid his farewells before leaving the Misty Peak to proceed for the Eastern Sea Region.

Chu Feng's speed this time around was extremely fast. He had practically unleashed his full speed.

Chu Feng was proceeding toward the Holy Land of Martialism with his fastest speed.

"Chu Feng, are you worrying about something?" Seeing Chu Feng being so urgent, Her Lady Queen sensed that something was amiss.

"Indeed, I am a bit worried. Why would a so-called sacred cultivation ground suddenly appear in the Holy Land of Martialism?"

"Eggy, you should know this too, dangers will generally accompany opportunities."

"Although I do not know exactly what sort of place that so-called sacred cultivation ground is, I keep feeling that it is not so simple," Chu Feng said.

“That’s actually what this Queen was thinking too. That said, you still do not have to rush like this. Even if something is amiss, there shouldn’t be a major accident. At the very least, nothing should be happening yet.”

“Otherwise, they wouldn’t have been training in there for so long,” Her Lady Queen urged.

“Mn, I hope I am overthinking things,” Chu Feng said.

Although Chu Feng had left, Lady Piaomiao and the others were standing in the sky outside the Misty Peak and watching the direction that Chu Feng left in, reluctant to move their gazes.

After a long while passed, Chun Wu said to Lady Piaomiao, “Master, what do you think Chu Feng’s current cultivation is?”

Although they had talked about a lot of things during those three days, and learned a lot about the Outer World from Chu Feng, including levels of cultivation that they did not know about, as well as the situation outside, they had never asked Chu Feng about his cultivation.

“The speed at which Chu Feng’s cultivation increases has always been extremely fast. Likely, he must’ve already surpassed the Martial Ancestor level by now,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Surpassed Martial Ancestor?” Hearing those words, Ming Ye was very shocked.

To her, Martial Emperor was already a cultivation realm far beyond her reach. As for Martial Ancestor, it was likely a level of cultivation that she would not be able to attain in her entire life.

As for Chu Feng, if he had surpassed Martial Ancestor, wouldn’t that mean that he had reached the Immortal realms?

That would mean that Chu Feng had become an actual Immortal, someone truly surpassing ordinary human beings.

Even though this was very shocking, it was only Ming Ye who had a surprised expression.

Qiushi Fuyan and the Four Seasons sisters did not question Lady Piaomiao's answer at all.

Furthermore, at the same time, all of them turned their gazes around.

At that moment, there was a new formation surrounding the Misty Peak. That formation was invisible to the naked eye. However, they were able to sense that the new formation was terrifyingly powerful.

That defensive formation was a gift from Chu Feng before he left.

Only they knew that, even though that defensive formation was very powerful, Chu Feng had spent no effort in setting it up.

However, they firmly believed that the defensive formation that Chu Feng had effortlessly set up had turned their Misty Peak into the safest place in the entire Ancestral Martial Lower Realm.

That was also the reason why they were suddenly concerned about what cultivation Chu Feng currently possessed.

That youth from the past had grown further and further from them, leaving them far behind. The disparity between them was truly as vast as the distance between the heaven and earth.

That said, they were not dispirited because of this. On the contrary, they were feeling very happy.

The reason for that was because they were all proud of Chu Feng.

.....

Chu Feng passed through the Heavenly Road and arrived in the Holy Land of Martialism.

Chu Feng had originally planned to proceed to the Southern Cyanwood Forest and then the Cyanwood Mountain after arriving in the Holy Land of Martialism.

However, Chu Feng was most worried about the matter with the sacred cultivation ground at that moment. As such, he decided to alter his plan at the last minute to proceed directly for that so-called sacred cultivation ground.

One must know that practically all of the close relatives and friends that Chu Feng cared about were there. If something were to truly happen in the sacred cultivation ground, it would mean that all of the people that Chu Feng cared about in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm would be in danger.

After traveling for some time, Chu Feng finally saw that so-called sacred cultivation ground.

It was a volcano, an enormous, unimaginably large volcano.

Gaseous flames were erupting out from the volcano. Those gaseous flames contained dense amounts of natural energies, and even martial comprehension.

At that moment, there were tens of millions of people gathered in the sky above the volcano. It was truly a sea of people.

Those people were all sitting in the sky in a cross-legged manner. With their eyes closed, they were using their various techniques to breathe in and absorb the gaseous flames emitted by the erupting volcano.

At a glance, Chu Feng saw some familiar faces amongst the vast crowd.

There were countless palaces outside the volcano's vicinity. Those palaces were all from different powers. The palaces were gathered and divided in an orderly manner.

Practically all the major powers of the Holy Land of Martialism were gathered there.

A scene like this was truly quite spectacular.

Merely, at that moment, Chu Feng was frowning.

Chu Feng knew very well that there was no such volcano in the Holy Land of Martialism when he was still there.

That volcano had most definitely appeared after he left.

Most importantly, Chu Feng sensed wickedness from the gaseous flames emitted by the volcano.

This meant that Chu Feng's worries were not unnecessary.

That sacred cultivation ground that suddenly appeared contained unknown dangers.

Chapter 3100 - Xian Miaomiao Left

“Father, master, seniors, brothers and sisters, it’s been a long time. How has everyone been doing?”

Suddenly, Chu Feng’s voice sounded. His voice was even louder than thunder as it spread through the surroundings.

Not to mention the people that weren’t training, even those on top of the volcano that were immersed in training were startled by Chu Feng’s voice.

The sudden voice startled many people.

One must know that there were rules in that place. One could not shout or make loud noises, as it would disturb others. If one dared to violate the rules, one would forever be driven out..

For someone to suddenly shout so loudly and disturb everyone present, the people there subconsciously felt that the person who shouted was doomed.

Taking joy in the calamity of another, the crowd turned their gazes in Chu Feng’s direction.

They wanted to see exactly who it was that dared to act so reckless, who it was that would be driven out of the sacred cultivation ground.

“That is?”

However, when the crowd’s eyes turned to Chu Feng, many gazes immediately turned emotional.

The next moment, people started to descend from the sky and fly toward Chu Feng.

Familiar faces began to appear around Chu Feng.

Chu Feng’s adoptive father Chu Yuan, Chu Feng’s older cousin Chu Yue, Chu Feng’s adoptive brother Chu Guyu, the Azure Dragon School’s Azure Dragon Founder, the previous headmaster Li Changqing, Chu Feng’s master Zhuge Liuyun, Chu Feng’s sworn brother Monstrous Monkey King, Qiu Canfeng, Huangfu Haoyue, Dugu Xingfeng, Bai Ruochen, Tantai Xue and other familiar faces all surrounded Chu Feng.

They were all feeling extremely excited as they tightly surrounded Chu Feng.

“Feng’er, is it really you? Father is not seeing things, right? You’ve returned?”

“It’s Chu Feng, there’s no mistake. That boy is Chu Feng. Haha, Chu Feng, you’ve returned.”

“My little brother, you’ve left for the Outer World, yet you still remembered to come back to see your big brother Monkey? How’s the Outer World?”

“Chu Feng, how did you get back?”

All sorts of voices could be heard nonstop. There were voices of concern, voices of inquiry and, above all, voices of surprise.

Chu Feng’s return truly served as a pleasant surprise to them.

At that moment, everyone had heard Chu Feng’s name. Those that were training stopped their training, and those that were resting stopped resting.

Vast groups of people, densely packed like a gathering of humanoid locusts, began to cover the sky as they flew down to crowd around Chu Feng.

They were so excited. It was as if they all knew Chu Feng.

No, they knew Chu Feng. Of course they knew Chu Feng. After all, Chu Feng was the person who had saved the entire Holy Land of Martialism in the past.

Furthermore, it had only been several years since Chu Feng had saved their Holy Land of Martialism. As such, how could they not know Chu Feng?

In fact, it would not even be excessive to say that Chu Feng was a savior to everyone present.

After all, he had truly saved their lives.

That was the reason why the crowd was so excited.

Unanimously, the crowd came to a decision to stop their training and arrange a banquet to celebrate Chu Feng’s return.

The banquet was prepared just as it was decided. Furthermore, it was a massive banquet with tens of millions of participants.

Beside the volcano, under the blue sky, firelight covered the vast earth. Those were lights from the massive banquet, and people that covered the entire place.

Voices of laughter, excitement and people toasting could be heard all around.

Such a scene was simply much more spectacular than the scene of everyone surrounding the volcano to train.

The crowd were all enjoying the feast. It seemed that it was not only because they were joyous from Chu Feng's return. It appeared that they had not celebrated like that way in a long time now.

Chu Feng had practically seen all the people that he wanted to see again at the banquet.

There were only three people that he did not see.

They were Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang and Xian Miaomiao.

Chu Feng had heard that Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang's talents were beginning to emerge.

Thus, they were able to enter locations that others could not, and were training deep in the volcano.

Training in there, they would not be able to hear the voices from outside. Furthermore, apart from the two of them, the other people were all incapable of entering the volcano.

Because of that, they could only wait for them to finish their training and come out on their own.

"Seniors, in that case, where's Miaomiao? Did Miaomiao also enter the depths of the volcano?" Chu Feng asked curiously.

"Young Master Chu Feng, Miaomiao has already left," a beautiful woman said to Chu Feng.

That woman was very beautiful. She could be said to be an exceptional beauty. The reason for that was because she was not a human. Rather, she was a beauty of the Ancient Era's Elf Clan.

That woman was the eldest princess of the Elf Kingdom, Xian Miaomiao's older sister, Xian Lingyue.

"Left? Could it be that Miaomiao has left for the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm?" Chu Feng's heart sunk upon hearing those words.

Chu Feng had told Xian Miaomiao on the day he left the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm that she must contact him once she arrived at the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

However, Chu Feng did not receive any contact from Xian Miaomiao when he was still in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm. Chu Feng even went as far as to deliberately look into Xian Miaomiao out of fear that she did not contact him after arriving in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Unfortunately, he never managed to find Xian Miaomiao in the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm.

Judging from things now, it was very possibly that Xian Miaomiao left for the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm after Chu Feng had left it.

“We don’t know where Miaomiao left to. That’s because Miaomiao didn’t leave by herself. Rather, she was escorted away by her mother’s clansmen,” Xian Lingyue said.

“By her mother’s clansmen?” Chu Feng’s expression changed upon hearing those words.

Xian Miaomiao’s mother was no ordinary character. She was a powerful existence that had nine lives.

As for Xian Miaomiao’s mother’s clansmen, they were likely also people that had that same sort of special bloodline as Xian Miaomiao’s mother.

“Had they mentioned where they were going?” Chu Feng asked.

“They did not. Miaomiao was forcibly brought away by those people,” when mentioning the matter, Xian Lingyue sighed.

At that moment, Chu Feng noticed that everyone from the Elf Kingdom revealed a helpless and ashamed expression on their faces.

Likely, none of them had desired for Xian Miaomiao to be forcibly taken away.

Merely, they were powerless to do anything against the powerful clansmen of Xian Miaomiao’s mother.

“In that case, did they ever mention which clan they belonged to?” Chu Feng asked.

Chu Feng was certain that the clan that Xian Miaomiao’s mother belonged to was not from the Hundred Refinements Ordinary Realm or the Great Chiliocosm Upper Realm. In fact, Chu Feng could not even be certain if their clan was from the Ancestral Martial Starfield.

If Chu Feng wanted to find Xian Miaomiao, he had to know the name of their clan. Otherwise, with how vast the Outer World was, it would not be an easy task to find her.